THE MAGUS ERA

BOOK 12

Blood Red

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

The Magus Era

(巫神纪)

by

Blood Red

(血红)

Synopsis

Long ago, there were people who stood upon the earth with their heads held high. They never bowed to anyone because of their indomitable spirit. They were capable of controlling wind and lightning, and conquering dragons and serpents. They seemed strong enough to split the earth and shatter the stars with their fists. They traveled throughout the land and called themselves Magi. Eventually, one of them would become a Supreme Magus! These men are the ancestors of human beings. Their blood is what we all share today.

Qing Long is the former strongest man in the world. He traveled through space and time and was reborn as Ji Hao in the Fire Crow Clan of the Southern Wasteland. It's a complicated world. Forces from both inside and outside of the clan want this young and talented boy to die. Under great pressure, Ji Hao makes a deal with a mysterious man, who resides in his spiritual space, never showing his real face. He gains two drops of blood from a dragon and phoenix. Afterwards, Ji Hao becomes increasingly more powerful.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Law @ Qidian International

Translation Edit by Hitesh_ @ Qidian International

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1101: Arrow Destroy

Three Jia Clan battle kings and hundreds of Jia Clan warriors trod on metal plates, rose into the sky, and pounced on the nine archers while roaring like beasts.

Those metal plates were glowing brightly, releasing a deep buzzing noise. With an especially high flying speed, these metal plates reached to less than three-hundred meters away from those archers almost instantly.

The nine Eastern Wasteland archers laughed out loud. Fierce gusts of wind blew out of their feather cloaks. The turbid gusts of wind condensed into a pair of wings on the back of each archer; that was a pair of swan wings.

Slightly shaking their bodies in a very weird way, the nine archers darted away, easily lengthening the distances between those Jia Clan warriors and themselves while leaving twisted, arc-shaped traces in the air. They nimbly hovered around in the air, leaving hazy shreds of afterimages. In the mist, the afterimages cerated by them were partly hidden and partly visible, extremely hard to catch. Tens of Jia Clan warriors had strong crossbows gripping in their hands, yet none of them managed to launch a single shot.

What enraged those Jia Clan warriors even more was that the metal plats they trod on had been fully activated already, but they still failed to catch the few Eastern Wasteland archers, who moved as fast as loaches in the mud.

The nine archers laughed so loud that their eyes had been squeezed into curved lines. They used to be under Yi Ren’s command, but now, they were Yi Di’s warriors. Their feather cloaks had been upgraded by Ji Hao, and were modeled on the swan cloak. With these cloaks, they flew like the wind. Sensing the magical and pleasant feeling, they almost cheered out. This wasn’t

their highest speed yet; They could raise their speed by two-hundred percent at least, but those large Jia Clan beings were already left behind by them, and they could even make fun of those silly Jia Clan warriors!

In wars that happened in the past countless years, Jia Clan warriors could fly in the sky by treading on those metal plates. The rectilinear flying speed of those metal plates was rather high, even higher than the speed of many Eastern Wasteland archers. A giant number of Eastern Wasteland archers were slaughtered rudely by these Jia Clan warriors treading on those metal plates!

However, the feather cloaks upgraded by Ji Hao gifted these archers with an absolute advantage of speed, with which, these archers could easily cast off these strong Jia Clan warriors, even laugh at them!

"If all our brothers can have a feather cloak like this...our Eastern Wasteland archers will become the strongest warriors!" The low-grade Divine Magus, who killed Dishi Mo earlier, raised his longbow and growled out in excitement.

The other eight archers laughed wildly out to respond to their leader. These archers were like airily flying butterflies, guiding large groups of ferocious Jia Clan warriors and a hundred metal warships deeply into the dense fog.

Flying and chasing all the way, within around ten minutes, the Jia Clan commander who rushed ahead of the others abruptly burst with a loud shout and hurriedly stopped his metal plate.

In the front, around ten miles away, a dark shade grew over. Muffled water-clattering noises could be heard clearly from a distance away, as waves had been crushing down. This Jia Clan commander fixed his eyes on the shade. Next, he saw ten thousand enormous starry void spirit turtles approaching in ordered lines.

A tall watchtower stood on the head of every spirit turtle, and standing on every watchtower, were seven to eight Eastern

Wasteland archers with longbows. In those small-scale forts built on these spirit turtles' backs, large groups of heavily armored human warriors had been staring at the metal fleet.

What was even more shocking was that behind these spirit turtles, a wooden city had been moving over slowly. On the city wall, torches soaked in beast oil burned brightly. The torches were connected in a straight line, dispelling the dense fog and allowing these Jia Clan warriors to see those Eastern Wasteland archers with feather cloaks and longbows, hovering above of the city.

With their rich battling experiences, these Jia Clan warriors estimated the area of this city on the water at first glance.

As an over one thousand miles square city, how many human warriors could it contain? Not to mention the ten-thousand small-scale forts carried on the heads of those spirit turtles; each of these small forts could at least contain thousands of elite warriors.

The nine archers had been flying swiftly, but abruptly, they stopped and turned around. The Divine Magus raised his right arm high, straightened his right forefinger and middle finger, then swung his arm forwards, while bursting with a resonant growl, "Wolf Tooth!"

On the heads of the first row of spirit turtles in the tall watch towers, hundreds of archers raised their bows, and put splendidly glowing 'wolf tooth' arrows on the strings. They didn't even have to aim; instead, they easily released the arrows simply with their muscle memories gained through millions of times of shooting.

The arrows swished over. Among the three Jia Clan battle kings, the two more experienced ones raised their shields and covered their vital body parts, while fully activating their armors, releasing a thick defensive magic screen to protect their entire bodies.

Another Jia Clan battle king was relatively younger. As a young man, he was inevitably a bit arrogant. He didn't raise his shield; instead, he pulled out his enormous machete and growled

‘Supreme Blood Moon!’. Then, he led hundreds of Jia Clan warriors and launched a frontal attack.

Hundreds of clangs happened almost simultaneously. Among all attacking Jia Clan warriors, a small half suddenly froze in the air. Sharp arrows penetrated their helmets, accurately piercing into their foreheads.

Along with shrill swishing noises, ‘wolf tooth arrows’ went through their heads, blew up their heads, then screamed further away with hundreds of meters long streams of blood.

Same as the others, the Jia Clan battle king, who initiated the charge, paused in the air as well. His body was punctured tens of times, which left fifty to sixty holes on his body, and six holes on his head.

The six holes on his head were located in his four eye sockets, the middle of his forehead and his mouth. The powerful arrows stirred his brain. Even though his head didn’t explode, he died immediately after the arrows hit him.

Over two-hundred Jia Clan warriors fell from the sky, with blood spraying out from their bodies. Only the killed Jia Clan battle king remained standing steadily on the metal plate. The metal plate carried his speedily cooling corpse and kept flying forward.

"Attack! Attack! It’s an army of those bloody barbarians!"

The rest two Jia Clan battle kings roared out in both shock and fury. They were shielding themselves and luckily didn’t suffer the first wave of attack. At the moment, they wielded their arms, giving orders to the other warriors. From the one hundred metal warships behind them, countless large, frog-like, barely human-shaped spirit creature slaves leaped down while croaking, treading on the water surface with their large feet, and marching towards the wooden city.

These frog-like spirit creatures had thick webs between their

finger and tows. They ran surprisingly fast; with a leap, they could reach nearly a hundred meters away.

Over a million spirit creature slaves rushing on the water surface, seeming to be quite formidable.

"Volcano collapse!"

The Eastern Wasteland Divine Magus growled thunderously once again!

This time, not only archers in the watchtowers on the heads of those spirit turtles, archers on the city wall of the wooden city had also raised their bows.

Tens of thousands of ‘volcano collapse’ arrows were sent roaring into the air. In a short while, all these arrows dove down from nearly a thousand meters high in the sky, accurately falling into the thickest groups of spirit creature slaves.

The arrows blasted, raised raging fires that covered miles of area. Within the coverage of the fire, all spirit creature slaves were turned into ashes.

After the massive explosions, only around seven-thousand spirit creature slaves were left on the water surface.

Chapter 1102: The Extreme of Fire

On those metal warships, all Yu Clan nobles, and Jia Clan warriors were surprised at first, then shocked; at last, they were stunned, and even panic-stricken!

On battlefields, Eastern Wasteland archers were their old opponents.They had witnessed the powers of Eastern Wasteland arrow formations for countless times. Incalculable non-humankind warriors died under the storm-like arrows launched through arrow formations, and many survived non-humankind beings still had scars left on their bodies by those Eastern Wasteland arrows.

Nevertheless, despite the amazing archery arts of Eastern Wasteland people, the low productivity of the humankind limited the powers of their arrows.

Ordinary archers could only continuously shoot a non-humankind warrior for tens, even hundreds of times in a row, to possibly break the non-humankind warrior's armor, wound or kill him. But just now, 'wolf tooth' arrows released by those archers easily penetrated heavy tower shields, which were specially crafted by Xiu Clan masters! Moreover, both the effective range and lethality of their 'volcano collapse' arrows had raised by many times!

This wasn't a slight improvement; instead, this was an unreasonable, illogical sudden soar, that was completely beyond the current productivity of the humankind. Those were over a million spirit creature slaves; they were weak indeed, but even if those were a million pigs, it would require a certain span of time to kill them all, right?

Nevertheless, with one massive attack delivered by a wave of 'volcano collapse' arrows, over a million spirit creature salves were blown into ashes!

"This, how can this be? Where did they get those spell symbols arrows?" A Xiu Clan master stared at the approaching water city, stunned. "Their spell symbols arrows are good enough to compare favorably with the top-grade ones we produced with solid efforts!"

During the past centuries, the non-humankind had the humankind suppressed because of nothing else but their strong armors and advanced weapons, especially those large-scale killing machines. Except for those armaments, in terms of overall potential or fertility, the non-humankind was absolutely no better than the humankind.

Once human beings attained a great productivity that was no worse than that of non-humankind, they would be able to produce armors and weapons of equal qualities as the top-grade ones produced by the non-humankind. As a result, eventually, the non-humankind could expect nothing but a cruel massacre!

The experiences these non-humankind beings accumulated for years told them that human beings in Pan Gu world were not easy to defeat; instead, this was a terrifying species with an instinct of attacking. If the non-humankind didn't invade Pan Gu world before the humankind started to develop, sooner or later, the humankind would begin to crazily expand their world, same as the non-humankind had been doing.

Once human beings enabled themselves to produce armaments of equal qualities as the ones produced by the non-humankind...The bloody consequences made those Yu Clan nobles shake just by picturing them.

On the water city, Yi Di pulled his thunder running bow open, then put a 'hurricane' arrow on it.

He scornfully glanced at those spirit creatures slaves trembling on the water surface. Only thousands among the one million survived. These poor creatures were scared to death by the destructive effects of those 'volcano collapse' arrows. At the

moment, their eyes were unfocused, and they looked just like idiots.

All of a sudden, an ear-piercing swishing noise was started as Yi Di loosened his fingers, sending a beam of light out from his bowstring.

The thumb-thick, three-hundred meters long beam of light dazzled through the air, then deeply sank into the chest of a spirit creature slave, leaving a hole in his body. Next, through a slim and beautiful arc, this arrow punctured the vital body parts of hundreds of spirit creature slaves in a row.

The puffing noises lasted long, while the arrow released by Yi Di flew airily in the air like a noble bird. Within a second, thousands of spirit creature slaves were easily slaughtered by Yi Di with a single arrow.

The long arrow punctured the body of the last spirit creature slave, then screamed brightly and continued flying for over three-hundred miles upon the water surface, before it finally, slantingly pierced into the water. This was the scary power of ‘hurricane’ arrows; this type of arrows had an extremely long firing range. Added with the unimaginably great archery skills of Eastern Wasteland archers, this type of arrows could be fabulous in battles.

The corpses of thousands of spirit creature slaves floated on the water surface. Witnessing Yi Di killing all those slaves with a single arrow, all non-humankind beings on the warships had their looks changed. They confusingly glanced at each other. They knew ‘hurricane’ arrows, and they knew about the especially long firing range of this type of arrow. But they had never seen any ‘hurricane’ arrow cover such a long range. The arrow released by Yi Di even flew for hundreds of miles after killed thousands of living creatures.

"Something’s not right with them!" A Xiu Clan master suddenly raised his oddly shaped staff and screamed out loud, "Kill them!

Capture some alive! We have to find out where did they get those arrows! How can they...How did they...How can they possibly produce such powerful arrows?!"

The hundred metal warships glowed brightly. Dazzling light streams surged out from enormous spell symbols and beautiful patterns carved on these ships. Countless light streams merged together and transformed into a three-hundred-meter thick screen that wrapped up these warships entirely.

Cracking noises could be heard without an end, along with which, the decks of these warships began opening and moving. Numerous large-shaped fighting machines rose onto the decks and slowly moved into position, locking on the city on the water.

"Accept the battle!" Standing on the tallest watchtower, Shaosi gave her order. From around her body, faintly visible gray air-ripples spread out. Following her order, all logs of the wooden city burst with a cyan-colored, bright light. Silhouettes of enormous trees layered up and created a tremendous strong shield upon the city wall.

Ten-thousand starry void spirit turtles roared in chorus. From their thick shields, dense starry light spun in streams while rising into the sky. Ten-Thousand streams of starlight combined into one and transformed into a seven-colored light screen, which enveloped all spirit turtles.

Through the distance of around ten miles, the trigger of a great battle was pulled. A dragon roar vibrated the entire area, while nine three-thousand-meters long fire dragons rose from underwater behind the city, dragging an enormous chariot straight into the sky.

Ji Hao stood straight on the chariot, with a great sun shining with a raging red light above his head. Mr. Crow excitedly spread his wings and expanded his body to over a thousand meters long. He puffed out his chest and trod on top of the chariot.

The nine-dragon chariot glared dazzlingly, illuminating the whole area with a radius of over a million miles, even dispelling the dark clouds in the sky.

Ji Hao glanced down at the hundred metal warships on the water surface. In the red sun above his head, a light-golden silhouette flashed slightly, before Ji Hao conveniently pressed his hand down. In the next moment, a hundred miles wide golden hand silently descended from the sky, surrounded by raging flames.

The hundred metal warships suffered this strike together. A sizzling noise was generated, while the whole hundred metal warships disappeared without a trace, in complete quietness.

The three-hundred-meters thick defensive magic screen failed to serve its purpose, as the golden hand crumbled it instantly with the extreme fire in Pan Gu world. Those metal warships vaporized directly in the golden fire, along with all non-humankind beings on the ships.

Nothing was left behind, not even a grain of ash!

After Ji Hao completely absorbed the East Emperor divine seal, that, was the power of a quick palm move launched by him; it was already close to a strike launched by the true East Emperor, Taiyi himself.

Chapter 1103: Came One After Another

The nine dragons chariot floated in the air.

These nine dragons were given birth by the sun back in the prehistorical era. They were not living creatures, and neither were they dead; they were not spirit creatures, neither were they gods or devils. They were between life and death. The nine fire dragons roared towards the sky, releasing tens of thousands of miles long golden streams of fire from their mouths.

On the enormous chariot, countless patterns of stars were clearly visible. Each star on the chariot was related to a natural star in the sky, glistening brightly with a fiery light.

This chariot belonged to East Emperor Taiyi, who was the king of sun, which could be considered as the leader of all natural stars in the world. Every star in the world was carved on this chariot. A strong, widely effective starlight suffused the air. By taking a quick glance at the chariot, many people felt that countless stars had bumped into their souls together, dazzling and almost breaking their souls from the inside.

Ji Hao was wearing a perfectly clean robe, silently standing on top of the large chariot, looking down at the water surface. He was surrounded by a bright golden light. Countless beams of golden light spurted out from every pore of his. No one could clearly see him, instead, as people only saw a splendid sphere of golden light, floating in the sky.

Above the chariot, Mr. Crow proudly spread his wings and held his head high, cawing brightly and resonantly.

Dark clouds rumbled towards the nine dragons chariot from all directions, but the chariot shone even brighter, turning all dark clouds approached it into strands of mist which dissipated in the air.

On the water surface, a one-hundred-miles wide handprint was clearly visible, blazing with a golden fire. The water waved loudly towards the handprint area, which was dried already. But no matter how much water surged over, it would evaporate instantly into steam and rise up.

Looking down at the handprint from the sky, one would find it reaching the bottom of the thousands of meters deep water, even sinking into the mountains down below for hundreds of meters.

Ji Hao swung his arm. Golden flame flakes flew up into the sky, merging with his sleeve. Without the burning fire, the enormous handprint collapsed right away. The water flooded in and filled the handprint immediately.

A giant whirlpool appeared on the water surface. The thunderous rumbling noise even paled the faces of some human warriors in the city.

"Marquis Yao..." Yi Di raised his arms high and cheered out loudly, and almost hysterically, "Mighty!"

Hundreds of thousands of archers under Yi Di's direct command all raised their arms, kneeled, and kowtowed solemnly to Ji Hao, as if they were worshiping a true god. They put their palms and foreheads on the ground, while excitedly shouting Ji Hao's name.

The other Eastern Wasteland clan elders and high-grade commanders glanced at each other in shock and confusion.

They seemed to be stunned when staring at Mr. Crow, who trod upon the nine dragons chariot. They rubbed their eyes hard and tried to see Mr. Crow more clearly. They rubbed their eyes again and again, but no matter how hard they tried, in their eyes, Mr. Crow was still a three-legged Gold Crow. Indeed, he was a Gold Crow!

What a joke? A bone-deep hatred existed between Ten Sun Country and Gold Crows, but all those Ten Sun Country archers

kneeled on the ground and kowtowed to the owner of a three-legged Gold Crow. Was this even real? This was completely against the usual impression of the proud Ten Sun Country people in the hearts of the other Eastern Wasteland clansmen.

"This, this!" A group of elders and high-grade commanders were confused for a while, then gritted their teeth and all raised their hands, cheering along with the others. They didn't go as low as those archers did. For them, it was still far away from kneeling and kowtowing to Ji Hao. However, Ji Hao had just shown a destructive power, and Eastern Wasteland people always respect powerful beings. Therefore, they were still willing to pay their respects to Ji Hao.

Following these elders and commanders and Eastern Wasteland archers, the warriors from all the other clans began cheering excitedly as well.

The strike launched by Ji Hao just now was too powerful, even beyond anyone's imagination. This great power was worth for every human warrior to cheer for Ji Hao...If Hao Tao weren't there to strictly supervising everyone, the amazing palm attack launched by Ji Hao just now would even make these people throw a large part to have a hearty drink to celebrate.

Ji Hao sent the nine dragons chariot back into his body and waved his hand to all warriors down below, who had been cheering in excitement. Then, he transformed into a beam of light and flew back into the headquarters tent.

Ten minutes after Ji Hao returned to the headquarters, Tao Sha, an elder from Taotie Clan, Western Wasteland, walked in, swaying his muscular body to Ji Hao. He sat straight down beside Ji Hao, then smirked while nodding to Ji Hao without an end.

"Elder Tao Sha, if you have anything to say to me, just say." Ji Hao grinningly looked at Tao Sha and said, "Don't be shy like a girl!"

Tao Sha brushed his beard with his fingers and laughed out loud, "I'll just say it out then, shall I? I feel strange to be like this too!"

Laughing hollowly, his grin faded on his face as he continued while seriously looking at Ji Hao, "Those kids from Ten Sun Country, the arrows they used just now were a bit scary...Earlier, I saw them try those arrows, yet I didn't think that those arrows could actually be so amazing in real battles!"

Ji Hao nodded, proudly pointing at his own nose as he responded, "I made those arrows!"

Tao Sha paused for a second, abruptly raised his arm, pointed at Ji Hao's nose and said, "You made those? Not Emperor Shun? Not Si Wen Ming?"

Ji Hao seriously nodded, looked at Tao Sha in the eyes as he said, "I made those...Not only arrows, armors, blades, shields...I can even make the Taotie tooth!"

Coiled around Tao Sha's arm, the Taotie tooth clanged loudly. Tao Sha stood up all of a sudden and yelled, "Can you really...Can you even make Taotie tooth? Are you joking? This is our inherited magic treasure!"

Ji Hao spread his hands and honestly answered the question, "Not exactly as powerful as the original one, but I can make my products eighty to ninety percent as powerful as the real thing. As for the weapons and armors using by your warriors, I can make an upgrade to at least ten times greater."

Tao Sha paused again. Abruptly, he kneeled on the ground and kowtowed heavily to Ji Hao, then leaped back up, walking out of the tent with big steps.

Soon, an elder from Taowu Clan, Western Wasteland, sneakily walked in.

Once the Taowu Clan elder left, an Hundun Clan elder walked in. Following him was an elder from Qiongqi Clan; the next one was a

White Tiger Clan elder, then a Suanni Clan elder…In a short while, Eastern Wasteland clan elders started to walk into the headquarters tent one after another sneakily, with complicated facial expressions. They each asked Ji Hao a few short questions, then quickly walked back out, still sneakily like a weasel which had just stolen a chicken from a farm.

After all Western Wasteland and Eastern Wasteland elders visited Ji Hao, Southern Wasteland elders quietly walked in.

Ji Hao welcomed these elders nicely. He also straightforwardly answered every question they asked. He even accepted the friendly challenges of a few combative elders. As a result of those challenges, Ji Hao easily knocked all those elders to the ground with a few punches and kicks purely physically, without using any magi power.

In the next three days, the headquarters tent turned even more boisterous than a market.

Those elders signed agreements with Ji Hao one after another. They were authorized by their clans, and on behalf of their clans, they confirmedly followed Ji Hao’s lead!

In the enormous city on the water, seventy percent people chose to follow Ji Hao’s lead, and the one represented by Ji Hao, who was Si Wen Ming.

Chapter 1104: Si Wen Ming Asks For Help

On a spirit turtle’s head, Man Man carried a Taotie tooth made by Ji Hao, trying her best to send the chain into the water.

The tens of thousands of miles long, thin chain moved underwater slowly, like a living creature. A few sharp tusks hung on the chain, glowing with a faint light in the water.

A few tens of meters long large fishes were attracted by the glow of the chain. Swiftly, these enormous fishes swished over, but on the few tusks.

Then, a clear popping noise could be heard, as those tusks exploded like blooming flowers.

The fishes struggled desperately. Tusk pieces penetrated their heads and squeezed out streams of blood, spreading in the water. The chain flicked along with the movements of those giant fishes. Sitting on the turtle’s head, Man Man burst with a happy laugh, then hurriedly began pulling the chain.

Man Man was a strengthful one. Pulling for a while, the few giant fishes were dragged out of the water surface.

Yemo Shanye’s face blushed because of the excitement. With great enthusiasm, she rushed to a large fish, with her eyes popped widely up while shouting, "What a huge fish! Ah! What a huge fish, I’ve never seen such a..."

That large fish abruptly flipped its tail, whipping heavily on Yemo Shanye’s face.

Yemo Shanye was laughing so happily, but was slapped right in the face all of sudden, which caused a serious dizziness. She lost balance and plopped on the head of the turtle, unable to come back to herself for quite a while.

Man Man clapped her hands and laughed out loud to Yemo Shanye while saying, "Girl, you’re too weak. Next time back to

Southern Wasteland, I'll get you a few buckets of fire dragon spirit blood to drink. I promise that spirit blood can make you as strong as a rock gorilla!"

Shaosi covered her mouth with her hand as she was tittering. Neither Shaosi nor Man Man showed a sign to walk up and help Yemo Shanye up.

A breeze blew across. Without making any noise, Feng Xing came to Yemo Shanye, with his arms crossed over his chest. He narrowed his eyes and yelled quite impatiently, "How can you be so stupid? I don't even know how did you manage to grow up to this age! You are nearly slapped out of consciousness by a fishtail... You're so stupid, who would want to marry you?"

Yemo Shanye raised her head and pitiably looked at Feng Xing.

Abruptly, Feng Xing eyes contacted with Yemo Shanye's watery puppy eyes. In a panic, he turned around, clumsily grabbed her shoulder and pulled her up from the ground while saying with a dry voice, "Next time...You be careful. Man Man has the strength. Whatever it is, let Man Man do it...You're a little Yu Clan girl. Without magic, did you plan to fight hand-to-hand against the fish?"

Behind them, on the city wall, Ji Hao lied on an embattlement on his stomach, looking at his friends with narrowed eyes.

"Ah, Feng Xing, such an idiot! Did he call her stupid? Eh, I'm now worrying that he's gonna be single until the end of his life." Ji Hao complained,"He cares about the girl, for ancestors souls' sake, how can he scold her as stupid? Look at how nervous he is! He's a virgin, he's a total virgin, physically and mentally!"

Tao Sha stood beside Ji Hao with a proud smirk on his face, wearing a whole new set of beautiful armor. Hearing Ji Hao, he puffed out his chest, while gently stroking the ferocious-looking embossment of Taotie on his breastplate with both hands. He loved the embossment too much.

Except for the Taotie tooth, Taotie family had another precious inherited treasure, called ‘Taotie armor’. The Taotie armor was transformed from the body of the first Taotie in the world, after it passed away. Tao Sha had the Taotie tooth, but didn’t own the Taotie armor. The current owner of the armor was a high-grade commander stationed in Pu Ban City; he wore it every day.

In the recent few days, led by Tao Sha, his clansmen emptied quite a lot metal mines. Ji Hao borrowed the Taotie armor, used it as a model, and produced over one-hundred-thousand sets of armor with the five-colored small cauldron. These artificial pieces had ninety percent of the physical defensive power and around eighty-five percent of the magical defensive power of the original armor. As for the natural fierceness and ferociousness that belonged the original Taotie armor as its spirit, Ji Hao managed to copy around eighty percent of it.

The one worn by Tao Sha was an imitation made by Ji Hao. This armor was great enough to improve Tao Sha’s general power by a hundred percent, and raise his chance of survival on battlefields by at least ten times!

Therefore, in the past few days, Tao Sha followed Ji Hao everywhere. This cunning old man was eager to get more benefits from Ji Hao.

"Don’t say that...Feng Xing, I like this kid! He’s honest, with a true heart, a true heart!" Tao Sha grinned happily, squeezing his eyes into a pair of curved lines. Then, he abruptly changed the topic and laughed, "Hehe, Earl Yao, the pair of white tiger wings, the one that belongs to the White Tiger Clan, it can gather natural metal power for its owner, and make any attack three times more effective...Can we all have that?"

Ji Hao’s mouth corner twitched as he threw a threatening glance at Tao Sha.

The Taotie tooth, white tiger wing, Hun Dun shield, Taowu

blade, these were the greatest inherited magic treasures that belonged to the few large Western Wasteland clans. With the power of the five-colored cauldron, Ji Hao could make imitations of these treasures, which were eighty to nighty percent as powerful as the real ones.

Compared to the original ones, those imitations all had considerable lethality and defensive powers, as they lacked nothing more than souls.

But, this was not like making spell symbol arrows. The required materials for these treasures were astronomical figures. Taking the Taotie armor as an example, around one-hundred-thousand sets of armor consumed up three enormous metal mines entirely.

"Alright, if you want it...go prepare the materials yourselves." Ji Hao snorted and said, "And, I'll take a half of the final products. My army in Yao Mountain territory doesn't have this good equipment yet."

Tao Sha clicked his tongue and rubbed his hands, seeming about to say something. But suddenly, a rapid whirlwind descended from the sky. Inside the whirlwind, a winged man with an eagle head carried a steel whip with his left hand and a dragon-skin scroll with his right hand. This man scanned across the water city, then quickly fixed his glowing-red eyes on Ji Hao.

"Marquis Yao, I am Thunder Blast, under Minister Si Wen Ming's command. This is a letter from Minister Si Wen Ming!"

Thunder Blast threw the scroll to Ji Hao.

Ji Hao grasped the scroll and glanced at Thunder Blast in surprise, then hurriedly opened the scroll.

Colorful streams of mist rose into the sky, within which, Si Wen Ming's face appeared. Si Wen Ming's face looked sallow, with a bitter smile. He greeted Ji Hao, then headed directly to the point, "Ji Hao, the water-kind army from the north brought us too many

troubles and great pressure. Our people can not focus on expanding the channels."

"These days, water-controlling teams we sent out from Pu Ban City have been suffering attacks launched by water-kind armies every day and night. We killed countless water-kind spirit creatures, but more have been arriving. Without ending their reinforcement, the water-control mission would become a joke."

"Can you draw the attention of a part of water-kind spirit creatures in the north? Can you restrain, or destroy some of them in the north, disable them from keep moving south? If you can, perfect, but if it’s too much for you, I’ll figure something out myself."

Ji Hao paused slightly. Had things gone this far? Si Wen Ming was forced to ask help from Ji Hao already?

Ji Hao looked at Thunder Blast and responded with a deep voice, "Go back and tell Uncle Wen Ming... I know what to do."

Chapter 1105: A Difficult Situation

Mr. Crow rose into the sky. The golden bridge floated above Mr. Crow's head, transformed into a clear stream of light, and wrapped Mr. Crow up, flying south at the highest speed.

Gold Crows were creatures of the essence sun power, and were gifted with an amazing flying speed. Powerful Gold Crows could also move through space.

Mr. Crow was surely not as powerful as ancient Gold Crows, but added with the golden bridge, which was controlled by a trace of Ji Hao's spirit power, Mr. Crow's flying speed was now even faster than his ancestors. Millions of miles could now be covered by him within a single moment. He was too fast, such that ordinary human beings couldn't possibly see him in the sky.

Si Wen Ming's messenger, Thunder Blast, was still on his way back to Pu Ban City, but Mr. Crow had flown past Pu Ban City already and reached Great Hat Mountain. On the blueprint of Si Wen Ming's flood-control magic formation, Great Hat Mountain was the first core, the one nearest to Pu Ban City.

Mr. Crow shrunk his body to a feet long, spread his wings and floated in the air. He widely opened his golden-red eyes and gazed towards the ground.

A violent storm had been roaring, as the flood swept across the ground. The tallest peak in this area was around one-hundred-thousand meters tall, and the average altitude of this area was around thirty-thousand meters. However, the water level had raised to the mountainside of the tallest peak. Turbid waves surged between peaks, slapping on the mountains and bumping around, creating countless enormous whirlpools.

Occasionally, a few bolts of thunder would descend from the dark clouds in the sky and strike on the peak tops, sending shattered giant rocks rumbling down.

Under the storm, in the flood, countless large rafts drifted on the water surface.

Large groups of strong human beings bared their bodies, gripped thick bamboo sticks and wooden sticks, and trod on the rafts, roaring resonantly. Their heads were held high, their voices hoarse. By roaring wildly like beasts, they were trying to squeeze the last bit of strength out of their bodies.

They pressed those wooden sticks and bamboo sticks against the mountains, barely stabilizing their rafts. The flood struck down wave after wave, slapping on these men and making them quiver ceaselessly.

Their rafts creaked loudly. Struck by violent waves, the vines tied on the rafts had been vibrating intensely. All rafts seemed to fall apart right away.

Magi Palace Magi with long robes stood in the middle of each raft, loudly incanting spells. Flame, thunderbolts, hurricanes had been releasing from their hands without an end, fiercely landing on the mountain in front of them.

Giant rocks fell off from the mountain. Tens of Maguspriests with a magic formation blueprint held in their hands growled with hoarse voices. They pointed at the mountain in the front, roaring.

Following their voices, strong human beings jumped into the water. Vines were tied around their waists, while all kinds of tools were held in their hands. While howling intensely, they swam towards the collapsing mountain.

Heavy axes hacked into the mountain, while iron chisels carved large spell symbols on it. Lines of spell symbols, curved like dragons, sank deep into the mountain. Once the spell symbols were carved. Maguspriests standing on the rafts began incanting corresponding spells loudly.

These large spell symbols began shining one after another; and

surrounded the mountain, making the mountain glow as well. A strong power vibration was released, which contained a trace of divine natural will, forcibly restraining the raging flood.

Wherever these spell symbols shone, the water turned soft and quiet; even the rain falling from the sky turned much gentler.

All of a sudden, ferocious roars came from a distances away. Enormous white waves rose from the ground, treading on which were numberless water-kind spirit creatures, waving their roughly crafted weapons, shouting and yelling. Before this boundless water-kind army were tens of enormously shaped spirit creatures, spreading a billowy power vibration, generating dense dark clouds in the sky.

Behind the flood-control troop, human warriors in the tens of embattling square battle formations growled out in chorus. They started the rafts treading under their feet, led by around ten Divine Magi as they marched towards the water-kind army, which was with a far greater number.

Far away, in the northern side of Chi Ban Mountain, and in the water city, a sphere of red light sparkled in front of Ji Hao, showing him everything Mr. Crow saw.

Tao Sha, Hao Tao, Heng Xing and some top-grade commanders all stood in the headquarters tent, with their eyes fixed on the red light.

"This is a mother fish!" Heng Xing pointed at a thousands of meters long spirit creature which rushed in the frontal line, and said, "A mother fish... This kind of a water-kind spirit creature is really hard to deal with. If you’re not careful enough, many of your people might die!"

Mr. Crow cawed slightly in the sky. He too had his eyes on that enormous, oddly shaped and especially fleshy ‘mother fish’. This so-called mother fish was actually a giant ocean sunfish. A mother fish could lay hundreds of millions of eggs each time in a breeding

season.

The ones could lay hundreds of millions of eggs each time were just ordinary mother fishes. But the one Ji Hao had been looking at was a Divine-Magus-level, humongous one!

Along with a giant wave, this giant fish swam to around tens of miles from the flood-control troop, then turned around its body, tail pointing at those human beings.

The fish's large belly suddenly began expanding. Within a blink of an eye, the fish belly had expanded to twenty-thousand meters. The sudden expansion made the fish belly almost transparent. Through the thin belly, one could see countless sesame-sized fish eggs glowing brightly.

A long series of puffing noise was started as the mother fish raised its tail, letting out a torrent of eggs, splashing on the human troop like a heavy rain.

In the air, these eggs hatched at a stunning rate into fist-sized ocean sunfishes. These little fishes were born with a strong sense of spirit creature power, and their large heads had a faint metallic luster. Diving down from the air like arrows, these little fishes almost covered the entire human troop in a moment.

The puffing noise never stopped.

Many strong human beings had their heads smashed by these newborn fishes, and fell right on the spot. The wooden sticks and bamboo stocks gripped in their hands were broken. Pushed by the flood, those rafts bumped on the mountain and shattered immediately. Those men and Magi on the rafts all fell into the water.

From underwater, countless dark silhouettes abruptly popped up. Those were countless foot-long spirit piranhas with sharp teeth, screaming shrilly. Every human being who fell into the water, at the junior-level or under, was torn into skeletons by

those piranhas within three breaths at most.

Millions of ocean sunfishes swished down from the sky and broke the bones of countless human warriors. A single mother fish turned this human troop into a great mess.

The water-kind army grasped the opportunity. Countless water-kind spirit creatures trod on the water and dashed over, swiftly rushing into the human troop and starting an intense battle.

Tens of enormous water-kind spirit creatures laughed viscously while surrounding the few Divine Magi in the flood-control troop. Next, they raised strong gales which rolled up those Divine Magi, and flew to the higher sky.

The blood dyed the water red. This flood-control troop was about to fall apart.

In the next few hours, Mr. Crow went to the other few sites and witnessed nothing but water-kind armies slaughtering human flood-control troops, with a great advantage of numbers.

"The situation is not good. We have to do something!" Sat in the headquarters tent, Ji Hao pondered for a short while, then quickly gave his order.

Chapter 1106: Dragon Blood Drunk

Before the headquarters tent, eight-hundred dragon-kind warriors with golden armors and spears stood in front of Ji Hao, with their chests puffed out.

Each dragon warrior was around ten-meters tall, with a dragon head and a muscular human body, seeming like an iron statue. There were only eight hundreds of them, yet the power vibration released from these dragon warriors was even stronger than a great army. Under the heavy pressure caused by this strong power vibration, surrounding human warriors, who had been looking at them, even felt it hard to breathe.

Ninety percent of dragon warriors stationed in Pu Ban City were brought to Pan Jia world by Ao Li. Perhaps, they had still been fighting tanglingly against the non-humankind. Emperor Shun ordered Ji Hao to lead this great army to the north, and following this order, all members of the alliance of human clans had to send out their elite forces to join this army, including the dragon-kind. Dragon elders left in Pu Ban City discussed for quite a long while, then with some efforts, they gathered up eight-hundred pure-blood dragon warriors for Ji Hao.

"Marquis Yao, what is it?" The leader of these eight-hundred dragon warriors was called Ao Feng. He took a step forward, raised his right forefinger to pick his nose as he proudly looked at Ji Hao and said, "If you need to fight a war, let us do it...But for nothing important, you shouldn’t come to us, right?"

Ji Hao took two steps forward and grinningly patted on Ao Feng’s lap, seeming like a butcher selecting healthy chubby pigs in a hogpen while responding, "Brother Ao Feng, I indeed need your help."

Ao Feng shook the hill-like bulged muscles on his leg, laughed, then nodded to Ji Hao and said, "Alright, alright, within our

capabilities, we're willing to help."

The large pair of eyeballs rolled in his eye sockets, and the golden beard flicked under his nose as Ao Feng continued laughing, "But, haha, my brothers and I are born lazy. If it's too complicated... Haha!"

Ao Feng laughed hollowly. Dragon warriors had great individual strengths, which built their proud personalities. For any request from an ordinary human being, they wouldn't even give a word to respond. But Ji Hao was Marquis Yao, and was the chief commander of this great army, commissioned by Emperor Shun himself. Therefore, if Ji Hao asked a favor, and were willing to pay a good price for it, Ao Feng and his brothers would love to help him.

But of course, if no benefit were promised for this favor, Ao Feng and his brothers wouldn't hear a word he said. Whoever Ji Hao was, not a single living creature could ever make dragons work for free!

"Recently, three giant-scale magic crystal mines were discovered in my Yao Mountain territory, with considerable quality. The smallest one extended for over a million miles; the mineral reserve is quite surprising, enough for a large-clan to exploit for about a thousand years!" While continuously patting Ao Feng's lap, feeling the thriving life-force inside his body, Ji Hao continued with a warm smile, "Each of you gives me a half of your spirit blood and a bowl of dragon marrow, in return, I will give you the three magic crystal mines!"

Ao Feng's face instantly twisted. He looked down at Ji Hao, then turned around and glanced at his warriors.

The other seven-hundred and ninety-nine dragon warriors stared at Ao Feng while gasping quickly. Their eyes had all turned glowing red.

"Sure!" Ao Feng did a heavy palm-bumping with Ji Hao,

generating a thunderous bang. But then, his large eyeball rolled again in the sockets as he asked smartly and cunningly, "Eh, a bowl of marrow each is easy. But the question is, what kind of bowl? How big is the bowl? Like a regular clay bowl? Or...?"

Ji Hao grinned and took out a basin-sized giant iron bowl!

The faces of Ao Feng and his warriors twisted once again. They were amazingly strong indeed, and their life-force was nearly inexhaustible. But giving away such a giant bowl of marrow...it would still hurt!

However, they would get three great-scale magic crystal mines in return!

Dragons were greedy; this was their nature. Three entire great-scale magic crystal mines, evenly split among only eight-hundred of them, every single one of them would become super rich!

Clicking his lips, Ao Feng and his warriors gritted their teeth, flatly took off their arm protectors, and bared their arms to let Ji Hao do whatever he wanted.

A five-colored flame burned in the small cauldron inside Ji Hao’s lower belly. Carefully, Ji Hao threw a thumb-sized golden blood pill into the cauldron. This blood pill had a name, Dragon Blood Drunk; it was concocted by Magi Palace Magi, with real dragon spirit blood and marrow, and tens of magic herbs, which could deliver magical effects.

Dragon Blood Drunk had an utmost attraction to all water-kind creatures, even those spirit ones who were even smarter than human beings. No water-kind creature could ever resist the aroma of a Dragon Blood Drunk pill.

Dragons were nobles among the water-kind. A drop of dragon blood could tempt all kinds of water-kind creatures at the level of their souls. Any water-kind creature who luckily absorbed a drop of dragon blood would gain a thin trace of dragon bloodline, and

earn a chance to become a real dragon in the future.

Dragon Blood Drunk pills were made from dragon spirit blood and marrow, and were highly purified. They could be counted as the pure essence of dragon blood. Moreover, the power of dragon blood and marrow continued in the pills were strengthened by those secret magic herbs. Therefore, a pill like this could even thoroughly remold the body of a water-kind spirit creature. One single Dragon Blood Drunk pill was able to enable a water-kind spirit creature to free itself from its original shape and turn directly into a flood dragon.

That was merely the effect of the pills produced by the Magi Palace, with the spirit blood and marrow of ordinary dragons. Differently, the materials Ji Hao used today were the blood and marrow of pure-blood dragons. Ao Li and his brothers were possessors of the royal dragon bloodline, which meant their spirit blood and marrow were much more precious and attractive to water-kind spirit creature.

The five-colored flame sparkled in the cauldron and quickly disintegrated the Dragon Blood Drunk pill that Ji Hao threw into the cauldron as a sample. Tiny spell symbols drifted out of the pill, being surrounded by the five-colored flame, and gradually gathering into a sphere of spell symbols.

The five-colored flame slowly coiled around the spell symbol sphere, slowly generating a beautiful glisten. Gradually, those tiny spell symbols in the sphere turned colorful, while traces of power of creation drilled in. These spell symbols changed and twisted slowly. The magical power of creation contained in the small cauldron started to improve the recipe of Dragon Blood Drunk pills, trying to make it perfect.

When the spell symbol sphere shone with a dazzling light, Ji Hao poured the dragon blood in eight-hundred large vats, and the dragon marrow in eight-hundred giant iron bowls all into the small cauldron, along with a hill-sized pile of supportive magic

herbs.

As a five-colored light emitted from the cauldron, all materials disappeared.

A clear sphere of five-colored light spun swiftly in the cauldron, while countless tiny spell symbols drifted towards it.

Ji Hao sensed a thick, long-lasting and intoxicating aroma. This aroma slowly drilled into his body, flowing into every part of his body. Wherever the aroma reached, he sensed a nice warmth; even his bones were softened in a comfortable way.

After six hours, a bright stream of light surged out of the small cauldron. Ji Hao raised his arms and took out a water-tank-sized golden pill.

The five-colored small cauldron made the spirit blood and marrow that came from Ao Feng and his warriors into such a giant Dragon Blood Drunk pill! In both terms of size and aroma, this giant pill was thousands of times better than the regular pills produced by the Magi Palace!

"All! Prepare for a battle!" Ji Hao's voice resounded through the entire water city, "We have to stop those bloody water-kind armies in the north! No mater how many of them come, we kill them all! We have to make time and space for our brothers in Pu Ban City, allow them to control the flood!"

"Get ready! Get ready! The enemies are on their way!"

Ji Hao growled thunderously while walking out of the headquarters tent with that giant golden pill carried in his hands. A strong gale whirled the aroma of the pill to every direction. Within hundreds of miles in radius, all water-kind spirit creatures who were taking a detour to avoid encountering the water city, were immediately driven crazy!

Chapter 1107: Pan Gu Defense

Carrying the giant golden pill, Ji Hao walked out of the tent. Abruptly, the dense mist rolled in his spiritual space.

As the grey mist faded, the mysterious man showed up slowly, sitting in midair with crossed legs. His eyes shone with a bright blue light that illuminated the entire spiritual space.

"A tough battle!" said the mysterious man with a rumbling voice, "I can feel it. The twelve worlds are approaching Pan Gu world. The shorter the distances between the twelve worlds and Pan Gu world are, the quicker can those powerful water-kind spirit creatures enter into this world."

"This is indeed going to be a tough battle. Twelve worlds, hundreds of years... No one knows exactly how many water-kind spirit creatures Gong Gong has raised." said Ji Hao with a deep voice. "My warriors in this city have a number, yet the water-kind spirit creatures are uncountable. But we have to fight this battle!" Without fighting this battle, Ji Hao wouldn’t be able to buy some time for Si Wen Ming, flood-controlling troops wouldn’t have the chances to expand those channels, and consequently, the great plan for flood-control would become a joke. Countless human beings were struggling in the flood; incalculable human beings were dying. Each day, so many people would die of exhaustion and starvation.

Ji Hao never saw himself as a great man, but for some things, he had to try his best, no matter how.

Therefore, he had to fight this battle. For this battle, he made this giant Dragon Blood Drunk pill to attract all surrounding water-kind spirit creatures, and to allow Si Wen Ming and the others in Pu Ban City enough time and space.

"You gave me your Mantra Dan with Nine Secret Words, then I learned Yu Yu’s Study of Magic Formation, and some secret

scriptures Qing Wei and Dachi gave you..." said the mysterious man with a deep voice, "My brain is not working too efficiently, but I do know a lot more than you. These days, I created a magic formation myself."

"You're not powerful enough yet. At the stage, you can't protect too many people and things with the power of Pan Gu bell. But this magic formation of mine is supposed to help you activate the Pan Gu bell...At least, you will be able to protect this city and the one-hundred-thousand large turtles with it."

The mysterious man raised his right hand and flicked his finger. Instantly, a magic formation blueprint emerged in Ji Hao's mind.

Ji Hao's eyes shone. Slightly quivering, he hurriedly put back the Dragon Blood Drunk pill, waved his hand, and started a strong wind, bringing back all the aroma of the pill.

"Magic crystals, I need a large amount! And skeletons of large wild beasts, who has beast skeletons? They should be from Magus-King-level beasts at least! Divine-level beast skeletons will be the best!"

"And essence magic crystals with natures of earth, water, fire, metal and green! Who have those? I need five-hundred-thousand kilograms for each type, all ground into powder! I will make those into a magic ink by mixing with dragon blood! Brother Ao Feng, can you give more blood? When this ends, I'll tell Emperor Shun to award you another magic crystal mine!"

Standing by the door the headquarters tent, Ji Hao yelled loudly. Following his voice, the entire city became noisy. Elders and high-grade commanders from all clans began moving. They put together they resources they brought, and soon reached the amount required by Ji Hao.

The large headquarters tent and hundreds of surrounding barracks were pulled down, making a ten-miles wide, round-shaped empty area.

Ji Hao wielded his hands and cast a magic, rolling up all the powdered essence magic crystals and mixing it with dragon blood. With the magic ink, he quickly drew a series of strange, ancient spell symbols.

Watching aside, Tao Sha and the others had their eye corners twitched. Those spell symbols Ji Hao had drawn were strange and antique, that even Master Magi from the Magi Palace might not be able to recognize them. Tao Sha and a few of his friends had inherited their ancestors' memories through their bloodlines. Otherwise, they wouldn't be able to recognize these strange spell symbols either.

Every one of these spell symbols were shaped like those wild, powerful creatures in this world, or raging flames, fierce thunderbolts. These spell symbols were in a profound ancient style, seeming so hard to understand. Each spell symbol corresponded with a part of nature, represented mysterious natural laws, and could deliver an unpredictable power.

Thousands of ancient spell symbols were drawn by Ji Hao without a break. Ji Hao then put those Divine-level beast skeletons on this magic formation, which was formed by these spell symbols. Once the hundreds of beast skeletons were put in position, a terrifying, prehistorical power started to spread from the magic formation. An invisible pressure even forced powerful ones like Hao Tao and Tao Sha back, disabling them from steadying their own bodies.

Ji Hao wielded his arms again. Mountain-huge piles of magic crystals flew up into the sky, then fell back down, evenly scattering on this curious magic formation.

All magic crystals shattered themselves before landing on the ground, turning into fine powder and merging with the formation. The enormous formation glowed with a misty light, while streams of Chaos power rose from it like a mist. Those beast skeletons melted like metal, merging into one.

A faintly audible bell ring came from Ji Hao's body. The Pan Gu bell slowly flew out of his lower belly and hung in the air, upon the center of the magic formation.

Nine bell rings were generated in a row. Following that, the Chaos power streams rose from the magic formation drifted into the bell.

The bell glowed shortly, then the silhouette of a man, with his arms held high, sparkled slightly on the bell. Next, all ancient spell symbols on the ground sparkled one after another. All of a sudden, Ji Hao felt that the Pan Gu bell had come alive.

The space around the bell cracked, showing fifty water-tank-sized openings. Strong Chaos tides surged out from those cracks, into the Pan Gu bell.

On the edge of the bell, a light was emitted. Meanwhile, a refreshing sense of power descended from the bell, merging with the magic formation on the ground. The magic formation was lighted up immediately, and released hundreds of clear streams of light, reaching out on the ground, in all directions like countless arms.

Soon, the thousand-miles wide city was covered in a thumb-thick-layer of clear light, and so was the bodies of everyone in the city. Streams of clear light reached out through the ropes holding in the mouths of those giant turtles, quickly covering all the turtles up as well.

A resonant roar rose from the center of the magic formation. Hazy silhouettes emerged from upon those melted beast skeletons. Those were images of the owners of these skeletons.

Those hazy beast silhouettes slowly straightened their bodies and walked to the edges of the city. A short while later, hundreds of beast silhouettes stood straight on the city wall, in all four directions. Those beasts were as enormous as mountains, and their translucent bodies seemed to contain inexhaustible power.

"Hmm, I guess I’m not with a stone brain, as someone said!" The mysterious man chuckled proudly, "This great magic formation of mine...Call it Pan Gu Defense! Unless those water-kind things can destroy the Pan Gu bell, they would never be able to make a single step into this city."

The mysterious man disappeared gradually in Ji Hao’s spiritual space, turning back into grey mist as he left his thunderous voice echoing, "Little guy, kill as hard as you can! Aren’t you in need of meat? These water-kind things are the best meat supply!"

Ji Hao paused slightly, then threw a heavy slap on his own face. He gritted his teeth and took out a giant Dragon Blood Drunk pill.

"I’m so stupid! These water-kind spirit creatures...Aren’t they the best meat supply? So many crops were harvested in Pu Ban City, but how can people live without meat?"

Chapter 1108: All Spirit Creatures Go Mad

Just now, a trace of aroma of the Dragon Blood Drunk pill had drifted out. Tens of thousands of water-kind spirit creatures sensed the aroma, as they were relatively closer to the water city.

The eyes of these water-kind spirit creatures changed colors immediately. Red, orange, blue, green, purple; the blood of water-kind spirit creatures had different colors, so did their eyes. Those weaker water-kind spirit creatures, the ones who hadn't learned to use their brains and were still a bit confused, anxiously swayed their bodies. Before the most of these water-kind spirit creatures figured out where the aroma came from, a few enormously shaped ones, who were quite intelligent and had cultivated themselves severely for over a thousand years, already began moving sneakily towards the city.

They only moved for hundreds of miles before the aroma disappeared suddenly. With glowing red eyes, those enormous spirit creatures reached their heads out of the water surface, roaring madly and angrily, and raising turbid waves from the water surface.

The waves were as tall and thick as city walls, sweeping across one after another as they smashed against mountaintops exposed upon the water surface.

Those mountains quaked intensely, while the waves landed them. Large numbers of smaller water-kind spirit creatures were rolled up by the waves and smashed into it. Sticky blood spread out along with the waves. The strong scent of blood attracted countless more water-kind spirit creatures.

The Pan Gu Defense magic formation was already done. Ji Hao controlled the Pan Gu bell and created a three-hundred-meters wide path in the northern gate of the city, extended for three-hundred miles into the city.

At the end of this path, an altar stood on the ground. The altar was made from black bones, with a green fire burning on it. Placed on the altar was the Nailhead Seven Arrows Book. In a spooky atmosphere, Taisi smirked creepily. He was holding a wine pot with his left hand, but the wine contained in that pot was mixed with still water. Pouring the watered wine into his mouth, Taisi incanted a spell mumblingly. Along with his voice, a fierce sense of power released from the book, penetrating every part of the altar.

Above this strangely shaped altar, a turbid sphere of death power transformed into a scrawny shark claw, gripping the giant Dragon Blood Drunk pill produced by Ji Hao. Activating by the death power, the pill had been ceaselessly emitting a dense aroma.

From under the altar, a frigid gust of wind blew out, rolled up the aroma of the pill and sent it rapidly out through the path in the north. If one looked closer, one would see two light walls on both sides of the path, created by the clear light released from the Pan Gu Defense magic formation. Behind the two light walls were countless heavily armored elite warriors, and all kinds of heavy weapons.

Standing by the altar, Ji Hao crossed his arms over his chest, silently gazing at the front. Standing behind him were Tao Sha and two-hundred and ninety-nine Taotie Clan warriors; these were the strongest warriors of Taotie clan. Same as Tao Sha, each one of these warriors had a Taotie Tooth chain coiled around his body!

Tao Sha's Taotie tooth was the original piece, and was amazingly powerful. The ones that belonged to his warriors were products of Ji Hao, made with the five-colored small cauldron. Ji Hao made three-hundred Taotie tooth chains, but Man Man snatched one to use for fishing. Therefore, only two-hundred and ninety-nine were left for the Taotie Clan people.

For whatever purpose, when the three-hundred chains were freshly made by Ji Hao, Tao Sha invited a few of his friends, who were also elders of Western Wasteland clans, to try them. As a

result, a web woven from a hundred Taotie tooth chains nearly strangled the master elder of White Tiger Clan to death!

Such a surprising quality of those chains made Tao Sha laugh so happily that he couldn’t even close his mouth for a while. Surely, these powerful chains also made the other elders drool.

The dense dragon blood aroma was speedily blown out of the city. Strong gusts of wind came from all directions, spreading the aroma out. Streams of water pouring down from the sky absorbed a part of the aroma, rumblingly falling into the water.

The aroma spread ten times faster in the water than in the air. Within a few breaths, those water-kind spirit creatures, which had been crazily roaring hundreds of miles away, had their eyes shone suddenly, then turned their heads to the city together.

Following a resonant roar, a thousands of meters long Divine-level dragon whale flapped its tail and raised a violent undercurrent while dashing to below the city.

Ji Hao had already ordered all patrolling flood dragons in the water to return to the city. The dragon whale glanced around and discovered no trace of enemies. Abruptly, he expanded his body. Within a second, the dragon whale’s body expanded to nearly ten-thousand meters tall and miles long.

"Hah!" The dragon whale widely opened its jaws and growled thunderously, then made a long gasp for air. Next, it raised its head with all of its strength.

Floating above the center of the Pan Gu Defense magic formation in the city, the Pan Gu bell rang weakly, as the dragon whale’s head bumped on the bottom of the city. The faint clear light covered the city quaked slightly. Along with the lingering bell rings, an invisible wave of air ripple spread out from their city, cutting on the dragon whale’s body like thousands of blades.

Along with a series of clattering noises, the hundreds of meters

thick skin of the dragon whale was torn apart. The whale's spin was shattered into pieces, exposing its vivid cyan-purple flesh. The invisible air ripples didn't stop, as countless bone-deep slashes were left on the dragon-whale's body. Muscles were shredded, and road-like veins were cut broken.

The dragon whale screamed in pain, then bumped again on the bottom of the city.

The Pan Gu bell rang weakly once again, releasing another wave of air ripples. This time, no muscles were left in the dragon whale's body, while its bones were shattered inch by inch, and internal organs blasted.

Within three short breaths, the mountain-like dragon whale, which was as strong as a peak-level Divine Magus, and even more powerful physically than peak-level Divine Magi, was destroyed by the Pan Gu bell. It left nothing but a three-hundred-meters wide spirit Dan, floating in the water.

"It's mine!" Ao Feng had transformed back into his original shape of a golden dragon. Seeing the spirit Dan, this miles-long golden dragon swiftly swam over and grasped the spirit Dan in his claw as fast as he could. Sensing the thriving life-force in the spirit Dan, Ao Feng laughed in satisfaction, even having saliva flowing out of his mouth corner in streams.

But soon, Ao Feng stopped laughing. He popped out his large dragon eyes in panic, stunningly staring at countless pairs of eyes surrounding him, which suddenly glowed.

Red, green, purple, blue...Brightly glowing eyes of water-kind spirit creatures emerged from all directions. These water-kind spirits creatures crashed over from everywhere, with endless greediness and ferociousness. Stimulated by the aroma of the Dragon Blood Drunk pill, all these creatures had gone mad!

They sensed the agitation from their bloodlines. They didn't know what Dragon Blood Drunk was, but their bloodlines had been

telling them that as long as they swallowed that thing, they could become real dragons, noble creatures, from evil spirit ones!

Ao Feng was a miles-long dragon. In the eyes of sane spirit creatures, he would be pretty scary, but to these crazy water-kind spirit creatures, Ao Feng was nothing else but an appetizer before the banquet. They believed that only tens of large water-kind spirit creatures could swallow Ao Feng entirely up!

"Marquis Yao! I was wrong!" Ao Feng was scared to death. He fled back towards the water surface desperately while yelling, "You were right! It’s horrible down here! Truly horrible!"

A loud swishing noise was started. At least ten-thousand water-kind spirit creatures transformed back into their original shapes and fearlessly bumped to the bottom of the city.

The Pan Gu bell buzzed, and those water-kind spirit creatures paused. In the following moment, the bodies of all these creatures fell apart.

Chapter 1109: A Flying Moth Darts into The Fire

On the water surface, the water-kind army launched the first wave of strike.

From hundreds of miles away from the city, a glistening silverfish slowly reached out its enormous head, which was miles in radius.

The fish gave a hoarse scream, then dazzled with a silver light as it screamed towards the sky. In a thousand miles wide area, countless silver fish darted out.

From three-inches to eight-feet, different sized silver fished leaped into the sky, as high as they could. They flapped their fins, bumping into the city, showing no fear of death.

Every flying fish was coiled around by a stream of spirit creature power released from that enormous silverfish. The silver-colored power streams flew between the scales of these small silver fishes and drew a sharp, angled spell symbol on each fish.

These flying fishes were already flying at a stunning speed, but added with the spell symbol, they got even faster. By now, these fishes were only slightly slower than arrows released by Eastern Wasteland archers.

Popping noises could be heard without an end. The first batch of flying fishes dove down from the sky and heavily bumped on the city wall. The thick layer of clear light covering the wall remained motionless, while these fishes were smashed into bits, like eggs landing on rocks.

Silver-blue streams of mist spurted out from the broken bodies of those dead fishes, then condensed into basin-sized ice flakes in the air. These ice flakes fell on the city wall and melted, flowing down and soon turned into a watery mist by the great power released by

the Pan Gu Defense magic formation, dissipating in the air.

The enormous silverfish had been roaring towards the sky. Wave after wave, countless flying fishes leaped out of the water surface and flew into the sky, then bravely dove down, bumping to the city while leaving beautiful arcs in the sky.

Ji Hao and the others stood in the city, hearing the shrill swishing noises. Every time, tens of millions of flying fishes would dive down swiftly from the air and kill themselves on the wall. These flying fishes attacked even quicker than the Eastern Wasteland arrow formation, created by Yi Di's hundreds of thousands of elite archers.

The Pan Gu Defense magic formation shielded the city, and not a single flying fish managed to fly inside. The Pan Gu defense seemed to be thin and weak, yet it was unimaginably strong and solid. Tens of millions of flying fishes bumped on the city wall one after another. Yet, except for the sharp swishing noises they caused, nothing could be heard but the cracking sounds of their bones.

Those smaller fishes, which were only three to five inches long, wouldn't even make much of noise even when they smashed against the wall. Those seven to eight foot long ones, and even the tens of meters long ones, banged thunderously against the city wall, as if they were rocks thrown out by giant-scale ballistae. Every bang caused by these fishes was as loud as thunder, and the blood and smashed meat of these fishes would splash to a hundred meters away, looking quite scary.

The enormous silverfish was still screaming towards the sky, sending waves of flying fishes into the sky, bumping into the city.

The faintly glowing city was like a black hole. No matter how many flying fishes dove down, the city would swallow them all.

"Spirit creatures are indeed terrifying, just like this." Standing beside Ji Hao, Hao Tao said blandly, "Fortunately, it's not easy for

them to become intelligent. If they were born as smart as human beings, no place would be left for our humankind in the world."

Ji Hao curved his mouth corners downward and remained silent.

Spirit creatures might be thought to be strong, but in fact, they were weak. Only after reaching a certain level of cultivation, the level of Magus Kings at least, could they touch a corner of wisdom. More commonly, some spirit creatures might be as strong as Divine Magi, yet still as stupid as wild boars.

Without wisdom, no matter how strong they were, they couldn't be terrifying. Without wisdom and a complete, healthy cultivation system, the family of these spirit creatures could expand unlimitedly indeed, but it was extremely difficult for truly powerful ones to emerge among them.

But, if one thought they were totally weak and helpless, in some ways, they could actually be hopelessly strong. Taking this giant silverfish as an example, in this vast water, this fish along could be as powerful as an elite Eastern Wasteland army. Numerous flying fishes were under its control. With nothing but a small part of its spirit creature power, this fish could turn those flying fishes, which shared the same origin with him, into warriors. Millions of flying fishes could deliver no more than one strike, but this single strike would be effective enough to make the silver fish's enemies suffer.

Human beings could never be like these spirit creatures, controlling their own kind and using them as weapons to attack the enemies.

Human beings were gifted with a great fertility, but still, it could not be mentioned in the same breath with that of water-kind spirit creatures.

Waves of flying fishes roared into the sky while glistening brightly with a silver light. The silver light even covered the entire water city. Emotionlessly, the giant silverfish screamed shrilly,

sending waves of flying fishes bumping into the city wall, wave after wave.

The flying fish strike lasted for half an hour. Blood and smashed fish bodies surrounded the entire water city up. But, the flying fish had still been roaring towards the sky, and its attack seemed to never end.

From distances away, long turbid waves rose slowly. Treading on the waves were countless water-kind spirit creatures.

Tens of enormous tentacles abruptly thrust out from a giant wave, along with dense streams of black mist and ear-piercing screams. Water streams squirted out from the waves, and pushed countless, different sized inkfishes up into the sky. They were flying across the air, fiercely towards the city on the water, just like those silver flying fishes.

Those flying fishes were silver-white. Stimulated by the spirit creature power released from that giant silverfish, their scales glistened beautifully and left sparkling arcs in the sky, looking quite splendid. These inkfishes were cyan-blue, and their bodies were transparent, also sparkling. They waved their tentacles, releasing high-pressure water streams, and pushing themselves higher and higher. Then, they smashed down towards the city, leaving cyan-blue traces in the air.

From around a hundred meters away from the city, all these flying inkfishes widely opened their mouthparts and let out a crazy amount of sticky, stinky ink.

Following the loud puffing noises, the city on the water was momentarily dyed black. The sticky ink covered the magic screen created by the Pan Gu Defense magic formation, and disabled Ji Hao and the others from seeing what had been happening on the outside.

"Idiots!" Tao Sha burst with a raging growl. "You don’t spray ink over your enemies when you can’t win!"

Before Tao Sha's voice faded, in a hundreds of meters tall wave in a distance away, thousands of slim and nimble large fishes darted out.

A nearly mile-long swordfish reached out its head from behind the wave, and screamed like that giant silverfish. Countless seven to eight feet long swordfishes swished over from right upon the water surface. These swordfishes were wrapped in a strong spirit creature power, which had carved a sword-shaped spell symbol on the body of each of them.

The slim and sharp heads of these swordfishes dazzled with a white light, while these fishes swished across the air, striking onto the city like bolts of lightning.

Thudding noises incessantly lingered on as these swordfishes cracked their own heads against the city wall, one after another.

Chapter 1110: Slaughter

Ten-thousand Magi Palace Magi lined up in a square formation, and began incanting a spell in chorus. All these Magi were wearing wind roc feather cloaks.

Wind rock feather was the best wind generator in the world. Corresponding with the ancient 'Wind Owner Spell' and the powers of these Magi, fierce gusts of wind blew out of those gray-white wind rock feather cloaks in an unstoppable way.

The wind gusts soon combined into one, then transformed into hundreds of tornadoes, rising straight into the sky. Gray tornadoes roared round above the city and swept away the ink left by those inkfishes before death.

Occasionally, a tornado would move to the water surface before the city, then disappear abruptly. The ink whirled away by the disappeared tornado would splash down and cover the bodies of those silver, thunderbolt-like swordfishes. Those swordfishes were turned to look like crazy, black boars which were crazily darting to the city.

The ink on the city was wiped away. Without that annoying ink, Ji Hao could again see things far away.

Eyes sparkling with a clear light, Ji Hao glanced at those enormous water-kind spirit creatures a long distance away, who had been boosting up their spirit creature powers, using their children as weapons, and attacking the city. Abruptly, Ji Hao took two steps forward, stood by the altar with the Dragon Blood Drunk pill on it, and gave a thunderous shout towards the vast water.

"You shameless things! Even a fierce tiger will not eat its cubs! How can you let your children die for nothing? Does any of you has the courage to fight us in a decent way? If you win, you can take this dragon blood pill!"

Looking down from the air, one would see layers of waves spreading out from around the city in all directions, forming great walls. Tens of thousands of wave walls existed in this area by now, judging from which, millions and billions of water-kind spirit creatures had been arriving from the twelve water worlds!

Countless water-kind spirit creatures greedily stared at the city, drooling towards the dragon blood pill on the altar.

Ji Hao's growl was like a thunder, and even stopped the heavy rain for a moment. Many enormous spirit creatures crowded in the frontal line heard Ji Hao. Soon, a beautiful mermaid mounted on a seahorse split a giant wave and walked to the city.

Silver flying fishes and cyan-blue inkfishes were swishing in the sky, while swordfishes were darting on the water surface. Within the dazzling silver and cyan-blue beams, a giant mermaid with a blue hair, wearing all kinds of ocean jewels, slowly approached, and smiled sweetly at Ji Hao.

"If I'm right, you're Marquis Yao, aren't you? You're one of the top 100 in Lord Gong Gong's list of 'must kill'!"

The mermaid chuckled and continued, "You're right, even a fierce tiger won't eat its cubs. Among water-kind, the ones with low fertilities, such our mermaid family, dragon whale family and tiger sharp family, we do cherish our children. We can't bear letting them suffer any harm."

"But these flying fishes, inkfishes, swordfishes...They can lay hundreds of thousands of eggs at one time...And they're all so stupid. We use them as weapons to weaken your defense. It's their destiny!"

While smiling, the mermaid crooked her finger towards Ji Hao, and said, "Marquis Yao, if you want a real battle, come to me...All spirit creatures know that sky foxes from Qing Qiu Mountain are the prettiest among all terrestrial creatures, while we, mermaids, are the most beautiful ones in the water! Marquis Yao, as long as

you’re daring enough to come over, I will definitely turn your steel spear into a little soft pond loach!"

Ji Hao’s mouth corner twitched intensely. Turning around, he looked at Hao Tao’s ink-dark face, and asked in a deep voice, "Is that true?"

Hao Tao snorted heavily, then showed the whites of his eyes in speechlessness.

Ji Hao shook his head, abruptly pointed his finger out towards the mermaid, and growled, "Kill!"

On the city wall, Yi Di suddenly stood up and pulled open the thunder running bow, putting a ‘wolf tooth’ arrow on the string. After a shrill swish, the arrow flew out.

The mermaid quivered slightly. When Yi Di showed up, she had already reached her hand backward to grab the red coral shield and shield herself against the arrow. But Yi Di moved way too fast, such that by the time the mermaid’s fingertips touched the shield, the arrow had already penetrated her head.

The mermaid had a strong body, which had been cultivated severely for hundreds of years. However, this strong body of her still failed to block the powerful arrow released by the thunder running bow. The ‘wolf tooth’ arrow slightly quaked inside the mermaid’s head and burst with thousands of sharp streams of power, blowing the mermaid’s head into pieces.

"My baby!"

The mermaid fell right on the spot. Immediately after that, furious roars came from everywhere. Next, those raging roars gradually became angry curses, while hundreds of oddly shaped large water-kind spirit creatures popped out from the watery, screaming restlessly for the dead mermaid like a group of ruttish monkey.

Every one of these large water-kind spirit creatures believed that

he was the only true love of the mermaid, the real boyfriend of hers.

But hundreds of large water-kind spirit creatures had been shouting exactly the same thing. These spirit creatures were straightforward and simple-minded; they might be hit by the anger, yet this didn't mean that they were all brainless. Cursing each other for a short while, these spirit creatures realized the truth simultaneously.

In the city, human warriors laughed out wildly, with their bellies buried in their hands. What a great show! That mermaid was quite talented, but how could all these water-kind spirit creatures be fooled so easily?

"Kill!" Hundreds of enraged water-kind spirit creatures growled out together. In the air, those flying fishes and inkfishes flew even faster than before; the numbers of these two kinds of fishes had suddenly risen largely. On the water surface, the number of those darting swordfishes doubled.

A loud bumping noise came from a distance, as water-tank-sized sea turtles popped out from the water, and lined up orderly, circling the city up from all directions. Their shells connected and covered the water surface for thousands of miles.

Treading on the shells of these sea turtles were countless purely dark sea crabs. Each sea crab was at least three meters wide. These sea crabs madly waved their pincers and rushed to the city, as easily as walking on an open road.

These crabs were finally no longer pure cannon fodder, as Magus-King-level ones had emerged amongst them. Nearly a hundred-meter-long sea crabs swayed their large heavy bodies, approaching the city while spraying bubbles.

"Shoot!"

Ji Hao raised his right arm high and swung down fiercely.

Hundreds of thousands of ‘volcano collapse’ arrows screamed out from the top of the city wall and watchtowers, covering the sea crab army around the city.

Muffled booms were louder than any other sound, including the smashing noises caused by those flying fishes and inkfishes against the wall. It sounded truly like tens of thousands of volcanos vented simultaneously. The terrifying series of boom even vibrated the sky and the earth, while raging flames covered the water surface in thousands of miles.

The sea crabs were burned red in the ocean of flame, then turned into puffs of ashes, drifting in the sky.

Sea turtles were grilled, and before they could dive back down into the water, they were all burned into ashes as well.

Only those enormously shaped sea crabs were still struggling on the water surface, but not for long. ‘Wolf tooth’ arrows screamed over at lightning speed and accurately pierced into their most vital body parts, taking their lives right away.

Waves of water-kind spirit creatures flooded over towards the city, as waves of ‘volcano collapse’ arrows were released.

A raging fire surrounded the city. Within the fire, numerous water-kind spirit creatures screamed, cried, and then turned into puffing ashes and smoke.

Chapter 1111: Enormous Spirit Creatures Strike the City

The aroma of the dragon blood pill grew stronger and stronger. Among the water-kind crowd, all the powerful spirit creatures and ordinary aquatic creatures had been driven crazy. At first, those spirit creatures could still control those ordinarily aquatic creatures to attack the city in order, but by the end, those creatures could no longer restrain their instinctual energies. They neglected the orders gave by those spirit creatures, followed their own hearts, and surged up to the city.

The boundless water surface disappeared, covered by the backs of countless water-kind creatures. At first glance, one could see nothing but screaming and struggling water-kind creatures, crazily rushing to the city with all their strengths, for nothing but getting closer to the dragon blood pill.

Some fierce creatures, such as tiger sharks, water boas, and crocodiles, were pushed and squeezed by the other water-kind creatures, and were enraged. They widely opened their jaws and bit whatever was near their mouths. The others showed no sign of fear and fought back as hard as possible. Millions of relatively weaker water-kind creatures were slaughtered by their own kind.

‘Volcano collapse’ arrows descended from the sky one after another. With a twisted beauty, the roaring flame spread out. Wherever the fire reached, water-kind creatures were burned into ashes, and the water was boiled, cooking more water-kind creatures.

Eastern Wasteland archers in the city had caused severe damage to the water-kind army, but the number of those water-kind creatures was way too huge, and those archers could never kill all of them. Under the heavy storm of arrow, millions of water-kind spirit creatures still managed to reach the wooden city wall.

These water-kind creatures layered up, and raised the water level slowly, climbing up over each others' body. Gradually, they nearly reached the top of the city wall.

Large groups of heavily armored human warriors took the place of those Eastern Wasteland archers and stood in the frontal line. They gripped shining long blades in their hands, boosted up their strengths and hacked those water-kind creatures near the city wall.

The blades used by these warriors were all great pieces, Ji Hao's product. These blades were originated from the pair of 'white tiger tusk blade' that belonged to White Tiger Clan. The original pair was naturally shaped from a pair of tusks of an ancient white tiger. The longest pair of tusks fell into a cave after the tiger died, was nourished by natural powers for millions of years, and eventually became a pair of blades.

Not to mention how sharp the pair of blades was, it could release a natural killing power which could drill straight into the body of a living creature through even a tiny wound on a finger, and severely damage the soul of this creature.

In battles, the pair of blades could absorb the killing power suffused in the battlefields, and transform it into a strong forcefield, called the 'evil white tiger forcefield'. Three-thousand-meters around the holder of the pair of blades was the coverage of the 'evil white tiger forcefield'. Within this area, all enemies would be affected, and be weakened by at least thirty percent.

If the enemies were not powerful enough, or not with strong willpower, the 'evil white tiger forcefield' would downgrade their battle effectivenesses to less than ten percent!

At the moment, hundreds of thousands of artificial pairs of white tiger tusk blades were pulled out. A nearly tangible 'evil white tiger forcefield' instantly covered the entire area. Water-kind spirit creatures near the top of the city wall paused suddenly. These

crazy water-kind spirit creatures had their brains frozen immediately, that made them shake intensely in fear and dare not to move.

Earlier, billions of weak water-kind creatures bumped on the city wall and died. The death power and negative energies generated by those dead creatures transformed into visible dark mist streams, and were absorbed by those artificial white tiger tusk blades. Meanwhile, the ‘evil white tiger forcefield’ grew stronger and stronger, heavier and heavier. Under the effect of the forcefield, those water-kind spirit creatures were slowed down, turning stiffer and stiffer.

Crescent-shaped blade light flashed across the city wall. Human warriors wielded the blades, crazily hacking on the frozen water-kind creatures, which couldn’t even move anymore.

Those warriors injected their thriving power into their blades. Hundred-meters long, sharp light beams dazzled from the blade edges. The light beams were generated by the natural metal power, and were extremely sharp. Sea turtle shells, boa scales, crocodile skins, nothing could survive that sharp blade light.

Blood with different colored splashed out. Giant numbers of water-kind creatures were killed by the city wall. Their corpses sank into the water, or were simply swallowed by water-kind creatures which rushed up from behind.

Under the storm, loud puffing noises could be heard clearly, as those sharp white tiger tusk blades had been cutting into the bodies of those water-kind creatures. Together, neatly and easily, hundreds of thousands of human warriors wielded their blades at the same speed and killed countless water-kind spirit creatures by the city wall.

In the dark night, under the heavy rain, countless flying fishes swished over like arrows, bumping against these human warriors’ bodies.

The Pan Gu Defense magic formation glowed with a faint light, which covered these human warriors. Against these warriors' bodies, those flying fishes shattered into pieces, but not a single warrior was wounded; not even a hair of them was harmed.

"This is the best battle I've ever fought in all these years!" Abruptly, a middle-aged commander wielded his blades and growled, "Boys, mind where your blades land! These big things are all delicious meat!"

While shouting, this commander beheaded a hundred of meters long boa, grabbed the twitching body, and threw it straight back into the city.

All human warriors laughed out loud. Hearing that commander, they started to carefully land their blades, in case they accidentally ruined the delicious parts of these water-kind creatures.

Resonant steam-whistle-like sounds came from the water surface, following which, a five-hundred-meters long shark rose into the sky. In the air, the shark's body speedily shrunk, and turned into a thirty-meter-tall muscular man within three breaths.

Carrying a mottled bronze chain with both his hands, this shark man shattered thousands of fist-sized raindrops and landed heavily before the entrance of the board path, which was left especially by Ji Hao in the northern gate of the city, for these powerful spirit creatures.

The three-hundred-meters wide, hundreds of miles long path was perfectly clean, without a stain of blood.

The Dragon Blood Drunk pill was at the end of the path, and so was Ji Hao. With an encouraging and praising smile, Ji Hao nodded quickly to that shark man.

"Marquis Yao Ji Hao!" The shark man swung his arms and wielded the bronze chain, creating a cyan halo which was roaring and spinning above his head, while he marched towards Ji Hao

with big steps. "I want this treasure, and your head! Lord Gong Gong promised us, the East Sea, North Sea, South Sea and West Sea, whoever can cut off your head,will be able to select an area and be the king!"

The path was nearly a hundred and fifty miles long, but it only took the shark man two breaths to rush up to Ji Hao. Along with a fierce gust of wind, the bronze chain roared down to Ji Hao's head.

Ji Hao glanced at the shark man. He made the Big Dipper step, and nimbly dodged the heavy chain like a fish. Next, he pulled out the Taiji divine sword with his right hand, and left a clear beam of light in the air, piercing to the shark man's heart along his left arm.

The shark man howled in pain as Ji Hao's sword penetrated his heart. Yu Yu's sword art was added with the move of sky-opening, and before the shark man had a clear vision of the sword, he was killed right on spot.

Ji Hao kicked the shark man's corpse into the city. The corpse expanded speedily, and soon transformed back into the original shape.

Hundreds of Magi cast a magic together, holding that giant shark in the air. Large groups of human warriors excitedly picked up knives and quickly surrounded the shark's corpse, cutting fleshy slices of meat off.

Raging roars burst from the water surface once again. In a row, seven to eight powerful water-kind spirit creatures failed to restrain their greediness, transformed into muscular men, and rushed into the path.

Chapter 1112: Make A Profit in Troubled Situation

In the northwestern side of the city on the water, high up in the air, a thousands of meters high, floating mountain was wrapped in a dense cloud.

The purely black floating mountain looked like a shaking reflection in the water. Indescribably, it seemed not even real. The hundreds of meters tall, cone-shaped mountain had been spinning ceaselessly like a reversed whirlpool.

A beautiful small castle stood on the mountain. The dark castle looked like a proud black swan. The five-hundred meters tall tower in the castle was like the long and slim neck of the black swan.

Yemo Luoye stood on top of the tower, with a human-head-sized crystal ball floating above her ten slender fingers. Lights and shadows sparkled in the crystal ball, showing Yemo Luoye every detail that happened down on the water surface between the water-kind army and Ji Hao's city.

Yemo Shayi silently stood behind Yemo Luoye, wearing a dragon scale half-body armor, with a heavy sword tied around his waist. His narrowed eyes were fixed on the crystal ball.

A dim light flashed across the crystal ball. Suddenly, the images showing in the crystal ball switched. In the crystal ball, Yemo Shanye stood on a starry void spirit turtle's head, shouting and yelling, as she had just killed a senior-level water-kind spirit creature herself, with a specially designed crossbow.

After blowing up the head of that large eel, Yemo Shanye laughed happily out and had a high five with Man Man. Then, she gritted her teeth, pulled open the crossbow, and put on another sharp arrow, aimed at the water-kind army, pulling the trigger once again.

Yemo Luoye silently watched Yemo Shanye, watched her chuckling and giggling happily with Man Man.

"Prince Yemo Shanye, I have never seen her like this." A long while later, Yemo Shayi lowered his eyelids and smiled.

"She is a noble of the Dark Sun. She is representing the dignity of the Dark Sun. Look at her crazy face, is she even worth the blessings of the great Dark Sun?" Yemo Luoye threw away the crystal ball and let it float in the air. Then, she weakly fell backward and landed on a black jade rocking chair.

"Your Highness, do you need me to bring Princess Yemo Shanye back?" Yemo Shayi rubbed the hilt of his sword and lowered his head, looking at Yemo Luoye as he said, "She’s too close to that boy with a bow, and this is not good."

Yemo Luoye threw a sideway glance at Yemo Shayi, then flicked her finger. Following her moves, a misty, dark, man-shaped silhouette drifted down from the top of the tower, who politely put a cold glass of fruit wine in Yemo Luoye’s hand.

Taking a sip of the wine, which had a slightly dark color, Yemo Luoye narrowed her eyes and pondered for a while. Then, she abruptly chuckled and said, "Why should we bring her back? Although this is going to harm the honor of our Yemo Family... Since she’s not happy about the engagement I arranged for her, she can do whatever she wants."

Putting the glass on an arm of the chair, Yemo Luoye looked at Yemo Shayi and continued blandly, "When she was born, the power of the great Dark Sun arrived through the immeasurable time and space to give her the blessing in this world...She possesses the unprecedented, perfect talent... tens, even hundreds of times better than mine..."

Yemo Shayi sighed, then slightly bowed to Yemo Luoye and said, "I understand, Your Highness. We shall let Princess Yemo Shanye pursue her own happiness! Even though that boy is only a lowly

barbarian."

Yemo Luoye carelessly looked at the wine glass. Her white and tender finger gently stroked across the surface of the crystal glass, causing a faintly audible, silvery noise. Meanwhile, she said in a low voice, "We can't indulge her too much though...Send people to keep an eye on her. Let her be happy for a while. If she truly decides to be together with that barbarian...Kill that bloody human boy."

Yemo Shayi smiled. Warmly, he looked at Yemo Luoye, while gently tinkling the hilt of his sword with a finger, and said with an extra warm tone, "Your Highness, you're too much like your father...Truly alike. Only under your lead can the Yemo Family grow stronger and stronger."

Hearing the word 'father', Yemo Luoye's face turned dark immediately. She picked up the glass and emptied it.

With a few drops of wine remained in it, the glass was thrown away violently by Yemo Luoye, slicing those dark clouds broken, and falling to the boundless water surface down below. The glistening glass descended from the sky and cracked against the head of a giant blue-circle octopus.

A faint black halo spread out speedily towards all directions, which covered a hundred-miles wide area within a blink of an eye.

A terrifying corrosive force flashed across the area, and next, all water-kind spirit creatures within this area disappeared, without leaving a trace.

The water-kind army had already been driven completely crazy by the aroma of the dragon blood pill. Countless more water-kind creatures kept marching to the city, and soon filled up this empty area. None of those powerful spirit creatures in the frontal line discovered anything wrong with this area.

Meanwhile, a drop of crystalline red blood appeared on Yemo

Luoye’s forefinger. This blood drop was the purest life-force essence of the millions of water-kind creatures she killed just now. By absorbing this drop entirely, an ordinary man would directly become a peak-level Magus King!

"Sweet, fragrant!" Yemo Luoye grinned. She slightly opened her mouth and sent this sweet drop of blood, which contained a thriving life-force, into her lips. Then, a charming pinkness appeared on Yemo Luoye’s beautiful face.

"Devour everything, absorb everything, the supreme law of the Dark Sun." Yemo Luoye closed her eyes and sensed the warmness spreading inside her body, while saying gently, "Send out our Dark Sun warriors. Do not disturb those lowly and stupid water-kind creatures... and don’t let those bloody human beings see them either."

"Countless water-kind creatures are waiting for them to hunt, with tons of spirit blood for them to absorb. Tell them, I wish that before this bloody flood ends, all my Dark Sun warriors can at least promote themselves to one level higher."

"When the flood fades, the other eleven bastards, Dishi Cha, or Yemo Tian who blamed he younger brother of mine... No matter what they have been planning, as long as my warriors are stronger than theirs, I will not lose!"

Yemo Luoye stood up and leaned a half of her body out of the tower, looking down at the water-kind army as she smiled in satisfaction and said, "What a perfect hunting ground! It showed up especially for our Dark Sun warriors. Even better, human beings have caught all their attention, and we only need to slaughter them, as many as we like."

Yemo Shayi politely bowed to Yemo Luoye and said in a deep voice, "This is all because of your sagaciousness, Your Highness."

Yemo Luoye shrugged, then smiled carelessly and responded, "My sagaciousness? I’d rather believe that this is a blessing from

the great Dark Sun...Send out our warriors, but tell them that I'll take fifty percent of all their harvests. This is the rule of the Dark Sun!"

Yemo Shayi smilingly nodded, then transformed into a dark shadow, and disappeared.

Silently, groups of strong and muscular Dark Sun Jia Clan warriors showed up around the water-kind army. Hiding in the darkness, these Jia Clan warriors quietly drilled into the water-kind army like ghosts.

Chapter 1113: Descendants of Water Apes

Gasping for air, Ji Hao threw a muscular man, which was transformed from a giant whale, out. Then, he breathed quickly and took a few steps backward, with sweat streaming down his back.

The whale man popped out his glowing-red eyes and howled loudly while leaping straight up, carrying a huge coral stick and smashing down to Ji Hao's head. The water-tank-thick coral stick sparkled with a faint blue light. Ji Hao laughed out wildly, wielded his arms, and rushed up.

Bare fists bumped against the coral stick, and Ji Hao's body was bent instantly. He sensed a strong pressure coming down from above, which nearly put him down on the ground. But eventually, Ji Hao managed to steady his body. He took a deep breath, then put forth his strength through his arms, and sent the whale man flying once again.

No one should underestimate these water-kind spirit creatures. Indeed, it was extremely difficult for ordinary creatures to become spirit creatures, yet once they reached a certain level of cultivation and transformed into human shapes, their physical strengths could even suppress same-level Divine Magi. After all, their real bodies were thousands, even tens of thousands of times huger than the bodies of human beings.

Among the alliance of human clans, only warriors from Longbo Country and Kuafu Family were qualified to fight these enormous spirit creatures with pure physical strengths. Warriors from these two clans were gigantic, and their physical strengths were at the level of the dragon-kind. In terms of physical strength, these warriors were the best of best among the entire humankind.

A spirit seahorse bumped in Ji Hao, leaving shreds of afterimages in the air. This creature had a three-meters long sharp horn on his

head, and on that cyan-blue sharp horn, a watery light had been sparkling. In addition to that, large flakes of ice crystals had been hovering around the horn.

Ji Hao laughed out loud, grabbed the horn, showed his teeth and burst with a thunderous roar. Dragging the horn, Ji Hao lifted up the hundred-meters long seahorse and swung above his head twice, then violently smashed it on the ground.

A thunder-like boom was generated, which even vibrated the entire city. The poor seahorse had all of his bones broken into bits, and blood squeezed out of his mouth. For a long while, this spirit creature wouldn’t be able to make any move at all.

"Marquis Yao!" Standing on the city wall, Yi Di raised his bow and shouted out loud. By now, Yi Di had already become a loyal follower of Ji Hao. Seeing Ji Hao easily defeat these strong enormous spirit creatures, Yi Di was thrilled in excitement, that even his fine hairs had stood straight up.

"Marquis Yao!"

Countless human warriors raised their weapons and shields and clanged the hilts of their weapons against their shields, while shouting Ji Hao’s name.

Many people witnessed Ji Hao defeating quite a few giant spirit creatures with pure physical strength, wildly and violently. Muscles thudded against muscles, bodies bumped against bodies. All this had been declaring an obvious power and strangeness.

Stomping his foot on the seahorse’s head, Ji Hao raised his arms high and growled out to the tens of large spirit creatures, who had been staring at him stunned by the entrance of the path. "Come on! Keep it going! You stupid things! Come one by one if you dare. Let’s find out who can eventually defeat me!"

Pointing at the altar behind him, Ji Hao continued with a cold voice, "This pill is not so useful to us, but to you scaled creatures,

this is a genuine treasure! This can turn you into true dragons! Real dragons! Hehe, if you can ever become real dragons, no matter how much you improve by then, you will surely have higher status among your kind, won't you?"

Those water-kind creatures stared at Ji Hao with red eyes. They gasped loudly and quickly. Finally, one of them gave a roar, and following that, they marched together to Ji Hao.

Ji Hao laughed resonantly out to respond. Kicking the large seahorse out, he flashed back to the altar and yelled, "Haha, you don't do it together! Your Master Ji Hao is not silly. Who would want to fight so many of you all at once?"

Tao Sha burst with thunderous laughter. He wielded the Taotie tooth and put forth his strength through his arms. The Taotie tooth transformed into numerous silver chains which darted out. Behind him, Taotie clan warriors activated their artificial Taotie tooth chains. Three-hundred silver chains transformed into a giant web and swished up, sealing the entire path. The tens of spirit creatures screamed in panic while the silver web descended straight to their heads. All of sudden, countless sharp silver tusks shot out from the chains.

The chains tightened suddenly, and those silver tusks all sank into those spirit creatures' bodies, causing a series of puffing noise. A strong sense of greediness surged out through the chains. Those spirit creatures trembled intensely as their blood was drawn out by those chains. Visibly, the silver chain quickly turned light blood-red.

Heavy footsteps could then be heard. Three spirit shrimps, two spirit turtles, eight spirit giant sharks, twelve spirit whales, and five enormous spirit crabs transformed into human shapes one after another, then rushed into the path with big steps. They released a strong spirit creature power. Large raindrops and fierce wind hovered around them, as these water-kind spirit creatures cast their magics and dashed towards the altar ferociously.

Behind the walls on both sides of the path, all embattling human warriors stepped away, pushing up two lines of well-prepared heavy weapons. Extra large arrows locked on these marching spirit creatures.

Those spirit creatures roared deeply. They raised all kinds of shields made from corals, turtle shells, clamshells, rocks, and covered their own bodies, continuing to dash to Ji Hao.

"Fire!" A commander thunderously gave the order. Hundreds of heavy crossbows boomed simultaneously, and hundreds of large arrows swished out. These arrows were pure metal, thickly covered in small spell symbols.

The shields held in the hands of over ten spirit creatures were shattered immediately by these large arrows. They howled in pain and fell to the ground. Numerous water-tank-sized holes were left in their bodies. The rest spirit creatures kept rushing; around them, the roaring winds rolled up large clouds of blood mist.

Ji Hao’s eye corners suddenly twitched. He opened his erect eye and released a stream of clear light which shone to tens of miles away and illuminated the entire path.

Behind these ferocious spirit creatures, out there in the storm, a faintly sensible silhouette followed. That ‘thing’ had also been speedily approaching the altar. If Ji Hao didn’t sense the danger, he wouldn’t discover that silhouette either.

Once Ji Hao’s erect eye shone, everyone else saw that faint silhouette.

Hao Tao growled out loud, "Impressive! Hehe, great water-running magic!"

That ‘thing’ glanced back at the trace left by itself, then flashed to beside the altar, reaching out its claw towards the dragon blood pill.

Ji Hao gave a bright roar. He straightened his right forefinger

and middle finger, then wielded his arm as if it were a sharp sword. Once again, he combined Yu Yu's sword art with the move of sky-opening, and generated an incredibly sharp sword intent that tore apart the curtain of rain, stabbing to that 'thing'.

The hazy silhouette suddenly turned clearer and showed its real face. That was a 'handsome-looking' water ape, covered entirely in long silver fur.

Ji Hao's fingertips swished across the air. The fierce sword intent nearly brushed against the ape's temple.

"Are You Wuzhi Qi's descendant?" asked Ji Hao loudly.

The water ape screamed shrilly, as its claws almost touched the dragon blood pill.

However, before the ape could grab the pill down from the altar, from the rain curtain aside, a giant, round-shaped man abruptly dashed out and slapped his both hands heavily on the ape's back, leaving two dark-green streams of mist in the air.

Chapter 1114: The Power of the Forbidden Magic

Wuzhi Qi was proud. He was from the first generation of living creatures in the world, and he believed that except for himself, no one else deserved his forename. Therefore, all Wuzhi Qi's offsprings took 'Yuan' as their last name. This good-looking one who broke into Ji Hao's water city for the dragon blood pill, was the youngest son of Wuzhi Qi, named Yuan Li.

Yuan Li's mother was a super talented human Maguspriest, a real master of water magics. When she was dedicated to Wuzhi Qi as an offering, she was already a Divine Maguspriest. Afterwards, she was pregnant for twelve years before she had Yuan Li. Yuan Li was nourished by all kinds of essence water power back when he was still in his mother's womb, and once he was born, he showed his amazing talents in no time.

The one who dashed out of the city to attack Yuan Li was no one else but Yu Mu.

Yu Mu had already merged his own body with all kinds of magic poisons at the current stage of his cultivation. Hands coiled in dense green smoke, Yu Mu slapped heavily on Yuan Li's back. Yu Mu was indeed a chubby one, yet he was as nimble as a bird. Yuan Li didn't manage to react timely, and as a result, Yu Mu's hands landed loudly on his back.

"Ah!" Yuan Li burst with a raging growl as the aggressive poison reached straight to his internal organs. He could no longer feel his body parts which got affected by the magic poison. Yuan Li's beautiful silver long fur turned dark green speedily. Even the air he breathed out was faint green now.

"Yu Mu, capture him alive!" Ji Hao quickly took back his sword. Just now, he released his sword intent and nearly killed Yuan Li, which even startled himself. Now, seeing Yuan Li suffering Yu

Mu's magic poison, Ji Hao hurriedly told the latter to not kill him, as he didn't want Yuan Li to die in this place.

Yu Mu paused slightly, then crooked his chubby fingers and took back a big half of the toxic smoke, which was about to drill into Yuan Li's body. But right in the next moment, Yuan Li bent his upper body reversely, as if his waist were broken, while he swung a large, dark iron stick down fiercely.

Even Ji Hao didn't see where Yuan Li got that stick from. Yu Mu was focused on taking back the toxic smoke, and hadn't been preparing for any attack. Consequently, the iron stick whipped right on Yu Mu's shoulder and generated a loud bang. Yu Mu screamed out loud as he was sent flying away. He rolled to seven to eight miles away along the path like a giant meatball.

"Piss off! Bloody fatso!" A muscular whale man rushed up from behind and threw a violent kick to Yu Mu.

Yu Mu suffered a strike launched by Yuan Li, which had already infuriated him. All of a sudden, dense colorful smoke blasted out from his body. Black, purple, blue, green, yellow, all kinds of toxic smokes rolled out, and covered hundreds of meters in radius.

A few spirit creatures who survived those large arrows now trembled. They didn't know how much toxic smoke they inhaled, but despite their great cultivations, their skins started changing colors, as well as their eyeballs. Meanwhile, their blood veins swelled in a weird way.

"You stupid things!" Yuan Li turned back and glanced at those poisoned spirit creatures, then looked at Ji Hao, grinned and said, "Nothing but some magic poison, how can those ever harm your Master Yuan Li?"

Ji Hao paused slightly. He was reaching his hand to Yuan Li, but hearing him, he stopped, looking at Yuan Li with a faint smile. He wanted to know how this ape would deal with Yu Mu's magic poisons.

One had to mention that Yu Mu's magic poisons were nothing ordinary. Many of his poisons came from Pan Xi world instead of native Pan Gu world creatures. All rare types of magic poisons were mixed together, generating unexpected changes. Even those experienced master Magi in Magi Palace were troubled by Yu Mu's magic poisons.

Yuan Li proudly and coldly chuckled. Suddenly, he leaped forward along with a loud sizzling noise, after which, he sloughed like a cicada. A dried 'ape shell' was left behind, while the real Yuan Li showed up tens of meters away, with his body covered in shining silver fur, without a trace left by the toxic smoke.

The toxic green smoke lingered on the 'shell', and within a second, the thin 'shell' was corroded into a strand of smoke along with a sizzling noise.

"A phantom created with the extremely negative power, faked my death!" Yuan Li proudly roared towards the sky, then threw a sideway glance at Ji Hao and said, "You won't understand even if I tell you...Silly mortal people, you will never understand!"

Ji Hao's eye corners twitched quickly. The secret magic Yuan Li cast just now leaked a slight trace of extremely negative power. Obviously, he kept the extremely negative power inside his body all year long, transforming it into a 'fake body' which could die instead of him. Once his real body suffered a difficult injury, his would immediately activate the 'fake body', and transfer all injuries to it. Thus, his real body could remain unharmed.

This was a smart, high-grade magic. He did not simply use natural powers. Instead, he had already laid a finger on the natural law. And, magics with the natural law involved were no longer ordinary magics; those were forbidden magics.

These so-called 'forbidden magics' could be interpreted as 'magics that were forbidden by nature'.

"You're even more talented than your father!" Ji Hao smilingly

looked at Yuan Li. His body shone with a faint silver light as he flashed straight to Yuan Li like a ghost, leaving shreds of afterimages in the air. "Your father has pushed his water power to an extreme level; he is only a breath away from the great Dao of water. But you, you are directly using the extremely negative power...Impressive, truly impressive!"

Yuan Li stared at Ji Hao as if he were a true devil. He saw Ji Hao's face, heard Ji Hao's voice, but he could not sense Ji Hao. That was an extremely strange feeling. In Yuan Li's eyes, Ji Hao was like reflections in the water, shaking, fuzzy, seeming to not even belong to this world.

He moved, as his silver fur glowed with a beautiful, pearl-like luster. He dashed straight to the altar, also leaving a few afterimages behind. Reaching his claws to the dragon blood pill, Yuan Li yelled, "What're you talking about? That old monkey? Do you know him? How do you know which level he is at?"

Ji Hao wielded his broad sleeves. Surrounded by a strong extremely negative power, he blocked Yuan Li's way, as airily as a butterfly.

No matter how hard Yuan Li tried to dodge or how many afterimages he created, Ji Hao's silhouette always drifted right before his face, and had his way blocked.

While smiling, Ji Hao looked at Yuan Li and said, "Your father and I are friends. The flood is merciless, so it's better for you to stay and work for me. Otherwise, if anything happens to you, if someone took you, peeled you and ate your brain, how am I supposed to explain that to your father?"

Yuan Li's ape face twisted badly. He had already tried his best, yet, he failed to get rid of Ji Hao.

Finally, he realized that the power surrounded Ji Hao was the same extremely negative power he had been using. That was the most mysterious, immeasurable power in the world. One could

find it in nowhere, but it existed everywhere.

However, Ji Hao’s extremely negative power was stronger than his. Therefore, Ji Hao moved faster than he did, and was harder to catch.

"If you’re a decent man, defeat me! Then, we can negotiate anything!" Yuan Li paused for a short while, then shouted out loud.

"Alright!" Hearing Yuan Li, Ji Hao laughed out immediately. A silver light flashed across his right hand, as he suddenly pointed at Yuan Li and shouted, "Freeze!"

This was a small forbidden magic he learned from Priest Xuan Du. He transformed the extremely negative power into a strong yet invisible seal called ‘freeze’. This was the very first time for Ji Hao to actually use this magic. Abruptly, Yuan Li paused, standing in a strange posture, without being able to move even his eyelids.

Chapter 1115: Defeat

Yuan Li popped out his pair of eyes and stared straight at Ji Hao. He couldn't believe this.

By now, the only moveable body parts of his was his pair of eyes. Except for those eyes, he felt that even his soul had been soaked in sticky mud, and his mind had been turning slower and slower.

Baring his upper body, Heng Xing rushed out of the city. He straightened a mace and whipped it heavily on Yuan Li's back. Followed by a muffled thud, Yuan Li was knocked to the ground while vomiting blood.

Dropped the mace, Heng Xing pulled out a magic rope made from a boa tendon mixed with essence magic crystals, then tied Yuan Li up neatly and quickly. While doing that, he sneakily, evilly, and heavily punched Yuan Li's ribs, thighs, lower bellies, and the other not so vital yet extremely painful body areas hundreds of times.

"You bloody monkey...Do you remember me? I am Heng Xing! Back then in the North Sea, for a dragon blood fire coral fruit, you pulled off all my scales! I almost died in pain!"

Thud! Heng Xing gave Yuan Li an elbow strike right on his rib. Henggong fishes had stunning physical strength. Yuan Li might be much better than Heng Xing in terms of using magic, but facing the pure violence, Yuan Li had his blood squeezed out of his mouth, ear and nose. He was nearly swooning with pain.

"This time, you are in my hands!" Heng Xing maliciously grinned to Yuan Li and said, "Strange though... You're Wuzhi Qi's son, and your mother is a powerful human Maguspriest. What do you want this dragon blood pill for? You don't want to change your bloodline and become a dragon, do you?"

Yuan Li was frozen by Ji Hao; he couldn't move, and couldn't even talk by now.

Heng Xing smilingly sat on Yuan Li's back, then slapped his head over and over again.

Ji Hao gave a sideway glance at Heng Xing. Seeing Yuan Li bullied by Heng Xing and almost crying out, Ji Hao waved his hand and removed the seal on him.

A silver light flashed across Yuan Li's body. All of a sudden, he burst with a raging roar, then leaned his head forward. His neck was pulled to seven to eight foot long as he turned straight back and bit on Heng Xing's face.

Heng Xing's skin was even stronger than iron boards, but Yuan Li bit him with solid hatred and anger. Yuan Li's shining teeth sank deep into Heng Xing's face, even causing puncture wounds.

Heng Xing howled in pain, raised his fists and launched a crazy wave of punches to Yuan Li's ribs. However, Yuan Li was enabled to move again, and was as nimble as a fish in water. He flashed across the air and freed himself from the boa tendon rope once countless spell symbols began sparkling on the rope. As fast as a gust of wind, he leaped up and mounted on Heng Xing's shoulder.

Heng Xing's heavy punches didn't hit the target, but he punched too hard, which nearly made him fall to the ground.

Yuan Li roared out brightly. His silver fur waved like water as he raised both his fists high and smashed madly to Heng Xing's head. Loud and muffled bongs could be heard without an end. Yuan Li's fists were covered in a thick and white layer of ice, like a pair of bowl-sized ice balls. The pair of ice balls smashed fiercely on Heng Xing's head, releasing a strong frigid mist that quickly generated a thick layer of ice on Heng Xing's skin, sealed his eyes, nose, mouth, and ears.

Heng Xing was thrown into a panic. Without being able to see, he swung his pair of muscular arms to Yuan Li, who was sitting on his shoulder.

Yuan Li twisted his body, but still did not loosen his tightly gnashed teeth. He put forth his strength through his extra long neck, nimbly swung his body off Heng Xing's shoulder and easily dodged the heavy punches.

Poor Heng Xing, the two full-strength punches landed on his own temples, and shattered the thick layer of ice on his head. Showing the whites of his eyes, Heng Xing cursed something pretty dirty, then swayed and softly fainted on the ground, unable to move anymore.

"Such an idiot! Wanna catch me? In your dreams!" Yuan Li scornfully sneered, then glanced at Ji Hao with a hint of fear. He shook his body, transformed into a bright silver light, and dazzled to the altar.

The silver light extended for a hundred meters. From the light, two claws thrust out swiftly towards the dragon blood pill.

"Still on it? I'm right here, so it won't be easy for you to take this treasure!" Ji Hao moved instantly, also transforming into a silver light, and followed closely after Yuan Li. Two streams of silver light clashed against each other, tore each other, and tried to stop each other. Soon, a giant silver swirl was created that spun around the altar hundreds of times.

Through this tangled fight, Yuan Li was pushed further and further away from the altar.

Ji Hao laughed out loud and released his spirit power which covered Yuan Li's body like a large web. He already discovered the fact that Yuan Li was indeed talented, and had grasped a trace of the great Dao of extremely negative power. <oreover, with the not-so-rich extremely negative power in this world, Yuan Li had cultivated himself well; he even set foot in the door of 'forbidden magics'.

What a pity! Same as Wuzhi Qi, Yuan Li was self-educated, without anyone to guide him. Otherwise, with his great gifts, he

would be much more powerful.

"Take these!" Ji Hao burst with a thunderous growl. From the dazzling silver light, he launched a series of punches.

Yuan Li was startled by Ji Hao's thunder-like growl. Subconsciously, he opened his eyes and looked at Ji Hao's fists.

Ji Hao had been using the extremely negative power, but all of a sudden, blinding bright light burst from his fists. Yuan Li felt like a sun had suddenly appeared before his face. He screamed out as his eyes were almost blinded by the golden light. He closed his eyes instinctively and let two streams of tears flow out.

Ji Hao laughed wildly out once again. Transforming back into a silver light, he swished forward, grabbed Yuan Li's neck and carried him up, smashing him back down on the ground.

Followed by a loud thud, Yuan Li landed on the ground, then bounced back up for tens of meters. A mouthful of blood sprayed out from his mouth. When he landed on the ground once again, he couldn't move anymore. Ji Hao squatted beside him, pressed a hand on his back, with another hand patted on his head. He laughed, "Do you admit defeat? If you do, follow my lead. I will even find you a powerful Shifu to guide you."

Yuan Li paused slightly as Ji Hao carried on, "If you don't admit defeat and are not willing to follow me, I will peel you right now, make your skin into a shirtless coat! This beautiful silver fur of yours will look pretty good on me."

Yuan Li remained silent for a short while. Sensing the mountain-heavy hand pressed on his back, he weakly patted the ground and said, "I admit defeat, I do...But, you have to give me this dragon blood pill! I promised someone!"

Ji Hao chuckled, dragged Yuan Li up from the ground and said, "Good, I will surely give you the pill after all this has ended! But, I need a favor from you right now!"

Pausing slightly, Ji Hao continued in a cold tone, "Tell your families and friends who have surrounded the city to stay away... Don’t come to die! Otherwise, don’t blame me for having no mercy!"

While saying the words ‘having no mercy’, Ji Hao pulled out the Taiji divine sword and swung it. Four arc-shaped beams cut four gigantic spirit creatures, which were rushing up to him, into eight pieces.

Chapter 1116: Silver Flood Dragon

Beside the Pan Gu Defense magic formation, a Chaos power stream drifted out, transformed into a rope, and tied around Yuan Li's waist. A few elderly-looking Maguspriest sat aside as they narrowed their angled eyes, staring at Yuan Li with gloomy looks.

Ji Hao's order was clear. If Yuan Li tried to do anything unwanted, or showed any sign of escaping, these Maguspriests could kill him immediately. These few Maguspriests were masters of magic spells. They had implanted lethal magics inside Yuan Li's body, which could be triggered with a single thought of any of them.

Yuan Li sat on the ground weakly, looking around sulkily.

Those surrounding barracks had no attraction to him. Soon, he put all of his attention on the Pan Gu bell. He didn't know about the bell, but the prehistorical sense of power coming from it attracted him.

"Great treasure, truly great treasure. Even my father, ah, even that old monkey doesn't have such great treasures!" Yuan Li fixed his eyes on the bell and murmured to himself, "I'm defeated, I admit it. Following his lead, reasonably...With the current situation, the winner is not determined yet...I will follow Marquis Yao, and good for me, I can probably witness the death of those damnable brothers of mine!"

Loud footsteps came. Heng Xing walked over with a large booze vat carried in his hand. Pouring some booze into his mouth, he looked at Yuan Li from the corners of his eyes and sneered, "What? You have hateful brothers too? Hehe, do you know my only condition for following Marquis Yao's lead? He has to take out all my brothers. Do you want me to forward the same condition to Marquis Yao for you?"

Yuan Li paused, proudly turned around, and snorted coldly.

Heng Xing carelessly laughed, sat next to Yuan Li, and thrust the booze vat into his hands as he said, "I saw you beaten up by Marquis Yao and obediently follow him. To be honest, I am thrilled! Finally, someone can keep me company. Haha, let's see who will be the next unlucky one!"

Yuan Li's face as dark as hell. He snorted unpleasantly, then picked up the booze vat and filled his stomach with the booze.

"Oi!" Heng Xing abruptly raised his elbow and heavily struck on Yuan Li's rib, intentionally or not, and nearly sent him flying away. Yuan Li's face twisted in pain, and he couldn't even catch his breath for a while. "Why on earth did you try to snatch the dragon blood pill? Hehe, Marquis Yao promised me that when this war is over, I'll get a share of the dragon blood pill!" chuckled Heng Xing.

Yuan Li paused slightly, then suddenly leaped up, pointed at the altar, and screamed, "Go tell Marquis Yao that if he sees a silver flood dragon, don't harm a scale of hers! Otherwise, I'd rather kill myself than follow his lead!"

"Eh?!" Heng Xing widely opened his mouth in shock. Staring at Yuan Li with a complicated look, he murmured, "For a woman? You're a water monkey, but how come you fell in love with a flood dragon? What a low taste! My dream is marrying a pure-blood dragon girl! But you, you had your eyes on a flood dragon."

From all directions, millions of water-kind spirit creatures crazily rushed to the city on the water.

Ji Hao boosted up his power. Under his control, a strong gale sent the aroma of the Dragon Blood Drunk pill further away, attracting more and more water-kind spirit creatures.

Enormous water-kind spirit creatures roared ferociously and raised sky-high waves, that smashed to the city. Countless water-kind creatures screamed shrilly, and launched the strongest attacks to the city by risking their lives. Blood and shredded corpses covered the water surface, only to be swirled away by the

gale and waves.

Thousands of over ten miles long water boas slowly moved underwater. Their cold and emotionless, golden eyes were fixed on the city. The leader of these boas was a six-meter-long golden boa, who had his upper body transformed into a human shape as a pretty handsome young man, with a cold, dark look.

The young man gently wagged his boa tail, laughed in a vicious tone, and said with crossed his arms over his chest, "Snow, we don’t know if Yuan Li is still alive. Those human beings have set traps so obviously. Yet, he stupidly rushed in."

Flipping his nine-colored long hair, the young man swiftly moved to a, meters long silver flood dragon, lovingly looked at her and said with a gentle voice, "That magic pill, I don’t know what it is, but I can feel it too. It’s highly beneficial to our kind, especially us, as boas and flood dragons."

"As long as you promise to not talk to Yuan Li again, and be with nobody else but me, I will go get that pill...And, you can have thirty percent!" The young man drummed his own chest and continued confidently, "See, how nice am I to you? Even for such a treasure, I am willing to share thirty percent with you!"

The silver flood dragon was less than three meters long, yet was stunningly beautiful. Her silver scales were covered in natural patterns, while her tiny pair of horns were actually translucent. The pair of light blue horns sparkled with a cold light, flowing down through her smooth, shiny silver scales, which made her look as beautiful as a dream.

Ordinary flood dragons had three claws, but this flood dragon had five, just like pure-blood dragons.

Pure-blood dragons’ horns were like deer horns, while this flood dragon’s horns were sharp. Except for that, this small silver flood dragon was just like a pure-blood, noble dragon. The sense of power released from her body was especially strong, elegant,

prehistorical and respectable.

Hearing the young man, the flood dragon snorted coldly, then responded with a silvery voice, "Xiang Liu Junior, you are stingy. Yuan Li promised to give me that entire treasure, while you only want to give me thirty percent! You're just like that old Xiang Liu, stingy, miserly, snaky..."

While yelling, the silver flood split the water and dashed to the city like a bolt of lightning, leaving a faint stream of light behind.

"I don't want to be with you. Don't you ever come to me again! I'm going to find Yuan Li. What is that little monkey doing?" The silver flood dragon called Snow swam away angrily, leaving Xiang Liu Junior behind, paused with a dark face.

After a long while, Xiang Liu Junior abruptly cursed out, "Yuan Li, you bloody monkey! Ever since we were little, you wanted everything I had...Back then, I couldn't win...But, how can I now lose to a girl?"

"You two, go and find a chance to kill Yuan Li!" Turning around, Xiang Liu Junior yelled to his people.

Two hundred-miles-long, dark, poisonous boas squirmed their bodies and gasped deeply. They slowly transformed into two fifteen-meters tall strong men, with skins thickly covered in dark scale-shaped patterns. Treading on turbid waves, these two men roared loud, marching to the city.

Xiang Liu Junior curled his tail up, pondered for a short while, then waved his hand forward.

"We're helping them...Shrink your bodies. Look at your enormous tails, are you trying to allow those human beings to shoot you into sifters more conveniently?"

Behind him, thousands of enormous boas let out their fork tongues and hissed to respond. Their giant bodies twisted and quickly shrunk to tens of meters long. Following Xiang Liu Junior,

this group of boas slowly approached the city.

Chapter 1117: Being Captured

The vast water was dark. The heavy rain stirred up waves of ripples on the water surface.

Man Man and Shaosi still squatted on the head of a spirit turtle, shooting surrounding water-kind spirit creatures with crossbows.

Millions of water-kind spirit creatures soaked in water had all their attentions drawn by the dragon blood pill. They ignored the attacks launched by human warriors from forts and watchtowers on those giant turtles' heads, surged to the city with all their strengths, even though that might cost their lives.

From time to time, those starry void spirit turtles roared deeply and rumblingly, raised their tremendous feet, and stomped back down. They vibrated the earth and flattened all water-kind creatures around them. Occasionally, these turtles would pick some 'seafood' that suited their tastes, put in their mouths and chew. Every time that happened, torrents of blood would gush down from these turtles' mouths.

Thunderous roars could be heard. In front of Man Man and Shaosi, a large area of water suddenly rose.

A miles wide horseshoe crab split the wave, treading on the water surface. Under his belly, hundreds of tiny claws had been waving, while his ten-miles-long, sharp and thorn-like tail swung swiftly across the air, coming down towards their heads, even bringing up a fierce gale.

A thunderbolt descended from the sky and struck on the head of this powerful spirit creature. Electric bolts sizzled on his thick shell. Along with those sizzling electric bolts, the spirit creature's tail thorn struck on a spirit turtle's long neck and generated a loud boom. Following the boom, the over ten-miles long tail thorn broke entirely. The horseshoe crab screamed in pain, but not even a scratch was left on the turtle's neck.

"Eh? I don’t know what Ji Hao did, but this magic screen is indeed strong!" Standing on the turtle’s head, Man Man picked up her Taotie tooth and swung it in the air. Immediately, tens of silver chains darted out and penetrated the bodies of hundreds of water-kind spirit creatures.

Man Man then put forth her mighty strength through her tender arms. The Taotie tooth vibrated intensely and tore all those water-kind spirit creatures apart, then threw them back into the water, along with a heavy rain of blood.

The horseshoe crab who had his tail thorn broken roared furiously out. Vivid blue blood flew out from his broken tail, emitting a cooling, refreshing aroma. Shaosi looked at the horseshoe crab, smiled and said, "Man Man, catch this big one. His blood is a perfect material for hemostatic medicines."

Man Man blinked her eyes. Next, she raised her arms and swung the Taotie teeth upward. The Taotie tooth immediately split up and turned into hundreds of arm-thick silver chains, which wove into a giant web and flew towards that horseshoe crab at lightning speed.

A deep dragon roar came from underwater. Followed by a sharp silver beam, Snow darted out of the water from beside the struggling horseshoe crab. Seeing the Taotie tooth web swishing down from the sky, she opened her mouth and released a cloud of blue, frigid mist.

The translucent cloud of cold mist bumped into the Taotie tooth, along with countless glistening ice crystals. The ice instantly froze the Taotie tooth. A bone-piercing cold power reached Man Man’s hands through the Taotie tooth, and within a blink of an eye, a thin layer of ice froze Man Man’s hands and the chain together.

"Is this an...Ice dragon?" Man Man shouted while her body began burning. A purple flame wrapped her entirely up, which quickly melted the ice on her hands, generating hot steam.

Man Man curiously looked at Snow. This small flood dragon was breathtakingly beautiful, and even made Man Man's eyes shone. "Five claws, dragon scales, such a strong cold power...But, your horns...Can flood dragons have five claws?" murmured Man Man.

Snow stared at Man Man fiercely with her watery eyes. She lowered her head and glanced at that struggling horseshoe crab, then flipped her faintly glowing tail, sending tens of sizzling frigid lightning bolts to Man Man and Shaosi.

"So rude!" Yemo Shanye angrily looked at Snow. She understood now that the flood dragon was avenging for the horseshoe crab. "But he attacked us first! We did nothing! Do you think you can defeat so many of us?" Yemo Shanye raised her head. Her erect eye suddenly opened and sent out a scary sphere of dark light. All of a sudden, all frigid lightning bolts flashed across the air and darted into the dark whirlpool, deep inside Yemo Shanye's erect eye.

The power of those cold lightning bolts was devoured and transformed. Yemo Shanye raised her right forefinger and gently drew an arc in the air. Following her move, a dark lightning bolt silently tore apart the sky, striking at Snow like Death's scythe.

Snow popped out her eyes once again. She sensed the terrifying power coming along the dark lightning bolt. That dark lightning bolt was not only a summation of the series of cold lightning bolts she released just now, it also had an unstoppable power that seemed to destroy everything it touched.

That was a dark power which existed for nothing but destroying. On sensing that dark power contained in the dark lightning, Snow had am impulsion to smash her own head on the horseshoe crab's back down below. That dark lightning bolt would actually make living creatures want to die.

"Monster!" Snow cursed clearly, "A non-humankind monster... Have you human beings degenerated enough to collude with the non-humankind?"

Following Snow's voice, tens of meters thick water walls suddenly rose from the water surface thunderously, while foams rolled on top of those water walls. Snow opened her mouth and let out a strong wave of cold power, freezing all water walls instantly.

Those ice walls were thickly covered in dragon-scale-shaped patterns, glowing brightly in the air. Yemo Shanye's dark lightning bolt shattered thirty-nine ice walls in a row, and eventually faded on the fortieth ice wall!

Man Man rested her hands on her hips and angrily yelled at Snow, "Who is a non-humankind monster? Yemo Shanye's our friend! She's not the same as those awful monsters...Ah! Run!"

Everyone else was confused. 'Run?' Who did Man Man tell to run?

Shaosi raised her hands and pushed out, sending out waves of space ripples. She created a small space which separated Man Man, Yemo Shanye, and herself from the outside world. Snow was left outside, looking at Man Man with a slight confusion, but chuckled and said, "Don't you try to fool me. I've played enough tricks like this when I was three-hundred-year old..."

A heavily armored, over fifteen-meter-tall Jia Clan warrior silently showed up from behind Snow. The Jia Clan warrior was surrounded in a strong dark power, which was dark enough to destroy the world. He reached out his left hand and grabbed Snow. Before she could even struggle, the Jia Clan warrior flicked his finger on the back of her head and knocked her out.

"This is not an ordinary flood dragon, this is an ancient Chi! Female...Many noble lords will love this kind of a slave, and they will definitely give a sweet price for her!" The Jia Clan warrior smirked evilly, then laughed out loudly triumphantly. "Those idiots, what good can they find out there? True valuable things are all in here!"

Yemo Shanye stared at this strong Jia Clan warrior in shock, who

obviously came from the Dark Sun. She trembled slightly, then decisively took a step forward, pointed at that warrior, and yelled, "With the name of the Dark Sun, I command you to put her down!"

The Jia Clan warrior took a complicated glance at Yemo Shanye, then politely bowed to her and disappeared all of a sudden with Snow.

Chapter 1118: Face the Queen

Once the Jia Clan warrior took Snow away, a clear stream of light came over from the city. Ji Hao carried Yuan Li in his hand and came to Man Man and Shaosi. Looking at where the Jia Clan warrior disappeared, Ji Hao's face was badly darkened.

Yuan Li popped out his eyes in both shock and fury. His ape face was twisted awfully while he screamed hysterically, thudding his fists heavily on Ji Hao's body. "Snow is kidnaped! If anything happens to her, I will kill you all!"

Ji Hao grabbed Yuan Li's neck with his left hand while threw a punch straight to his belly with the right hand, making his eyes bulge from his eye sockets and blood spurt out from his mouth corners. For quite a while, Yuan Li couldn't move, and could neither say a word.

Throwing Yuan Li to the ground, Ji Hao cast the 'freeze' magic to him for seven to eight times, then lowered his head, looked at him, and sneered, "This is a battlefield, little monkey. You came to a battlefield, so you should be preparing for being killed, chopped and captured alive."

Looking at Yuan Li, who was disabled from moving, Ji Hao continued in that cold voice of his, "I and those non-humankind beings, we're not your father, and we don't have the responsibility to protect the girl you like for you...Even your real father won't do that. Do you think that Wuzhi Qi would start a fight for you only because of a young flood dragon?"

Yuan Li's face had been changing color. He wanted to say something, but he couldn't even move his tongue.

From the front, a water column rose into the sky. Treading on the water column, Xiang Liu Junior rushed out of the water, with a bright grin on his face and a spear in his hands. Pointing at Yuan Li, he laughed out loud, "Yuan Li, you pathetic monkey! Snow

worried about you, so she left the troop and got herself captured by the non-humankind! You are such a loser! Do you think you deserve that lovely girl?"

Xiang Liu Junior flicked his long boa tail. Following his move, a fierce thunderbolt descended from the sky and struck a group of lower-grade water-kind creatures which exploded, killing thousands; the explosion range covered miles of area.

"I'm not like you, loser. I'm going to rescue Snow myself! I will let her know that I, Xiang Liu Junior, is a real man, and only I am good enough for her!" Xiang Liu Junior threw a disgusted glance at Yuan li, then curled up his long tail and continued proudly, "Don't you think it would look too strange if a monkey and a flood dragon got together?"

Xiang Liu Junior swished his long tail across the air, showing it off. Then, with that proud look of his, he said, "No matter how you look at us, I, Xiang Liu Junior and Snow, the beautiful flood dragon, will make a lovely couple, won't we?"

Laughing aloud, Xiang Liu Junior raised a giant wave and roared away, chasing the Jia Clan warrior into the darkness. While mounting on the wave and rushing wildly, he let out his fork tongue, shaking his head, trying to grasp the smell of Snow in the air.

Yuan Li was so anxious that even his eyeballs had turned red, but he couldn't move at all.

Ji Hao lowered his head and said blandly, "Ah, so you have a rival in love, don't you?" Clicking his tongue, Ji Hao continued, "A monkey with a flood dragon held in his arms would indeed look strange, still much better than a Xiang Liu snake, who is soft, slippery. Monkeys look like our human beings at least."

Conveniently deactivating the 'freeze' magic for Yuan Li, Ji Hao carried on with a deep voice, "If you are willing to swear to..."

Before Ji Hao finished, Yuan Li bit his finger broken, drew a twisted spell symbol in the air with his spirit blood, then said, "I swear with my soul that as long as you can save Snow, I, Yuan Li, and all warriors under my command, will follow marquis Yao, always be loyal to him, and follow every word he says, from this moment on! If I ever betray Marquis Yao, my soul will perish, my body will die, and I will never have another chance to live again!"

A beam of blood-red light flashed across the spell symbol and drilled into Yuan Li's forehead, while another beam of blood-red light flew to Ji Hao.

Ji Hao grasped the beam and extended his strong spirit power in it. It was indeed a powerful vow, effective only on spirit creatures. Ji Hao left a seal in the blood-red beam, then put it away.

"Man Man, Shaosi, you go back to the city. This place is not safe enough!" Ji Hao said to Man Man and Shaosi, then grabbed Yuan Li, transformed into a clear beam of light, and rose into the sky while murmuring, "So strange. Why would a Jia Clan warrior show up in this place? They're getting involved in the battle between the water-kind and us... for what?"

Yemo Shanye opened her mouth. She wanted to tell Ji Hao that a secret Dark sun magic allowed Dark Sun people to absorb the spirit blood of powerful spirit creatures to accelerate their own cultivations. But before she could say a word, Ji Hao had already darted away with Yuan Li.

Shaosi took Man Man's hand, then put another hand on Yemo Shanye's shoulder, and flashed across the air, heading straight back to the city. Once they left, giant waves roared in the front, from which, tens of mountain-sized spirit lobsters wielded their enormous pincers and popped out. They swung their long and heavy pincers, then struck on starry void spirit turtles bodies, causing muffled booms.

Three spirit turtles shook their bodies. They were protected by

the Pan Gu Defense magic formation, and weren't harmed. However, they were forced backward by the strong force delivered by those giant lobster pincers, and raised large waves around them.

The strongest ones among the water-kind army could no longer resist the aroma of the dragon blood pill, and had made their moves.

With Yuan Li carried in his hand, Ji Hao flashed across the air and surpassed Xiang Liu Junior right away, leaving him far behind. That Jia Clan warrior was powerful; he flew at lightning speed, yet, Ji Hao found him.

Ji Hao opened his erect eye and released a clear stream of light which locked on the Jia Clan warrior's sturdy body. The golden bridge was fully activated, allowing Ji Hao to flash again across the air and reach behind the Jia Clan warrior.

"Hand her over!" Ji Hao dropped Yuan Li and let him tread on a cloud. Meanwhile, Ji Hao raised his two fists and punched the Jia Clan warrior's back along with a muffled swishing noise. Ji Hao put forth all of his strength for this strike. He did not only use all of his physical strength, but he also activated the fifth turn of the cultivation method with nine turns, lit up all inner spirit stars inside his body and generated an overwhelming power. He even grew over three meters tall suddenly.

His fists roared down like shooting stars and cracked the space.

The Jia Clan warrior laughed. He abruptly turned around and conveniently thrust Snow forward as he said, "Go ahead, kill her!"

Both Snow and Yuan Li screamed shrilly out; especially Yuan Li, he almost blacked out.

Ji Hao let out a muffled hum. Hurriedly, he opened his palms and turned that violent force into a soft, restrained sword intent. His ten fingers sparkled with sharp sword light, flashed across the sky

and tore the air, avoiding Snow as they reached the Jia Clan warrior's vital body parts.

A dark light screen descended from the air and split the sky into two, like a black wall.

Ji Hao's sword power struck fiercely on the light screen, causing a long-lasting series of sizzling noise. Ten large slashes were left on the light screen, but the Jia Clan warrior had a chance to breathe. With Snow, the Jia Clan warrior swiftly stepped back for over ten miles.

Yemo Luoye descended slowly from the sky and trod on a sphere of dark mist. Yemo Shayi followed closely behind her, with his right hand rested on the hilt of his sword.

"Do you want this young flood dragon back? Hehe, Marquis Yao Ji Hao, you kidnapped my little sister. Her name is Yemo Shanye. Do you think that you should also give her back to me?"

Chapter 1119: A Sun and Moon Strike

Kidnap?

Ji Hao looked at Yemo Luoye in confusion. "Why did you say that? Yemo Shanye ran away from home to escape an arranged marriage, didn't she? I took her in, and that is the only thing I've done to her...I was doing something good. She was like a poor kitty on the street, with no one to depend on. No one cared about her at all, so I kindly took her in."

Yemo Luoye and Yemo Shayi's face both turned extremely dark.

'With no one to depend on? No one cares about her at all?' Why were Ji Hao's words so unpleasant to hear?

"If Yemo Shanye wants to leave Yao Mountain territory, she can leave at any time!" Ji Hao smiled warmly, "But she told me that she has an evil sister. So..."

"Shut up!" Yemo Luoye shouted while her eyes shone wth a dark light. From around her, rapidly flowing streams of dark smoke emerged, swishing around her like a tornado. What surprised Ji Hao more were fist-sized dark roses which slowly bloomed in the smoke.

Whatever Yemo Luoye was doing, and whether it was powerful or not, Ji Hao would like to give her full marks for merely this beautiful sound-light effect.

"You're ashamed to anger, aren't you?" Ji Hao grinned, "I haven't talked too much to her, but I can tell that she has a pure heart. She is naturally kind, sensitive to everyone and everything...It seems that... you don't love her at all."

Yemo Luoye's face turned darker and darker. She stared straight at Ji Hao and breathed loudly. Ji Hao's words were like a dagger, tearing apart some secret wounds deep inside his heart. The wounds were bleeding, bringing her a twitching pain. Indeed,

Yemo Luoye had some hidden evil intentions against Yemo Shanye. But, she always believed that except for Yemo Shayi and herself, no one else knew about those evil intentions she had.

"Do you want this little girl back?" Yemo Luoye quickly switched the topic and tried to take back the power of initiative.

She pointed at Snow, who was grabbed in the Jia Clan warrior's hand over ten miles away. Abruptly, Yemo Luoye's dark face turned pink and glowing. A gale roared across and fluttered her ankle-long, shiny hair, added with her long silk dress and those hovering blooming dark roses. At this very moment, Yemo Luoye burst with a stunning beauty, which made Yuan Li swallow saliva.

"Eh...Little monkey, your girlfriend is right over there. You haven't saved her yet, but are you already thinking about someone else?" Ji Hao ignored Yemo Luoye. Instead, he naughtily joked at Yuan Li.

Yuan Li squeezed an embarrassed smile out of his face, which was covered in long silver fur. He turned his eyes away from Yemo Luoye, but his ape face was blushed immediately. Even though that face was covered in fur, it still blushed quite obviously.

Yemo Luoye's smile faded right away. She clenched her fists and gritted her teeth, staring at Ji Hao in anger.

What did Ji Hao say...This bloody mix-blood monkey, how on earth could this ugly creature think about Yemo Luoye? Who did Ji Hao think she was? She was an Emperor in power, one of the noblest twelve among the entire Yu Dynasty. But what was Yuan Li?

"Marquis Yao...Ji Hao!" said Yemo Luoye through her gritted teeth. While sneering, she continued, "Do you want this little girl or not? One more useless word and I'll pull off her head!"

The last half of that sentence was said to the Jia Clan warrior.

That Jia Clan warrior laughed viciously, then raised two fingers

and pinched Snow’s head. He nodded to Ji Hao and laughed, "Kid, with a slight move of my fingers, ‘pop’, this pretty girl’ s head would be gone!"

Yuan Li trembled instantly and leaped up from the cloud he trod on.

"No!" screamed Yuan Li.

Yuan Li leaped straight to hundreds of meters away, seeming about to attack Yemo Luoye.

Yemo Luoye stayed motionless, while Yemo Shayi suddenly made a step forward, raised his left hand, and slapped down at Yuan Li’s chest while leaving a stream of black smoke in the air. Followed by a muffled bang, Yemo Shayi’s palm heavily landed on Yuan Li’s chest. Yuan Li screamed and let out a sharp stream of blood, then flashed away. A dried ‘shell’ of his fell off from his body, while his real body darted back to Ji Hao along with a silver beam, tremblingly.

Before Yuan Li could say anything, his look changed once again. Roaring resonantly, his long silver fur shone with a blinding silver light. His half-foot long silver fur straightened up. What came next was a thunderous boom. Yuan Li’s silver fur shattered one after another, while a silver beam of light dazzled out from his eyes, ears, nose and mouth, reaching nearly a hundred meters away and transformed into Yuan Li’s body.

"Impressive!" Blood flowed out from Yuan Li’s mouth, ears and nostrils as he stared at Yemo Shayi with a lingering fear and said, "You killed me twice in a row!"

"Not bad!" Yemo Shayi threw a slow glance at Yuan Li and responded, "You survived a palm strike of mine...You are surprisingly strong!"

Yuan Li blinked his eyes, glancing at Ji Hao over and over again. That palm strike launched by Yemo Shayi contained an

indescribable, terrifying power. When Yuan Li was hit by Yemo Shayi's palm, he felt that his soul was suddenly sealed in an airproof coffin, and countless fierce ghosts had been approaching him, trying to tear his soul into a thousand bits.

Yuan Li had been cultivating himself with the extremely negative power, which allowed him to effectively absorb all kinds of negative energy. Otherwise, he would have sunken into a despairing darkness already, forever and ever.

Yemo Shayi was way too powerful. Yuan Li understood that he could never defeat him on his own. Therefore, he now planted his hope on Ji Hao. He blinked his eyes and looked pitiably at Ji Hao, seeming to even rush up and hug his lap.

Glancing at Yuan Li, Ji Hao clapped his hands, smilingly looked at Yemo Luoye, and said, "Alright, no more small talk. Name your price. I want the little flood dragon. What should I do so you can release her?"

Pausing slightly, Ji Hao's voice suddenly turned cold as he continued, "Say something honest and doable. If you dare to demand an exorbitant price...I will walk right away. You can keep the little flood dragon or kill her. Someone will surely take revenge for her!"

As he sneered, Ji Hao pointed at Yuan Li and said, "By the way, his father is Wuzhi Qi. The flood is rampant now, and the water-kind is unstoppable. You Dark Sun people don't want to offend the water-kind for nothing, do you?"

Yemo Luoye narrowed her eyes and looked at Yuan Li a bit surprisedly. "Is Wuzhi Qi truly your father? A war is going on between the humankind and the water-kind...Why are you with human beings?" asked Yemo Luoye, "But indeed, at this time, I don't want to offend anyone like Wuzhi Qi, that old monster."

Clapping her hands gently, Yemo Luoye smiled rather sweetly. She even looked radiant with a smile when looking at Ji Hao. "So,

what about this? Marquis Yao Ji Hao, this is Yemo Shayi, an old slave of mine. If you can take a strike of his without dying, I will release this little girl. Who do you think?"

While chuckling, Yemo Luoye continued with a gentle, soft tone, "Yemo Shayi is at the stage of Sun and Moon. As for the Sun and Moon stage, it roughly equals your level of Supreme Magus. Both Sun and Moon stage beings and your Supreme Magi can control the power of the natural law, more or less."

"You take a strike of his, then you can take the little girl and leave...Do you dare to do that?"

Chapter 1120: Strict Rules

Take a Supreme-level strike for the girl Yuan Li loved?

Ji Hao looked at Yemo Luoye in a complicated way, while silently counting his defensive treasures.

As for Yuan Li, he stared at Ji Hao with sparkling watery eyes, just like an abandoned puppy. At this moment, once Ji Hao agreed to take the challenge, Yuan Li believed that he could serve Ji Hao like a slave for the rest of his life. From time to time, he quickly turned around, glanced at Snow, who was grabbed in the Jia Clan warrior's hand. Every time he looked at her, his ape face would show a stronger bitterness.

Snow was squished in the Jia Clan warrior's hand and couldn't talk. She had also been pitiably looking at Yuan Li. Her sky-blue eyes were filled with tears, which were dripping down constantly. Every thumb-sized drops of tear would immediately become a blue ice bead once after it left Snow's eyes, and the Jia Clan warrior carefully collected all tear beads with a jade bottle.

The tears of ancient Chi contained pure and strong cold power, along with magical and thriving life-force. To some severely wounded, dying living creatures, this tear could be a life-saving miracle cure.

Within a short span of time, the Jia Clan warrior collected hundred of tear beads, that put a large grin on his face. He couldn't even close his mouth from that grin.

"Yuan Li, give me a reason. Why will I confront a Supreme-level powerful being for saving this silly little flood dragon?" Ji Hao turned around, looked at Yuan Li, and asked seriously.

Yuan Li took a deep breath. His look turned especially serious.

"I am Wuzhi Qi's son, but my Amma is a human Maguspriest. When I was little, I didn't have the great strength that some of my

brothers had. They were mothered by strong spirit creatures after all. Until I was a hundred years old, my brothers and sisters bullied me every single day. Only Snow was nice to me, and always cured me with her tears."

"I can’t live without Snow…If she dies, I die. If you can kindly save her, you will own my life! I will serve you until the end of this life; I will also serve you in my next life, if I have one!"

Ji Hao saw determinedness in Yuan Li’s eyes.

"You were bullied by your brothers and sisters until you were a hundred years old…What happened after that?"

Yuan Li raised his head, proudly looked at Ji Hao, and said, "When I turned a hundred years old, I discovered the great extremely negative power. Although this type of natural power is not easy to find in this world, more or less, I can gather some to strengthen my body and soul. After my hundredth birthday, I was able to beat up every single one of my brothers and sisters, and from then on, I could bully them as much as I liked."

"Extremely negative power, hah!" Ji Hao grinningly looked at Yuan Li, said, "Good, good, good!"

Waving his broad sleeve, Ji Hao took two steps forward, nodded to Yemo Shayi, and said, "Old man, come on, I can take a strike from you and it’s no big deal. Do it now, then release the little girl!"

Yemo Shayi’s face turned dark. A dense shadow emerged from around him; it seemed that he had merged himself with the darkness. The sense of power released from his body faded, and even ceased to exist. But in the meanwhile, that power from him seemed to transform into an invisible whirlpool, speedily devouring the surrounding dark power.

"Slow down!" Yemo Shayi prepared to launch the strike, but Yemo Luoye abruptly stopped him, "We haven’t set down the

rules. What's the rush?"

"What rules?!" Yuan Li leaped straight up and pointed at Yemo Luoye, seeming about to curse out.

Ji Hao straightened his forefinger and stopped Yuan Li from meaninglessly cursing, then looked at Yemo Luoye and asked, "What rules?"

Yemo Luoye smilingly looked at Ji Hao and turned around her palm. A black transparent crystal ball slowly emerged upon her palm, which released a light screen and showed the images of Ji Hao fighting against a few senior ministers under Gong Gong's command, staying perfectly moveless under the protection of the Pan Gu bell.

"You have a weapon, which is called a natural supreme treasure in this world, but to our Yu Clan people, it's an 'eternal divine weapon'. An eternal-level weapon can only be harmed by an eternal-level power."

Yemo Luoye continued in a soft voice, "Higher than the stage of Sun and Moon is the stage Beyond Redemption, and then the stage of Immortality. The stage of Eternality comes after the stage of Immortality. I don't think Yemo Shayi can break an eternal divine weapon and truly harm you."

Ji Hao's face twitched. Looking at Yemo Luoye, he smiled coldly, and responded, "So?"

Yemo Luoye kept that relaxed smile on her face. Conveniently, she picked up a dark rose from the air, put it to under her nose, sniffed and said, "So, no defensive treasures. You can only take this strike from Yemo Shayi with your body."

A crafty and taunting look flashed across Yemo Luoye's eyes, as her erect eye slowly opened. Staring at Ji Hao with all three eyes, she continued word by word, "For you human warriors, the higher level you reached, the stronger bodies you have. I'd like to know

how strong is your body."

Yemo Luoye's face was now filled with a strong intent of killing. Looking at that face, Ji Hao gave a fake grin, and said, "Well, if you'd like to find out how strong I am, hehe..."

Yemo Luoye quickly interrupted Ji Hao's joke and said, "If you dare to say anything that I don't want to hear, I will order my warrior to pull that little flood-dragon's head down from her neck...She has a beautiful head. I can stuff it and put it in my bedroom. I think it will become a pretty nice collection."

Ji Hao stopped talking. He crossed his arms over his chest, narrowed his eyes, and looked at Yemo Luoye, then glanced at Yemo Shayi, who seemed to be well-prepared. Finally, he said, "It doesn't seem cost-effective to me. After all, I get nothing in return but this little flood dragon by taking a strike of a supreme-level powerful being with my bare body...How about this, you let this old man give me three strikes in a row, and promise me something more?"

Yemo Luoye and Yemo Shayi both paused, while Yuan Li was dumbfounded aside.

How confident was he? Or, how silly and daring was he to say something like that? Surviving one strike of Yemo Shayi would already be a miracle, but Ji Hao asked for three?

Yemo Luoye, Yemo Shayi and Yuan Li released their spirit power simultaneously and scanned across Ji Hao's body. It was Ji Hao indeed. The sense of power released from him belonged to a Divine Magus. He had grown inner spirit stars in his body, but he hadn't drawn a natural star into his body, which meant he was still a Divine Magus.

The difference between a Divine Magus and a Supreme Magus was as huge as the difference between an infant and a Divine Magus.

Ji Hao could already be counted as fearless for agreeing to take one strike from Yemo Shayi, but he now asked for a raise!

"What do you want?" Yemo Luoye chuckled. Her eyes curved like a pair of crescents. "No matter what you want, as long as you can take three strikes from Yemo Shayi with your bare body, I will give it to you!" She said.

Ji Hao raised his forefinger and said, "First, I want a hundred thousand elite Dark Sun warriors, including ten Battle Kings, ten-thousand high-level warriors."

Yemo luoye's face twitched intensely. But, glancing at Yemo Shayi, she chuckled again, said, "Alright!"

She honestly didn't believe that Ji Hao could survive.

Ji Hao straightened his middle finger and continued, "Second, I want three-thousand, three-thousand-meters-tall Dark Sun Divine Towers, within three days."

Without hesitating, Yemo Luoye nodded.

Ji Hao straightened his ring finger and carried on, "Third, if I survive three strikes from this old man, you shall give this useless old man to me to serve as a guard of mine. He'll be useless to you anyway, even if you keep him."

Once Ji Hao finished the sentence, Yemo Luoye's pretty face blushed in rage. Her eyeballs nearly popped out of her eye sockets.

Chapter 1121: Make The Bet

Yemo Shayi moved. He waved his finger and released a glistening, sharp and dark air stream which darted out silently, wriggling fiercely towards Ji Hao's waist like a snake.

Ji Hao laughed out loud. Fully activating the Taiji cloak, he thought that he had to teach Yemo Luoye and Yemo Shayi a lesson.

The Taiji cloak released a wave of clear, sparkling water mist. Lotus-petal-shaped flakes of light swirled out of Ji Hao's body and bloomed in the air like a giant lotus. Around this three-thousand-meters-wide lotus, two hazy streams of light hovered like a pair of fishes, end-to-end, disturbing the natural powers in this area.

The dark airstream released by Yemo Shayi bumped on the spreading, petal-like clear light. The light was torn apart, yet more streams of clear light grew out ceaselessly. The dark airstream melted gradually in the clear light, disappearing hundreds of meters away from Ji Hao.

"This!" Yemo Shayi paused in shock.

He had only used a slight little bit of his power, but after all, that was strike launched by a Sun and Moon stage powerful being, which contained the devouring and destroying power that originated from the great Dark Sun. Devouring and destroying, the top-grade, strongest types of power in the original world of Yu Clan... Even the great Dao of time and space couldn't withstand these two types of power.

Undoubtedly, Ji Hao hadn't reached the stage of Sun and Moon. Just now, the power vibration released from his body was still at the level of Divine Magus, which equaled the stage of Void in the Yu Clan's power system.

The strike launched by Yemo Shayi contained the power of natural laws, yet, it was neutralized. The only explanation for this

was that Ji Hao's cloak was way too powerful. The cloak was definitely an eternal-level divine weapon. Even in the original world of Yu Clan people, an eternal-level divine weapon was good enough to serve as the most precious treasure of a top-grade family, and only core members of the family had the chance to keep that treasure.

Yemo Shayi gritted his teeth and looked at Yemo Luoye.

Just now, he angrily launched a strike, because Ji Hao was actually daring enough to cast greedy eyes on him. Ji Hao saw him as a wager! He was a Sun and Moon stage powerful being, and for people at his level, even back in their original world, they were seen as decent people from the upper class.

Nominally, Yemo Shayi was Yemo Luoye's slave, but this was only for avoiding the supervisory control that came from the Holy Realm back in their original world. He had served Yemo Family for tens of thousands of years; in this family, he was as important as those core elders.

But Ji Hao saw him as a wager, so how could he not be furious about that?

However, witnessing the magical power of Ji Hao's Taiji cloak, Yemo Shayi was tempted. It was just like back then when he was young, and he looked into the window of the bathroom of a female eldership in Yemo Family for the very first time, and saw the body of a woman. He sensed the same, uncontrollable impulsion as he had sensed at that time.

He wanted the Taiji cloak so much, at all costs. He believed that with his power and that cloak, he would be able to defeat all elders from the other eleven families in power.

"I also have a nice sword!" Ji Hao pulled out the Taiji divine sword and conveniently swung towards Yemo Shayi.

Yemo Shayi raised a dragon-skull-like shield. Neither he nor Ji

Hao cast any magic; instead, the sword and the shield clanged not too heavily.

Puff! The shield was cut into two like a piece of pork cut by a sharp knife.

The dragon-skull shield was cut open by Ji Hao’s sword, and the cutting edge was perfectly smooth, like a mirror.

"This is a half-immortal-level shield made from the skull of the first devil dragon in the world, and ninety-eight types of rare materials, by Yemo Family ancestors." Yemo Shayi looked at Ji Hao’s Taiji divine sword passionately and said. Subconsciously, he patted his right hand on the hilt of his sword and continued, "I am good at using sword as well, and I especially fancy heavy swords that require two hands to hold, just like this one of yours."

"I also have a good mirror!" Ji Hao sent up a clear mist from his head. The Taiji Universe mirror quietly floated upon the mist. All of a sudden, a cold beam of light flashed across the mirror, dazzling onto Yemo Shayi.

Yemo Shayi burst with a resonant laugh while he threw a heavy punch to the light.

The light wrapped up Yemo Shayi’s fist. Yemo Shayi’s look changed immediately, as his fist had weirdly popped out from behind him from three inches away, and thudded violently on his back.

Following the muffled thud, Yemo Shayi punched his own dragon-skin tight armor into pieces. Countless dragon scales were shattered, while Yemo Shayi staggered two steps forwards, with his face turning pale and a thin stream of blood flowing out from his mouth corner.

"This mirror of mine has many functions, but I usually use it to send away all kinds of attacks." Ji Hao smilingly looked at Yemo Shayi and said, "Facing this mirror, all enemies have to be extra

careful when fighting against me, because every attack they launch may go to themselves."

Yemo Shayi’s eyes turned glowing red. With an extreme greediness, he stared at Ji Hao. Abruptly, he turned around and looked at Yemo Luoye, then nodded heavily and said, "If I can’t kill him with three strikes, I, a useless old man, will serve him."

Yemo Luoye had also been staring at Ji Hao passionately. She didn’t think that Ji Hao actually has so many enteral-level divine weapons. She had also noticed that the invincible Pan Gu bell wasn’t with Ji Hao. She clearly saw the bell had become the core of the Pan Gu Defense magic formation, and was protecting the entire city.

"Add that bell of yours, and I can accept all your conditions." Yemo Luoye’s voice had even changed a little, "But you can’t use any treasure to protect you. You have to take the three strikes from Yemo Shayi with your body, your very own strength."

"Yemo Shayi is not allowed to use any weapons or tools either. Same as me, he also has to launch the three strikes with his own power." Ji Hao instantly brought forward supplementary terms, "And, I have to increase the price... I have to! A Sun and Moon stage man is not worth four eternal-level divine weapons."

Yemo Luoye and Yemo Shayi reminded Ji Hao about the differences between the stage of Sun and Moon and the stage of Eternity, and Ji Hao had no reason to waste this information.

Yemo Luoye and Yemo Shayi glanced at each other, then remained silent for a while. Afterwards, Yemo Luoye responded, "But you have to remember, you take the bet because of that little flood dragon...Therefore, you can’t make us offer you things equally valuable as the four pieces of yours. It’s not possible."

"I’ll raise it. First, a hundred battle kings and thirty-thousand generals can be included in the hundred-thousand elite warriors. As for the rest seventy-thousand, they will all be high-grade ones."

"Second, in addition to the three-thousand Dark Sun divine towers, you will also get a hundred metal floating forts. You should know about the value of those forts."

"Third, if Yemo Shayi fails to kill you with three strikes, he will become your slave, permanently. He will make a great Dark Sun vow for that. Besides, all Yemo Shayi's families, including his five half-Sun-and-Moon stage sons, seventy-seven battle-king-level grandsons, two-thousand, five-hundred and seventy-two general-level family members, and all private troops, and slaves he had, will all become yours!"

Ji Hao and Yemo Luoye ran a detailed discussion. Soon, they finalized this vicious agreement perfectly, after which both gave their spirit blood and made an oath for it.

Chapter 1122: A Strike of Devouring

A dark floating mountain slowly descended from the sky. Tens of dark beams darted out from the mountain and drew a small-scale teleporting magic formation in midair.

Strong warriors walked out of the magic formation. Those were heavily armored Dark Sun warriors, with their eyes fixed on Ji Hao and Yuan Li in an unfriendly manner. But when these warriors turned to Yemo Luoye and Yemo Shayi, they all became incomparably respectful.

If Ji Hao survived three strikes from Yemo Shayi, these warriors would be lost to Ji Hao.

Yemo Luoye took her warriors to this hunting ground. Those water-kind creatures had been crazily attacking Ji Hao's city. To Yemo Luoye and her warriors, this was a great opportunity for them to hunt powerful water-kind spirit creatures, take the spirit blood and to nourish themselves. Tens of millions of Dark Sun warriors were now in this area. Surely, it was rather easy for Yemo Luoye to gather hundred-thousand warriors for the bet.

A while later, a group of elegant Yu Clan people in luxurious long robes walked out of the teleportation magic formation. Male, female, young ones, old ones, they politely bowed to Yemo Luoye and Yemo Shayi. These were Yemo Shayi's families. Same as those warriors, who arrived earlier, these Yu Clan people also came for the bet.

"A hundred floating forts and three-thousand Dark Sun divine towers will be sent to you in half a month at the latest." Yemo Luoye sat on a black throne and fiddled with a dark rose in her hands. She looked at Ji Hao and said blandly, "After all, we need time to ship those forts and towers to here from Liang Zhu City. You don't need to have any doubt, as we have much more in stock."

"I should have asked more!" Ji Hao grinned to Yemo Luoye, then handed the Taiji divine sword to Yuan Li.

Yuan Li held the sword with both arms and felt that even his body was softened. He was Wuzhi Qi's son indeed, but his mother was a human Maguspriest. Therefore, among Wuzhi Qi's countless children, Yuan Li wasn't valued too much. When did he ever touch a supreme treasure like this? And this treasure had now become a wager for saving Snow. For his request of saving Snow, Ji Hao was even going to take three strikes from a Supreme-level powerful being with his bare body, which was life-risking indeed.

Yuan Li trembled intensively. He gazed at Ji Hao's back and fell in a daze. Silently, he made a decision — If Ji Hao were killed by Yemo Shayi today, then, he would have one goal and one only for the rest of his life, grow strong, take revenge for Ji Hao, and slaughter every last member of the Dark Sun.

All Dark Sun warriors who knew about the bet, had now been greedily looking at the Taiji divine sword. They all knew how strong the dragon skull shield of Yemo Shayi was, but the Taiji divine sword easily cut the shield into two; that was a genuine divine sword!

Ji Hao took off his Taiji cloak, folded it neatly, and handed it to Yuan Li as well.

Afterward, Ji Hao gently pushed the fifteen-meters tall Taiji Universe mirror to Yuan Li, and let the mirror release a stream of clear light, shielding the latter.

Too many powerful non-humankind beings were on the scene, especially those battle kings, who could easily punch Yuan Li into a meat pie. Ji Hao didn't want any accident to happen to Yuan Li, as he had just sworn to be loyal to him.

Twisting his joints, Ji Hao took a few steps forward, nodded to Yemo Luoye and Yemo Shayi and said, "I'm ready, let's begin!"

Yemo Shayi gave a cold smile. Waves of shadow spread out from his body. Gradually he merged with the dark shadows. Yemo Luoye carefully looked at Ji Hao from up to toe. A while later, she abruptly pointed at Ji Hao's dragon-skin tight armor and laughed, "As we agreed, you can not use any defensive tool. This dragon-skin tight armor has a decent defensive power. I think you should take it off!"

Ji Hao's mouth corner twitched. This dragon-skin tight armor of his was indeed a nice piece, but its defensive power was merely as great as three heavy tower shields. Facing a powerful being like Yemo Shayi, this tight armor could even be counted as fragile.

Ji Hao did not wear this armor to protect himself. Instead, he wore it because the armor contained a faint dragon power that could cast away all kinds of poisonous bugs and the other annoying little things. Ji Hao had the Taiji cloak and the Pan Gu bell. Therefore, he had never been counting on the armor to protect him.

"Eh...What a woman!"

Ji Hao took off the armor and threw it to Yuan Li. He also took off his boots, pants, and socks. At last, nothing but a tight leather pair of shorts was left on Ji Hao's body. Stretching his limbs, he looked at Yemo Luoye and sneered, "Do you want me to take off this last piece too? I'm telling you, this treasure is called 'pre-world pure sun shorts'. It has an unimaginably great defensive power, and the reproduction of our humankind is counting on it! Do you want me to rip it off?"

Yemo Luoye showed the whites of his eyes and didn't respond.

All Dark Sun warriors made a step forward, attempting to teach a lesson to this rude human being who disrespected their emperor.

Yemo Shayi gave a deep roar and stopped them. "Enough! Ji Hao, are you ready? I admire your courage, but I still think that you're foolish! You can never survive this. I will give you some more time

to prepare, and this, is my respect for you."

Ji Hao smiled, then cast a complicated glance at Yemo Shayi, who had already merged completely with the darkness. Then, he took a long and deep breath.

Ji Hao's chest raised high. Following his long breath, all natural powers in an area ten-thousand miles in radius around him surged to him and transformed into strong gales, roaring into his body. A million inner spirit stars began shining inside Ji Hao's body. Meanwhile, a clear sphere of light which contained both the extremely positive power and the extremely negative power emerged in his body, lighting up every meridian, every acupoint, and every slight corner of his body.

The great power of his was boosted up, flowing in streams inside his body. Soon, the streams merged into torrents, and filled every inch of his body.

Following a series of creaking noise, Ji Hao grew taller and taller, and soon reached fifteen meters. He silently activated the fifth turn of the cultivation method with nine turns. His skin, muscles, and bones glowed simultaneously; his skin turned smooth and transparent, like jade. Through the transparent skin of his, his golden and shining internal organs and bones were clearly visible.

Ji Hao then let out a long breath. In his spiritual space, inside the great red sun, a silver silhouette and a golden silhouette merged simultaneously. Meanwhile, a magnificent sun power burst from the red sun, quickly merging with Ji Hao's meridians to help boosting his power.

Creak! Ji Hao grew three meters taller again.

His blood surged like fierce dragons, and his heart beat like a drum. Over and over again, his colorless Chaos blood flushed across every inch of his body. All of a sudden, Ji Hao sensed a wild power exploding from his body. He could no longer control his body. Roaring towards the sky, Ji Hao grew by another six meters!

In shock, Yemo Shayi watched Ji Hao’s body changing strangely. He gritted his teeth and burst with a bright growl, "Marquis Yao Ji Hao, for the first strike, I will be using thirty percent of my power. And I will use the power of devouring!"

In the air, a three-hundred-meters wide dark swirl emerged which swallowed Ji Hao up.

Chapter 1123: The Great Dao of Taiji

The surrounding area was all dark. Both the time and space had disappeared.

Ji Hao drifted in the world of darkness. From all directions, sharp strands of power had been dragging his body, pulling every muscle, every meridian, and each bone of his.

Those power strands were small, yet especially sharp. Ji Hao felt like being filled up by an army of ants, and each ant had gripped a tiny part of Ji Hao's body in its mouthpart. These ants were tearing his body together; they wanted to tear him into the tiniest pieces.

Every strand of power was thin and sharp, yet extremely strong.

Ji Hao felt like being eating by countless ants. However, every single one of these ants was as powerful as a peak-level Divine Magus. They bit on Ji Hao's body, shaking their heads hard, and crazily tearing him, cutting him, and attempting to crush and devour every slight bit of his spirit blood and life-force.

Ji Hao tightened his sturdy body, every muscle and tendon of his. He raised his head high, and roared out with a rumbling and hoarse voice, "Not enough! Not enough!"

His smooth, glowing, jade-like skin was tightened as well. Steel-bar-like blood veins bulged under his skin. Inside those veins, his blood was surging, causing thunder-like noises. The colorless Chaos blood which contained a tremendous power flew to every corner of Ji Hao's body. Gradually, thin steam rose from Ji Hao's skin.

Ji Hao's physical strength had gone far beyond the limits of Divine Magi. That strong army of ants failed to move Ji Hao's body; except for causing him a piercing pain and making him very uncomfortable, those powerful ants didn't manage to pull a hair

off.

Power streams bumped into each other inside Ji Hao’s body, causing a loud sizzling noise. The extremely negative power and extremely positive had been changing states constantly inside his body; sometimes they merged, sometimes they clashed against each other, then mixed with the mysterious power contained in Ji Hao’s blood. Weak electric bolts sizzled across Ji Hao’s skin.

Three-feet-thick, turbid mist covered his body completely. From the mist, countless thin Chaos lightning bolts darted out and struck him. Every thin lightning bolt would leave a brightly sparkling spell symbol on his skin.

These spell symbols were anciently styled; every single spell symbol represented a part of the most original Dao which only existed when Pan Gu created this world. As more and more spell symbols were left on his skin, Ji Hao’s body began shrinking. Meanwhile, his physical power began growing. When his body shrank by an inch, his physical strength improved by ten percent; when his body shrank by a foot, his physical strength doubled!

Ji Hao couldn’t tell how long it had been; probably a moment, probably centuries. His body shrank by three feet, and had become nearly transparent. Countless faintly visible Chaos power streams had been rapidly flowing inside his body.

Buzz! All of a sudden, Ji Hao broke through the fifth turn of the cultivation method with nine turns. He even skipped the sixth turn and directly stepped into the seventh turn. His boosting physical strength immediately crushed all his bones, but as a blood-red beam flashed across his entire body, all broken bones recovered, many times stronger than before.

"Pure physical strength, do you feel it?" The mysterious man gradually showed up in Ji Hao’s spiritual space. With a complicated emotion, he sighed and said, "As long as your physical strength is extremely great..."

Pausing slightly, the mysterious man continued, "But of course, only physical strength is not enough. The skills of using it are important as well. Especially all kinds of magics and other abilities, those are important too."

Ji Hao didn't have the time to listen to the mysterious man. Those sharp strands of power had still been trying to tear his body like billions of mad ants. But once those ants realized that they couldn't do any actual harm to Ji Hao, they started drilling into his body. Those sharp power strands instantly moved into his body, gathered between his chest and stomach, and concentrated into a tiny spot, millions of times smaller than the point of a needle.

A terrifying devouring power burst from this tiny spot. Ji Hao felt that it wasn't just a dark spot; instead, it was a black hole, a greedily powerful black hole. His blood and life-force were agitated, surging towards this black hole.

Ji Hao had never suffered such a great pain, which made him howl out loud.

At the moment, all the others saw the dark swirl that Yemo Shayi released rotate around Ji Hao for seven to eight minutes, then merge in Ji Hao's body, leaving a tiny dark light spot sparkling between Ji Hao's chest and stomach at last.

Ji Hao forced his body tight and activated all his power. Slowly, he made the posture of everything-grow to control his spirit blood and stop it from flowing into that dark hole.

However, the dark hole created by Yemo Shayi contained the power of the great Dao of devouring which belonged to the original world of Yu Clan people. Yemo Shayi was a Sun and Moon stage powerful being, and could perfectly control the power of the great Dao of devouring. Ji Hao could never fight the most powerful Dao of a world with merely his physical strength.

Puff! Ji Hao's muscles suddenly withered and left his transparent skin wrapped around his bones.

Yemo Shayi slowly clapped his hands and said to Yemo Luoye blandly, "Your Highness, it’s going to be over. What a shame, he overestimated himself. He can’t even take thirty percent of my power!"

Yemo Luoye chuckled. She narrowed her eyes, and quickly fixed those eyes on the three supreme treasures held in Yuan Li’s hands, "So, Yemo Shayi, that mirror suits me very much, and that cloak... I like that cloak too. The sword is yours."

Yemo Shayi paused slightly. He also wanted the Taiji cloak.

However, he could never want anything that Yemo Luoye wanted. Elegantly and politely, he bowed to Yemo Luoye, then nodded smilingly.

Ji Hao failed to control his spirit blood and life-force. His spirit blood and life-force surged into that black hole like a flood. Within a blink of an eye, he was nearly drained. As fast as he could, Ji Hao instinctively activated the extremely negative power and extremely positive power inside him and transformed into a Taiji diagram that trapped the black hole in it.

The pain faded, and the spirit blood flew back.

The misty Taiji diagram rotated around the black hole ceaselessly. Priest Dachi once taught Ji Hao about the great Dao of Taiji. At this moment, every single world Priest Dachi said to Ji Hao resounded in Ji Hao’s primordial spirit one after another. Ji Hao realized that he had never gained such a clear understanding of the great Dao of Taiji.

The extremely negative power and extremely positive power flushed Ji Hao’s body. Once again, Ji Hao made the posture of everything-grow and slowly moved his body.

A warm and clear layer of light surrounded Ji Hao. The great Dao of Taiji was of a much higher grade than the Dao of destroying. The clear light rapidly absorbed all the power contained in the

dark hole. Ji Hao’s muscles swelled again. In addition to that, a mysterious sense of power spread out from his body.

Chapter 1124: A Destroying Strike

Ji Hao felt extremely delighted and pleased.

The great Dao of Taiji was like a millstone, crushing the black hole created by Yemo Shayi bit by bit, slowly taking back Ji Hao's spirit blood and life-force. In the meanwhile, it had also been extracting slight traces of magical power from that tiny black hole.

This dark, deep, lifeless power merged with Ji Hao's body. Wherever it reached, Ji Hao felt his body was smashed billions of times with a giant hammer by a giant divine God. Some relatively weaker parts of his body had been getting destroyed and recovering over and over again; like forging iron, these body parts grew stronger and stronger.

Ji Hao's body glowed brighter and brighter, while releasing a thriving life-force. Clear waves of light spread out slowly from his body, illuminating the surrounding area thousand miles in radius.

What surprised Ji Hao even more was that the power which came from the black hole had been slowly merging with Ji Hao's Dao of Taiji. That dark power contained a strange, mysterious sense of Dao. Somehow, it was perfecting the Dao of Taiji that Ji Hao learned from Priest Dachi.

"The Dao of devouring from Pan Yu world? The purpose of devouring is destruction, and the opposite of destruction is creation. Taiji can be seen as the medium of Yin and Yang. If you go deeper...you can see it as life, as death, as both destruction and creation, as all unities of opposites."

"This little guy is so lucky!" The mysterious man murmured in Ji Hao's spiritual space, then closed his eyes, silently sensing the Dao of devouring that was forcibly extracted from the black hole in Ji Hao's body. That was the most powerful Dao from the original world of Yu Clan people. Even a shadowy understanding of it might deliver a great benefit.

Yemo Luoye didn’t know what happened to Ji Hao’s body, but seeing those magical changes going on, even a slightly smarter boar would know that Ji Hao didn’t suffer any actual harm.

Yemo Luoye was picturing herself with the Taiji cloak and the Taiji Universe mirror. Seeing that Ji Hao was unharmed, she furiously stomped her foot against the ground and shouted at Yemo Shayi, "Dear Monseigneur Yemo Shayi, if you cannot free yourself from the fake dignity of our Yu Clan nobles and kill Marquis Yao with all your power, I’ll lose nothing but some insignificant honor, while you...are going to lose your entire family!"

Yemo Shayi’s face blushed. He had a confident, carefree look earlier, yet suddenly, he popped out his eyes and stared at Ji Hao fiercely.

"Your Highness, it is my mistake. I thought he won’t be able to take thirty percent of my power. This time, I will use...Ninety percent of my power!" said Yemo Shayi with a strong intent of killing, "Ninety percent of my power, I’ve never..."

Suddenly, Yemo Shayi paused in the midair.

A dim dark sun silently emerged above his head, and in the middle of that dark sun, a blur erect eye coldly and expressionlessly glanced at Yemo Shayi. The eye and the sun disappeared soon, after which, Yemo Shayi turned back to Ji Hao and looked at him in shock. He couldn’t believe his own eyes.

"How can it be...?This lowly barbarian, this weak human being, he is looting...looting the honor of the great Dark Sun! He has already taken a trace of the Dao of devouring that belonged to the great Dark Sun! How could he?"

"Great Dark Sun, you must be joking with your loyal slave!" Yemo Shayi growled out, even a bit hysterically, "You must be! Such a lowly, ignorant, stupid barbaric being, how can he ever..."

"I am using hundred percent of my power!" Yemo Shayi screamed out madly, "Hundred percent, all my power! Damn it, damn it! No one can stain the glory of the great Dark Sun! No one! Not even a little bit! No!"

Yemo Luoye had her mouth opened widely, her three eyes popped out, staring at the air above Yemo Shayi's head in a soul-deep shock.

Just now, if she were right, the Dark Sun's spirit had traveled across the immeasurable Chaos and given Yemo Shayi a 'supreme instruction'. Was that even real?

Back in the original world of Yu Clan people, the three suns and nine moons took turns to illuminate the world, brightly and eternally. In the past countless centuries, the spirits of the three suns and nine moons hardly woke up. The last time the Dark Sun spirit descended was when Yemo Luoye was born; the Dark Sun spirit gifted her with the perfect talent.

But this time, the Dark Sun spirit didn't come with a blessing. Instead, it came to lay blame on Yemo Shayi.

The Dark Sun spirit crossed the immeasurable Chaos and showed up in this world in such a blur and dim state, but still, it laid blame on Yemo Shayi. What did Yemo Shayi do? And what had Ji Hao done to activate and enrage the Dark Sun spirit, make it come all the way to Pan Gu world despite the huge consumption of energy?

"Old man, I'm waiting for you!" Ji Hao slowly moved his arms, silently recalling the moves of sky-opening, earth-splitting, everything-grow and everything-perish that the mysterious man taught him.

The four moves were separated and independent. Before, by simply making the four moves together, Ji Hao had launched combined moves of these four moves. But at this very moment, Ji Hao's body was suffused by the power of the great Dao of Taiji. The natural and harmonious Dao of Taiji connected the four moves like

a clear, refreshing stream, just like a golden line that strung four pearls together and turned them into a beautiful necklace. Under the effect of the great Dao of Taiji, the for moves seemed to even be merging perfectly.

As the four moves were merging together, in Ji Hao's primordial spirit, the faintly visible, sparkling silhouette of an axe emerged silently.

The mysterious man raised his head and looked at that axe silhouette, frowned and pondered for a while. He wielded his hand and twisted the axe silhouette, turning it into a sword silhouette that looked exactly like the Taiji divine sword.

A dark and violent power burst out from Yemo Shayi's body.

Immediately, countless thin space cracks appeared around him, while a completely emotionless power, that seemed to exist for nothing but breaking and destroying, gathered inside Yemo Shayi's body. That power was seemed evil and special. Its only purpose of existence was destroying everything in the universe; it had even been trying to destroy itself for good.

"What a crazy dog!" Ji Hao quickly made his own judgment towards this destroying power that came from Yemo Shayi. That was an unreasoning power, just like a crazy dog; no one could ever talk any sense into the head of a crazy dog.

"Hundred percent of my power!" Yemo Shayi looked at Ji Hao with his teeth gritted tight. "I was scolded by the great Dark Sun because of you! And you are going to pay for it!"

Roaring in fury, Yemo Shayi's body twisted weirdly. His muscles and bones began flowing like liquid under the effect of the destroying power. He became tall and slim; gradually, he turned into an oddly shaped machete.

The purely dark machete was lusterless. Without making any noise, the machete lunged forward, seeming slow. Then, it hacked

fiercely down towards the middle of Ji Hao’s head.

Chapter 1125: Leg and Leg

Breaking everything, cutting everything, destroying everything, then assimilating all tangible and intangible things and turning everything into destroying power... After that, continuing breaking, cutting and destroying...

The machete transformed from Yemo Shayi's body hacked straight down. A wild and violent power intruded into ji Hao's head, roaring in his spiritual space while releasing the power of destruction that belonged to the Dark Sun.

If this Dark Sun destroying power released by Yemo Shayi struck any divine God in Pan Gu world, no matter how strong the body was or how healthy the soul was, nourished by his or her spirit blood, it should be destroyed immediately.

Ji Hao was different. As a Magus, he still lingered at the level of Divine Magi. However, guided by Priest Dachi himself, Ji Hao planted his seed of Dao and grew a rudiment of Dao. The great red sun was his rudiment of Dao. In another words, in terms of primordial spirit, and as a Qi cultivator, Ji Hao and already stepped into the level of Supreme Magus.

In terms of power level, Ji Hao was equal to Yemo Shayi!

In terms of level of great Dao, Ji Hao was equal to Yemo Shayi!

The great Dao of destroying was cruel and violent, yet Ji Hao's great Dao of Taiji was no weaker than it.

The great red sun floated in the middle of Ji Hao's spiritual space and shone with a splendid red light, illuminating the entire area. Inside the red sun, a golden silhouette was as clear as a real man, while the silver silhouette was dim and hazy, like a misty shadow.

All of a sudden, the golden silhouette and the silver silhouette transformed into two nimbly swimming fishes, moving around the silhouette of the long and sharp sword in the middle of the red sun

while chasing each other's tail. The sword silhouette turned clearer and clearer, and the power vibration released from it grew stronger and stronger, sharper and sharper.

Countless dark light beams crazily bumped into the red sun, tearing it like thousands of piranhas trying to tear the red sun into pieces. But inside the red sun, the golden fish and the silverfish slowly moved like a pair of flowing light streams, generating soft yet strong airstreams. No matter how hard those dark beams tried to harm the red sun, nothing ever happened.

The mysterious man sat under the red sun with crossed legs. He raised his head, silently looking at those dark beams which had been rampantly attacking the red sun.

"The Dao of destruction from Pan Yu World...A world lets its will of destroying become the highest Dao. It's not hard to imagine how miserable the nature of this world is. No wonder creatures from that world have been crazily expanding, conquering, and looting.The great Dao of nature is in the hearts of those creatures. No wonder those Yu Clan, Jia Clan and Xiu Clan beings all have such a strong desire for invasion."

The mysterious man locked his hands together in a strange, complicated way, and gently put the pair of hands before his heart. Afterwards, a weak yet magical power vibration started spreading out from his body; the power vibration even had a color of light gray. High up, those dark beams generated by the Dao of destruction were slowly covered by the flowing gray light streams. Meanwhile, the mysterious man began to look deep into the Dao of destruction.

"Things you learned from the others might help you overcome your own shortcomings...The little guy is right!" The mysterious man laughed abruptly, "If I had this awareness back then, how could I ever end up like this? But I still have a chance, still have a chance, no despair, no despair!"

In Ji Hao's spiritual space, the golden silhouette and the silver silhouette were two rudiments of Dao generated by the great Dao of Yang and great Dao of Yin. At the moment, the two rudiments of Dao had transformed into two swimming fishes, representing the two parts of Taiji, moving and circulating inexhaustibly, fending Ji Hao's primordial spirit against the power of destruction. Outside, Ji Hao's left hand had been swiftly drawing circles in the air, releasing waves of clear light, layer by layer, shielding himself against the dark machete.

Tens of thousands of circles were drawn by Ji Hao within a second.

A strong friction force was caused between Ji Hao's hand and the air, along with a shrill noise. His left hand moved way too fast, such that a raging fire had been started in that hand. The great Dao of Taiji was supposed to be natural and free, yet Ji Hao made it as intense as iron-forging.

The machete hacked down. Water-like clear streams of light coiled around the machete, and were cut broken, only to be followed up by more light streams. After a wave of clear light was shredded, the machete would be slowed a bit, and a faint layer of dark mist on the surface would be dispelled.

The machete got closer and closer to Ji Hao's head... nine meters, six meters, three meters...

Ji Hao's left hand moved faster and faster, and the shrill noise caused by him got sharper and sharper. His hand was even burning as it left shreds of afterimages in the air. Inside the circles of light he created, the space was crushed, and waves of Chaos power were generated. Assimilated by the clear light, the Chaos power slowly transformed into streams of extremely negative and extremely positive power which wrapped around Ji Hao's hand.

The fire burning on his hand turned hazy. It was not the essence sun fire, neither was it the extremely negative fire; it had the

features of both essence sun fire and the extremely negative fire. The light circles created by Ji Hao became thinner and thinner, softer and softer, yet stronger and stronger, airy, dim and hazy. Many of those Jia Clan warriors who had been watching from the side nearly passed out only because they took a quick glance at those light circles Ji Hao created.

The machete came to Ji Hao's head inch by inch, while the light circles surged up like waves.

This might sound like a pretty long story, but in fact, it all happened within a single moment. Within this moment, the machete crushed countless light circles and almost touched Ji Hao's scalp.

Ji Hao wielded his right fist and launched a punch. All his physical strength and power gathered for this punch. Earlier, he broke into the seventh turn of the cultivation method with nine turns, and by now, his fully activated physical strength was sixty-four times greater than before. The strength was put forth, and the moves of sky-opening, earth-splitting, everything-grow, and everything-perish were made.

Followed by a sizzling noise, Ji Hao hummed in pain. His tightened fist loosened without him being able to help it. He straightened his five fingers.

A weird transformation happened to his body, same as what had happened to Yemo Shayi's body. From his shoulder to his fingertips, the hazy silhouette of a sword covered his arm. That arm began squirming, and in the very next moment, his arm became a heavy long sword.

A prehistorical power burst from Ji Hao's sword arm. Ji Hao roared resoundingly while wielding his right arm with all of his power, then fiercely clanged against Yemo Shayi's machete body, leaving a sharp sword light in the air that sliced the space broken.

Yemo Luoye clenched her fists and laughed in a slightly hoarse

voice, "Done!"

Yuan Li screamed out loud, "Marquis Yao! You! You take it like that! You! You..." But suddenly, Yuan Li remembered that the deal Ji Hao made with the non-humankind was to take three strikes from Yemo Shayi with his bare body! Whole three strikes!

Yuan Li lowered his head, shaking his head helplessly and sadly. Abruptly, he cursed out loud, "Xiang Liu Junior, you have so many people with you, yet you let someone kidnap Snow! You! You should die!"

Ji Hao's arm clashed violently against Yemo Shayi's body and generated a glass-cracking sound. Ji Hao quivered. Treading on the air, he took whole ten-thousand steps backward in a row. While drawing back, he was vomiting blood. Soon, his skin chapped and let streams of blood gush out.

Yemo Shayi transformed back to his original shape. Silently, he stood where Ji Hao was, confusingly looking at Ji Hao.

"You...A Divine Magus...but as powerful as a Supreme Magus?" Yemo Shayi shook his head in confusion and murmured, "When did such a freak emerge amongst the humankind? Human beings are always weaker than they should be. Not a single man had his power going beyond his level!"

Puff! All of a sudden, deep wounds appeared in Yemo Shayi's chest, lower belly and both sides of his ribs. Then, the blood sprayed out like a fountain.

Chapter 1126: The Secret Dark Sun Magic

Ji Hao's blood flew rapidly out of his body like rivers.

That blood was purely dark. All life-force contained in that blood was destroyed. Instead, a strong sense of death filled it. Ji Hao's extraordinarily strong body cast that waste blood out of his body while replacing it with the new Chaos blood produced by his heart. The new Chaos blood soon reached to every tiny corner of Ji Hao's body.

He was indeed severely wounded, but not as bad as he looked like.

The vigorous life-force spread in his body, flowing in every meridian of his. Ji Hao breathed deeply. His broken skin fell off from his body piece by piece, then turned into ashes, drifting away.

A new, jade-smooth skin had been growing rapidly on his body. Ji Hao raised his arm and gently touched his face with his fingers. The new skin on his finger tinkled against the new skin on his face, sounding as beautiful as a small jade bell.

Yemo Shayi had also been gasping quickly for air. The four bone-deep wounds on his body brought him a mighty pain.

Yemo Shayi didn't have the thriving life-force that Ji Hao had. He showed his teeth in pain, looking at Ji Hao while carefully taking out a black crystal bottle and pouring the sticky ointment into his mouth. The ointment emitted a nice aroma.

The devouring and destroying power was tossing inside his body, but neither of these two types of power could do any good to his wounds. Fortunately, the ointment he swallowed provided him with a strong life-force that nourished his body and healed his wounds speedily.

Normally, the Dark Sun power would gift Yemo Shayi with an

incomparably great power which allowed him to fight light a killing machine. However, the Dark Sun power was crazy, negative; for powerful beings like Yemo Shayi, nothing too bad would happen if they remained unhurt, but once they were injured and the destroying power and devouring power lost balance in their bodies, they would suffer miserably like a nightmare.

Yemo Shayi was lucky that he prepared top-grade magic medicines for himself every single day. The medicine saved him from the pain, healed the wounds, and allowed him to breathe and slowly restrain the agitated power inside him.

"You!" Yemo Shayi stared at Ji Hao, still confused.

He used all of his power for the strike he launched just now. He activated the destroying power that belonged to the Dark Sun, and put forth all of his strength to attack Ji Hao. He thought Ji Hao would be killed easily, just like all those old enemies he killed.

But Ji Hao gave him a strange feeling. At first, Ji Hao felt like a mechanical spring, soft yet strong. The strike he launched with his full power was weakened by those light circles Ji Hao created by at least sixty percent. As for the rest forty percent, Ji Hao took it all without dodging.

The bump that happened between Ji Hao and Yemo Shayi reminded him of something that happened in his childhood, when he bumped against a giant rock. The rock broke his head, and made him shed blood and gave him pain. Just now, the counterattack he suffered from Ji Hao also gave him an unbearable pain.

"Marquis Yao Ji Hao, even if not for the wager, I have to kill you!" Yemo Shayi looked at Ji Hao with a dark face, "You’re only a Divine Magus, but you survived the strike I launched with all of my power. You...You are damned!"

All of Ji Hao’s injuries had recovered by now. The destroying power that had drilled into his body, had already been absorbed

completely by his great Dao of Taiji.

At the moment, Ji Hao's body was filled with strength. He never felt better or stronger than now. Gasping deeply, he stretched his body as hard as he needed. A clear series of popping noise was squeezed out of his body.

"Come on! Enough of the talking! Come on!" Ji Hao crooked his finger towards Yemo Shayi and said straightforwardly, "You've already used all of your power for the last strike. I'd like to see what else you can do. Burn your spirit blood? Burn your soul? No, I will not allow you to burn your soul! Because according to the agreement, you are now a wager, and you don't have to right to damage a wager!"

Yemo Shayi's face turned even darker, and neither did Yemo Luoye had a pleased look.

As Ji Hao said, Yemo Shayi was now a wager. Before the winner was determined, if Yemo Shayi harmed his own soul and spirit on purpose, he could be seen as maliciously damaging a wager...If that truly happened, Yemo Luoye and Yemo Shayi would be punished by their blood oath they made immediately!

"You...You're so sly!" Yemo Luoye now felt that Ji Hao had set a trap for Yemo Shayi and herself intentionally.

She angrily looked at Ji Hao and gritted her teeth while pondering, trying to find a way to twist the situation.

Ji Hao innocently spread his hands. He didn't think about that when he made an agreement earlier, but the agreement had been made indeed. This meant that as a wager, Yemo Shayi couldn't even think about burning his soul or spirit blood to improve his power.

"I don't need to burn my spirit blood or my soul!" Yemo Shayi looked at Ji Hao with that dark face, "I only need to bring the power which is gifted by the great, supreme Dark Sun, to this

world. With that power, I can destroy you both in the body and the soul!"

Snorting coldly, Yemo Shayi ripped off his own torn clothes, only leaving a pair of shorts on him. His face was slightly wrinkled, which made him look like an old man, but his body was even stronger and muscular than an eighteen-year-old human being. His muscles were tight, with clear lines; on the edges of his muscles, dark patterns were faintly visible.

Slowly raising both his arms, Yemo Shayi said in a deep voice, "Take this last strike from me. Great Dark Sun, I beg you to descend! Devour everything, destroy everything, embrace all living creatures, and bring all back to nihility. The great Dark Sun, please, hear my prayers, send your power to this wild, primitive world."

A dark sphere of light emerged from above Yemo Shayi's head and spread gradually. A three-hundred-meters wide dark sun rose from the dark light and spun slowly, releasing thin stands of dark mist, swirling in all directions.

A strong suction force came from the dark sun which wrapped Ji Hao up, dragging him into it.

Countless black light streams had been rotating inside the dark sun. Gradually, those light streams wove into a giant, erect dark eye, and this nearly a hundred meters long eye opened slowly. That erect eye was filled with uncountable, sharp tusks, layer upon layer.

The dark tusks clanged against each other, rubbed each other, and created large, dark, fire sparkles. Each sparkle had a hazy yet strong black spell symbol inside.

This was the true face of the Dark Sun, from the original world of Yu Clan people.

A black sun, like a black hole, could devour anything. In the

middle of the dark sun, was an eye of destruction; everything devoured by the sun would be tear apart, ground by the tusks of destruction, until it was chewed and turned into nothing.

When the Dark Sun appeared in Pan Gu world, countless seven-colored clouds rolled over in the air. Thunders rumbled and purple-golden thunderbolts sizzled in the clouds, being faintly visible.

Yemo Shayi transformed into a black beam and merged with the Dark Sun. As a black light flashed across the air, the Dark Sun reached Ji Hao’s face and swallowed him up.

Chapter 1127: Dark Sun Inheritance

Ji Hao was swallowed by the Dark Sun.

A terrifying power came from all directions, which was as heavy as mountains, disabling Ji Hao from moving.

Under this mountain-heavy power, the sharp and strong devouring power had also been tearing Ji Hao's body. Ji Hao's body was like a soft dough, slowly changing shape under the effects of these two types of powers.

Ji Hao focused on his body, sending all of his spirit power and life-force into the red sun. He activated the Taiji power inside his body, following the great Dao of Taiji and neutralizing the devouring power and destroying power that had been trying to destroy his body.

Nevertheless, the Dark Sun had been releasing an indescribably terrifying power, under the effect of which, Ji Hao felt that his body, his soul, and every part of his body had been slowly melting. He felt like he was merging with the boundless darkness, falling into the eternal destruction and nihility.

In his spiritual space, the mysterious man abruptly chuckled aloud, "I carefully read the agreement you made just now... According to the agreement, you cannot defend yourself with any weapon, but they didn't mention that I can't help you."

Ji Hao paused, then laughed bitterly as he mentioned, "A clear indication has been given about that too. I have to take three strikes from Yemo Shayi with my bare body, and no one else can help me."

The mysterious man grinned confidently and said, "I'm no one different. I live in your spiritual space, that means I'm a part of you. How can I be anyone else?"

Ji Hao paused again. The mysterious man had always been

serious and mysterious, so Ji Hao never thought that he'd ever say something so naughty. A short while later, Ji Hao gave a bitter smile and said, "Old man, you're sly now!"

The mysterious man sighed slowly as he said, "If I could be so 'sly' back then, how would I end up like this?"

Sighing again, the mysterious man reached out his right hand slowly, and drew a beautiful arc in the air. Then, he pointed heavily on Ji Hao's red sun primordial spirit and said, "Careful, follow my move, and let's see what this Dark Sun truly is...Let's find out the real situation of the mother world of these non-humankind beings."

Yemo Shayi brought the Dark Sun to Pan Gu world. To other people, this was definitely a despairing killing move, but in the mysterious man's eyes, Yemo Shayi had taken the initiative to open a small window, while the power of the Dark Sun created a straight path outside this window. By joining hands with Ji Hao, the mysterious man believed that they would be able to see a few things through this window.

The great pressure that Ji Hao had been suffering was suddenly gone. The pressure still existed, yet it could no longer affect him.

The Dark Sun had still been trying to devour and crush Ji Hao's body, grind his soul, his body, and everything with those tusks of destruction. However, those tusks of destruction couldn't cause any harm to Ji Hao anymore, because at the moment, to a certain degree, his body had already been assimilated by the Dark Sun.

Ji Hao saw a vast land.

The land seemed to be a bit barren, covered in grasses, with medium-sized trees scattered on it. Under those trees were some short, strange plants, which contained some natural powers. Those plants should be a special type of magical herb of this world.

A gentle, warm gust of wind blew slowly across the sky, pushing

the clouds forward. Occasionally, raindrops would fall from these clouds.

This world was just like an exhausted man who had his life-force drained, but had swallowed up a great amount of replenishing medicine at once. Under the effect of the medicine, this man now looked energetic again, yet deep inside, he was still weak.

A strong natural will had been keeping this world running. With all supplemental energies coming from the outside, this world had been keeping its balance; it wouldn't die of exhaustion, but neither would it become a rich, fertile place.

Everything was just fine, just fine.

The sky was bright, with a black sun shining. The sun was black, but its light illuminated the world.

The world was suffused by the cold and evil power of the Dark Sun, and the senses of destroying and devouring. Under the pressure created by the Dark Sun, all living creatures in the world became weak, except for the ones in the north.

In the north, in a series of magnificent cities on a broad plain area, palaces and mansions were built with black rocks. Countless non-humankind people in black outfits had been dancing and singing in happiness. They walked into temples, towards altars, kneeled, and kowtowed to the Dark Sun in the sky. A year in this world was divided into twelve months, and a month here was three times longer than a Pan Gu world month.

In this world, three suns and nine moons took turns to rule this world.

Each year, every sun and every moon had the chance to shine in the sky for a whole month. The current month belonged to the Dark Sun. In this month, the world was filled with the original power of the Dark Sun, and the people worshipping the Dark Sun would gain great benefits in this month.

For Dark Sun people, in this month, which was ruled by the Dark Sun, even newborns would be much more talented than the ones who were born in the other eleven months.

Yemo Shayi was born on the day when the Dark Sun reached the highest point in the sky, and the Dark Sun power was the strongest in a year.

In Ji Hao's sight, Yemo Shayi was still a newborn. Ji Hao saw Yemo Shayi's mother wrapping him up with a black cloth, putting him on a roughly built altar. Placed around Yemo Shayi were a few 'magic crystals', which seemed to be of low quality.

High up in the air, the Dark Sun sparkled slightly. Next, tens of thousands of different sized dark light streams poured down from the Dark Sun and landed on the ground.

Two thin streams of dark light shone on Yemo Shayi's body. Two incomplete, tiny spell symbols were wrapped in the two light streams. Those spell symbols were fragments of the natural laws of destruction and devouring; each fragment was about one ten-millionth of the original natural law.

Yemo Shayi was gifted with the fragments of the natural laws. Without a doubt, he was a chosen one.

With the powers of the two fragments, Yemo Shayi cultivated himself severely, ever since he was a little kid. Very soon, he showed his extraordinary talent.

Yemo Shayi was born in a small family. One day, his family offended a top-grade powerful being. As a result, his entire family was enslaved. Yemo Shayi followed an ancestor of Yemo Family, a low-grade noble of an impoverished family, and joined the expeditionary army, luckily coming to Pan Gu world.

From his birth, everything Yemo Shayi experienced was replayed before the eyes of Ji Hao and the mysterious man.

Everything he went through, everything he learned, even

including the powers of natural laws contained in the two fragments he was gifted with... Yemo Shayi gradually completed the two fragments of natural laws with arduous cultivation, and finally stepped into the stage of Sun and Moon. Ji Hao and the mysterious man witnessed the entire process.

"I see... The Dark Sun power under his control is weaker than one-thousandth of the true Dark Sun!"

Ji Hao attained a clear understanding of Yemo Shayi's power.

By now, he could also control the Dark Sun power as much as Yemo Shayi could.

Chapter 1128: Shayi Fails

"Yemo Shayi, compared with my uncle Dachi, your Dao is so much weaker!"

In Ji Hao's red sun primordial spirit, other than the golden and silver Taiji diagram which was transformed from the golden silhouette and the silver silhouette, a circle of dark light was abruptly added. The sharp and dark light was even darker than a night, and seemed to devour everything like a black hole. From that endless darkness, a strange sense of destroying power released quietly, which could even bring people a soul-level fear.

Strands of black mist drifted out from Ji Hao's body. His three eyes were pure and flawless, like crystals, but now, each of them was added with a mysterious dark circle. Ji Hao smilingly raised his right arm. Once, again, his right arm transformed into a long sharp sword, which looked exactly like the Taiji Divine sword.

On the edge of the long sword, a stream of dark mist was faintly visible. Gradually, the dark mist was restrained and compressed into a translucent, crystal-like edge, attached to the sword edge.

The mysterious man laughed out loud, "You should fight these top-grade powerful non-humankind beings more. With my help, you might steal the powers of all their three suns and nine moons!"

Ji Hao laughed as well. Meanwhile, the mysterious man stood up in Ji Hao's spiritual space and slowly made the moves of sky-opening, earth-splitting, everything-grow and everything-perish, one after another. The mysterious man's moves were smooth and natural; clearly, he had also combined the great Dao of Taiji with these four moves, and united the four moves, just like Ji Hao did earlier.

Compared with the combined move Ji Hao created himself, the mysterious one's combined move was simple and unsophisticated. It seemed to be much plainer than Ji Hao's move, but it pointed

directly at the core of some kind of original power, being natural and effective.

Ji Hao took a deep breath. He closed his eyes and focused on the mysterious man's move. Every bone, every inch of muscle and meridian of his began moving slightly, along with the mysterious man's moves.

As Ji Hao's moves got more and more similar to the mysterious man's moves, another soaring improvement of physical strength happened in him. His bones, muscles and internal organs were all nourished by the colorless Chaos blood created by his heart. Gradually, a prehistorical sense of Chaos power was generated from his body.

A Taiji diagram emerged from behind the mysterious man's body as well, black and white, clear and turbid. The outline of the Taiji diagram behind him was especially distinct. However, as the mysterious man moved faster and faster while making the four moves, the Taiji diagram behind him gradually turned hazy and colorless, almost the same as Ji Hao's colorless Chaos blood.

"What is the end of Taiji? Taiji...Infinite? Chaos? Eternality?" The mysterious man murmured to himself, "Dachi, Qing Wei, Yu Yu, their Dao...Interesting... Are they trying to combine their individual Dao and recreate the great Dao of nature of Pan Gu world?"

The mysterious man murmured with a very low voice, without letting Ji Hao hear him. He led Ji Hao's moves with his own movements, and allowed his body to evolve, reaching a perfect state.

Ji Hao's physical strength, soul power and the density of his spirit blood had all been raising at a crazy rate.

A body of the dragon-kind, a soul of the phoenix-kind, a bloodline of the humankind...The Chaos power that came from Ji Hao's body grew stronger and stronger. His physical strength, soul

power and the density of his spirit blood were still raising ceaselessly.

Soon, Ji Hao reached the limitation of his current level, as no more space was left for him to continue improving. He was like a giant stove with all of the fuel consumed up. Abruptly, the mysterious man raised his right hand and swung it down. His move seemed to be gentle, yet it was as heavy as a hundred mountains.

A clear straight line appeared in front of the mysterious man. In Ji Hao's spiritual space, thunder rumbled and lightning dazzled, while strong streams of Chaos power were generated, being absorbed by Ji Hao's red sun primordial spirit, which had already consumed a mighty amount of energy.

Ji Hao sighed slightly. He raised his right arm, which had already merged with the natural laws of devouring and destruction, and swung it forward.

The sense of power released from his body was now exactly the same as the sense of power that came from the real Dark Sun. Therefore, the Dark Sun wasn't vigilant towards Ji Hao at all, neither did it do anything to protect itself. Consequently, the Dark Sun was cut into two by Ji Hao easily.

The Dark Sun hanging in the air split up and sent puffs of dark mist up into the higher sky, swirled away by the purple-golden thunderbolts inside those seven-colored clouds in the sky, without leaving a trace. Strands of natural reward power descended from the sky, merging with Ji Hao's body. Ji Hao's body was drained, with no spare energy left inside. But, absorbing the natural reward, a nearly inexhaustible power started to be generated from his body.

"The three strikes have been taken. Yemo Shayi, take one strike from me!"Ji Hao smiled calmly. He tore apart the Dark Sun and showed up above Yemo Shayi's head. Looking at Yemo Shayi's

trembling face, Ji Hao suddenly felt interested. He clenched his right fist, launched the ‘soft’ combined move towards Yemo Shayi’s back.

"Stop it!" Yemo Luoye immediately stood up from the dark throne and screamed out hysterically.

Yemo Shayi brought the Dark Sun to Pan Gu world from the mother world of Yu Clan, but the distance between Pan Gu world and that world was way too large. As a consequence, the Dark Sun did descend to Pan Gu world, and Yemo Shayi had used up all of his power.

Facing Ji Hao’s ‘gentle’ punch, Yemo Shayi didn’t even have the power to dodge.

Yemo Luoye screamed shrilly while flicking her fingers. From her left forefinger, a dark gemstone ring flew out. The thumb-sized gemstone flashed across the air, swished to behind Yemo Shayi, then suddenly expanded and transformed into a black crystal shield with seventeen edges, shielding Yemo Shayi against Ji Hao’s fist.

This was the ‘black hole crystal shield’, the strongest defensive treasure possessed by Yemo Luoye; it was a half Beyond-Redemption-stage weapon.

The stage of Beyond Redemption was higher than the stage of Sun and Moon, which equaled the level of Supreme Magus. Although the crystal shield was only a half Beyond-Redemption-stage piece, its defensive power was bloodcurdling. Not even a Supreme Magus could cause any harm to it.

Ji Hao narrowed his eye, while his fist landed on the crystal shield.

Followed a muffled thud, Ji Hao’s fist broke. Tens of slashes extended to his shoulder, and the blood splashed out like blooming flowers.

But soon, that blood flew back into those wounds and all wounds healed speedily. Ji Hao showed an unreasonably great self-healing ability, that was far beyond the limit of peak-level Divine Magi. He put his fist against the crystal shield and forcibly pressed it down by three inches.

The crystal shield remained unharmed, but pushed by Ji Hao, it bumped on Yemo Shayi's back.

The three-feet-long shield bumped on Yemo Shayi's back like a large rock. Yemo Shayi opened his mouth in pain, and his eyeballs almost popped out from his face. His bones were crushed by the crystal. The liquid flowing out of his mouth was not pure blood; instead, it was a mixture of blood and mashed internal organs.

A paunch launched by Ji Hao with his last bit of remaining strength almost killed Yemo Shayi right on the spot.

"I, I lost!" Yemo Shayi howled out loud, then fell down from midair.

Ji Hao grabbed an ankle of Yemo Shayi, carried him in his hands, then lifted him up!

Chapter 1129: Yemo Tian Arrives

"From now on, you're my slave, and so are all your families."

Ji Hao took out a life-saving magic pill which was concocted by Priest Dachi himself, and threw it into Yemo Shayi's mouth. A light-golden mist with a nice aroma came out from every single pore of his. The light-golden mist drifted around Yemo Shayi's body, eventually condensed into a giant lotus, and wrapped him up.

"So, you can't die. You have to stay alive!" Ji Hao surrounded Yemo Shayi with his spirit power. His amazingly strong spirit power even made Yemo Shayi's face twitch intensely.

If Ji Hao released all of his spirit power before the game started, Yemo Shayi would never recklessly agree to make a bet with him. Ji Hao was indeed only a Divine Magus, yet his spirit power was mighty, even stronger than Yemo Shanyi's spirit power.

Could a Divine Magus have such a strong soul?

Laughing bitterly, Yemo Shayi sensed all his wounds recovering completely within a couple of breaths. Then, he slowly stood up. With an extremely bitter look, Yemo Shayi bowed deeply to Yemo Luoye and said, "Your Highness, I'm afraid that I cannot continue serving you anymore. Please, take care!"

Straightening his body, Yemo Shayi abruptly made a long and sharp whistle.

Following the whistle, Yemo Shayi's children, grandchildren, wives and all the other relatives and his warriors and private slaves swooshed immediately behind Yemo Shayi and lined up orderly. These people fled away from Yemo Luoye so fast, as if Yemo Luoye was a scary poisonous snake, and they couldn't wait to sneak away from her.

Ji Hao laughed out loud.

Yemo Luoye was infuriated; she nearly failed to steady her own body. Glaring at Yemo Shayi, she yelled, "Yemo Shayi, what do you think I might do to your families?"

Yemo Shayi spread his hands, honestly looked at Yemo Luoye, and responded, "Your Highness, I have watched you grow up every since you were a baby. I've handled many things for you, so I deeply understand your nature."

As he smiled, Yemo Shayi continued, "More importantly, I deeply understand what we, Yu Clan nobles, are. Can you promise that you never had the impulsion to order your warriors to kill all my families when I lost?"

Yemo Shaye shut her mouth tight. Her eyes sparkled with a dim light as she cast a complicated glance at those Yu Clan people who had lined up behind Yemo Shayi and Ji Hao.

They were all Yemo Shayi's direct relatives. Not to mention those general-level and battle-king level warriors, among Yemo Shayi's children, five were a breath away from the stage of Sun and Moon. In other words, five of Yemo Shayi's children were nearly as powerful as Supreme Magi.

Yemo Shayi was a master of assassination. He was skillful, and could perfectly hide himself and kill the target without making even the slightest noise. Guided by him, every single one of his offsprings was a top-grade assassinate, also a sharp dagger held in Yemo Luoye's hands.

She lost such a strong force to Ji Hao for completely nothing. To be honest, Yemo Luoye's heart was almost broken. If she had the right people to do it, she would truly choose to destroy Yemo Shayi's family instead of giving all those people to Ji Hao without harming them.

"From now on, Ji will be your forename!" Ji Hao smilingly nodded to Yemo Shayi and said, "Your old names are way too long. Ji Shayi, I think it's a good name. But, it'll be fine if you don't want

to change your names. Follow my lead, and your lives won't be worse than your old lives in Liang Zhu City."

Pausing briefly, Ji Hao grinned to Yemo Shayi and continued, "You see, Di Yantuo and the others from Di Family are living happily under my lead."

Yemo Shayi's sparkled dimply. He gave a complicated glance at Ji Hao, then kneeled in midair towards him. Behind him, all his families glanced at each other, then looked at Yemo Shayi, who had an ink-like face. Thinking of that cruel agreement made by Yemo Luoye, Yemo Shayi, and Ji Hao, all these people kneeled as well, one after another.

All of Yemo Shayi's families bit their fingers broken, drew a few lines of strange and complicated spell symbols near their erect eyes, and made a blood oath with their souls. They all thus swore to pledge their loyalties to Ji Hao and his offsprings forever and ever.

Once they made the new blood oath to Ji Hao, streams of dark smoke rose from these people, straight into the sky. That was the old blood oath they made to Yemo Luoye and her ancestors. Because of the agreement made by Ji Hao and Yemo Luoye, they were now lost to Ji Hao as slaves. Naturally, the blood oath they made to Yemo Family was gone.

Ji Hao shed a drop of spirit blood which transformed into tens of thousands of tiny spell symbols and darted out, gently merging with the erect eyes of Yemo Shayi and his families. Ji Hao activated those spell symbols with a blood oath spell and planted the spell symbol deeply inside the souls of Yemo Shayi and his families. Thus, the lives of these Yu Clan people are now controlled by Ji Hao, and because of that, they had officially become Ji Hao's loyal slaves.

Ji Hao smilingly nodded to Yemo Shayi and his families, then wielded his hand. Following his move, the Taiji Divine sword and

Taiji cloak, which were held in Yuan Li's hands, and the Taiji Universe mirror, which floated behind Yuan Li, all transformed into bright light streams and flew back to Ji Hao.

The Taiji cloak landed on Ji Hao's body like a clear stream of water. A strong gust of wind blew across, that rustled Ji Hao's broad sleeves. Ji Hao held his hands behind his body, grinned, and looked at Yemo Luoye, whose facial expression had turned back to normal, "Your Highness, those warriors you promised me, now it's their turn to make the oath to me."

Yemo Luoye slightly quivered, but she calmed herself down immediately and gave a sweet smile.

"Marquis Yao, I believe that this bet is just a secret between you and me...You won't tell everyone in Liang Zhu City about it, will you?"

Yemo Shayi stood behind Ji Hao and murmured, "Dear Master, Yu Clan nobles value their honors very much. If you tell anyone about this, Yemo Luoye would be put in an awfully passive position. But as long as you don't say it out, even if the other nobles find out about this, Yemo Luoye could still pretend that nothing has ever happened."

Smiling weirdly, Yemo Shayi continued with a low voice, "This is the 'silence rule' of Yu Clan nobles. The things you didn't witness never happened; the things never stated by any party didn't happen...Even if everyone knows about this, as long as you stay silent, Yemo Luoye's honor wouldn't be harmed at all."

Ji Hao smiled and nodded. Such a hypocritical species!

He looked at Yemo Luoye and smiled, "I'm surely not a long-tongued person. Please, don't worry about that...Hmm, I can't wait to collect my prizes. Please, let those powerful Jia Clan warriors and their families take an oath of fealty to me!"

Ji Hao grinned brightly and continued, "I am just in need of

strong warriors!"

Yemo Luoye threw a glance at the water city which was attacked by countless water-kind creatures a long distance away, then her face turned dark again. Indeed, Ji Hao could really use some strong elite forces, and she had given Ji Hao a great gift just in time.

From the air, a high-pitched voice came, "Yemo Luoye, my dear sister, beautiful sister, you are such a humiliation of Yemo Family."

Chapter 1130: The Sadness of Snow

In the higher sky, a relatively small sized Kun Peng bird transformed into a large fish, drifted in the dark clouds. When the Kun Peng bird transformed into its fish shape, it looked like a whale and sounded like a dragon. Wherever it reached, countless whirlwinds had been roaring, shredding the clouds in the sky.

Yemo Tian was wearing a long robe that belonged to an ancient divine emperor, which looked very strange on him. He was also wearing a golden hat that was embossed with nine dragons. He was holding an exquisitely crafted jade board, which was used by an ancient heavenly God in the divine court, and had a series of jade accessories tied around his waist. With all those brightly glowing accessories, he proudly stood on the head of that Kun Peng bird, looking down at everyone else.

Yemo Luoye’s look slightly changed, then that pretty face of her was immediately filled with a warm smile.

"Yemo Tian, my dear young brother. I sent you to bring your little sister home, but where have you been these days?"

Yemo Luoye smiled warmly and sweetly; that smile seemed to come straight from her soul, and made her look like a gentle and caring girl who was truly worried about her brother.

"B*tch, I'm so tired of your show since many years ago."

Yemo Tian was rather straightforward. He squatted, pressed his left hand on the bird’s head, then cursed out loud while pointing his right forefinger at Yemo Luoye, "You bloody b*tch! If you didn’t have the few old dogs around you, I would have stabbed you in the back and killed you long ago! Or, I would drug you and sell you to those jerks who have been drooling over you for years, such as Fan Hai, Dishi Yanluo..."

Hearing these awful words, Yemo Luoye could no longer pretend

to be not angry. Her face turned cold and dark instantly, showing the stateliness that belonged to the Emperor in power of the Dark Sun. She raised her head, looked at Yemo Tian, and said coldly, "You colluded with Dishi Cha, what are you going to do? You colluded with Gong Gong too. You don’t think that they can help you to replace me, do you?"

Yemo Tian smilingly shook his head, clicked his tongue and responded, "What a brainless woman with big boobs. If we didn’t share the same mother, I would want you too, and I wouldn’t be able to help myself. You’re pretty enough, at least."

While smirking, Yemo Tian continued in that strange tone, "Well, women, brains are useless to you anyway. Large bosoms and pretty faces, those are all you need, and those all make up your value."

Yemo Luoye clenched her fists. She wanted to say something to Yemo Tian, but Ji Hao was out of patience. He made a whistle, then said loudly, "Guys, if you want to review the warmth between a sister and a brother, you can always do that after you have fulfilled your promise, right? That little girl, yeah, that silver-scaled little thing, giver her back to me now!"

Ji Hao pointed at Snow, who was still gripped in the Jia Clan warrior’s hand, and shouted, "Release her now, then I’ll leave with my people. After that, you can love each other, and you can also kill each other, I wouldn’t care."

Yuan Li hurriedly shouted, "Release her! Now! Release her! Oi! Your Emperor has sworn with her blood! How can you not release her? Do you want your Emperor to die with a perished soul?"

Ji Hao’s heart missed a beat. He swiftly threw a threatening glance at Yuan Li ‘This water monkey, does he even know how to talk? Under this circumstance, right in front of Yemo Tian, how could he say something like that?’ Thought Ji Hao.

Yemo Luoye instantly showed a deep panic on his face. She

turned around immediately, yelled at that Jia Clan warrior, who had Snow holding in his hand, "Release her, now! Now! Just release her!"

A weird dim light flashed across Yemo Tian’s eyes. Slowly, he sighed and said, "I see. No wonder you’ve even lost an old dog of yours to someone else. Yemo Shayi, hehe, that’s one less old dog around you, am I right?"

The Jia Clan warrior made no response to Yemo Luoye’s order. Instead, he raised his head, looked at Yemo Tian.

Yemo Luoye’s look changed suddenly. She screamed shrilly, then suddenly transformed into a large black and bumped into that Jia Clan warrior, "You damned thing! You betrayed me? You chose to follow Yemo Tian, that b*stard?!"

Yemo Tian squatted on the Kun Peng bird’s head and carelessly waved his hand as he said, "Kill her!"

When Yemo Luoye was still around a mile away from that Jia Clan warrior, Ji Hao had already activated the golden bridge, transformed into a golden beam, and dazzled towards that Jia Clan warrior.

Ahead of Yemo Luoye, Ji Hao reached to that Jia Clan warrior, raised his right arm and hacked fiercely down towards him, leaving a slightly dark sword light in the air. In the meanwhile, Ji Hao growled resonantly, "Yemo Tian, I know you want to die, and you will!"

Yemo Tian slightly quivered. Subconsciously, he took out a fist-sized, diamond-shaped crystal piece, and gripped it in his hand.

Seeing Ji Hao didn’t come to him and rushed to the Jia Clan warrior instead, Yemo Tian laughed scornfully, "Wanna kill me? It’s not gonna be easy! Can you survive my destructive weapon? Soft, lowly barbarian, you can do no more than yelling and shouting!"

"Until..." Yemo Tian continued laughing with a vicious tone, "Till then, you will all beg to die. Everyone who has said awful things to me, everyone who has made me unhappy, everyone who disrespected me, you will all beg to die!"

That Jia Clan warrior stared at Ji Hao's sword light in despair. Even Yemo Shayi's Dark Sun magic was torn apart by Ji Hao, no to mention him, an ordinary Jia Clan warrior. He tried his best to draw back and struggled to dodge Ji Hao's attack, but at the same time, he never slowed his hands down. When Ji Hao and Yemo Luoye launched attacks to him almost simultaneously, this Jia Clan warrior had put forth his strength through both hands.

A series of bone cracking noise was a loud and quick as the sound of popping corns, following which, Snow's three-meter-long body was crushed by the Jia Clan warrior. Glistening blue blood splashed out. Snow screamed for the last time. From her head, a thumb-sized pearl bead flew out, darting towards Yuan Li along with a faint cold stream of mist.

"Ah? A dragon spirit pearl?"

Yemo Tian cheered out excitedly, "Interesting! Get it for me!"

Ji Hao roared resonantly. The sword light emitting from his arms dazzled suddenly and extended, hacking that Jia Clan warrior into two. Next, Ji Hao turned around and flew back to Yuan Li, leaving a clear stream of light in the air. In the meanwhile, Ji Hao shouted out loud, "Yemo Shayi! Protect the pearl!"

All of a sudden, a blood-red silhouette showed up beside Snow's spirit pearl. That was Dishi Cha. He laughed maliciously while reaching his hand to the pearl.

Yemo Shayi also showed up beside the pearl, no later than Dishi Cha. The sword hung around his waist had already been pulled out of the sheath, sweeping at Dishi Cha along with a dim and heavy stream of light.

Dishi Cha sighed deeply. He had just stepped into the stage of Sun and Moon, and could not yet rival old powerful beings like Yemo Shayi. Helplessly, he quickly stepped back and dodged Yemo Shayi’s fierce attack.

Snow’s spirit pearl bumped into Yuan Li’s arms. Yuan Li held the pearl with both hands, and his eyes were instantly red-rimmed. Heartbreakingly, he wailed with a hoarse voice.

At the same time, Yemo Luoye howled out loud too, as blood spurted out from all over her body.

"Retreat! Retreat! Except for the ones I promised to Marquis Yao, all Dark Sun warriors, protect me and retreat!"

Yemo Luoye screamed weakly, while transforming into a black beam with difficulty, and flying north.

Chapter 1131: A Fight Between the Monkey and the Snake

"Eh!" Yemo Tian frowned, then murmured discontentedly, "I thought she would die directly for breaking a vow!"

With a sullen face, Ji Hao raised his head, looked at Yemo Tian, and said, "She didn't mean to unswear. Everything happened because of you. Therefore, she was just wounded badly, but did not die. However, you, Yemo Tian, you're in trouble."

The golden bridge flashed across the air and sent Ji Hao to Yemo Tian instantly. Ji Hao made the Big Dipper step as he raised the Taiji divine sword. The sword released a sharp sword light while thrusting towards Yemo Tian's erect eye. When the sword light was still a few feet away from Yemo Tian, Ji Hao's strong sword intent had already shredded Yemo Tian's long hair.

Thin, long and bone-deep slashes started to appear on Yemo Tian's face one after another. These wounds were caused by nothing else but Ji Hao's sword intent that came straight from deep down his heart. The Dao of sword that Ji Hao learned was created by Yu Yu, and was the fiercest Dao in Pan Gu world.

All jade accessories tied around Yemo Tian's waist burst with dazzling light. As these powerful defensive treasures cracked, the strange-styled divine emperor cloak glowed with a faint light as well. However, Ji Hao boosted up his power and that divine emperor cloak suddenly transformed into a five-colored cloud that rose straight into the air, abandoning Yemo Tian and flying back towards the heaven.

Only the rulers of the heaven could control a divine emperor robe like this, and the rulers of the heaven had to be admired by the world itself. The cloak Yemo Tian wore was taken directly from the treasury by Gong Gong himself. Now, the cloak sensed that Yemo Tian was under attack and left right away, without showing

any intention to defend him.

Puff! Ji Hao's amazingly sharp sword intent cut Yemo Tian's entire face into pieces. Large streams of blood surged out through his shiny hair, splashed all over the sky.

Yemo Tian screamed in pain. His both legs were softened because of the great fear. He even forgot to trigger the diamond-shaped crystal in his hand — The thing contained in this crystal piece was his ultimate life-saving treasure, the destructive weapon!

The sword light dazzled to before Yemo Tian's erect eye and seemed to penetrate that eye and puncture his head.

Kun Peng abruptly showed up beside Yemo Tian with a dark ice Ruyi gripped in his left hand and a dark short sword holding in his right hand, which was coiled by frigid power streams. From both sides, the two treasures blocked the Taiji divine sword.

"Marquis Yao, you're too powerful and violent." Kun Peng laughed with a creepy voice, "But it's not so easy for you to kill someone right in front of me."

Seeing Kun Peng show his face and shield Yemo Tian, Ji Hao turned around and walked straight away, without saying a word. Kun Peng, this old monster was even stronger than Yemo Shayi. With Ji Hao's current power and the few supreme treasures he had, he could succeed in drawing level with Kun Peng at most, but it would be extremely difficult for him to attain an actual victory.

Therefore, Ji Hao didn't want to waste any time on him. Instead, he walked straight away once he saw Kun Peng.

However, after Ji Hao made a few steps backward, the Taiji divine sword held in his hand, which had restrained the strong sword intent yet never took it back, suddenly swung down. A ten miles long sword light roared across the little Kun Peng bird's neck, the one Yemo Tian was mounted on, which had transformed into its fish shape.

The sword light swirled across. This ten-miles long little Kun Peng bird screamed shrilly before its head was chopped off by Ji Hao's sword. Blood poured down like a storm, instantly, and the bird's body fell down speedily.

"Little Ruyi!" A minute ago, Kun Peng was laughing proudly, but now, he even lost his eyesight temporarily and nearly fell to the ground.

The little Kun Peng bird mounted by Yemo Tian was the youngest great-grandson of Kun Peng, the newest member of his family. Kun Peng loved him a lot.

This little Kun Peng bird called Little Ruyi by Kun Peng hadn't been able to even transform into his bird shape from his fish shape, not to mention a human shape. Normally, he traveled around the world as a large whale, and because of he was a beloved great-grandson of Kun Peng, no one dared to offend him.

But Ji Hao was a brutal one. He failed to kill Yemo Tian, so he conveniently chopped little Ruyi.

Kun Peng's heart twitched in pain. Looking at Little Ruyi's falling corpse, he opened his mouth and let out a mouthful of blood. While trembling, he pointed at Ji Hao and howled hysterically and hoarsely, "Ji Hao! You killed Little Ruyi...I will destroy your Yao Mountain territory! I will..."

Hearing Kun Peng, Ji Hao felt speechless. He turned around, pointed at Kun Peng with his sword, and sneered, "Cut the crap. You want to kill every last one of my family anyway, don't you? Why don't you take an army to attack my Yao Mountain territory instead of yelling here then?

Seeing Kun Peng quickly calm back down, Ji Hao laughed out loud, "But, I bet you don't have the guts to do it! Kun Peng, you always think too much. You must be afraid that a giant trap might be waiting for you in Yao Mountain territory!"

Sneering again, Ji Hao drummed his own chest and continued with a strong voice, "If you dare not to attack Yao Mountain territory, you can lead your army to me! But Kun Peng, can you make the call? Can you raise an army to attack me?"

Kun Pen opened his mouth while his wrinkled face blushed. Abruptly, he took a large step towards Ji Hao.

Yemo Tian screamed out immediately, "You're going nowhere! Stay here and protect me, Kun Peng! Gong Gong told you to ensure my safety, and I've already been wounded seriously! If you ever dare to let me suffer any more harm, I will definitely make your offsprings pay for your mistake!"

Kun Peng quivered, threw a complicated glance at Ji Hao, then gritted his teeth and stepped back to Yemo Tian, his face covered in blood.

Yemo Tian also took a glance at Ji Hao with hatred. Wiping the sticky blood on his bald head, he silently flew up into the sky, quickly heading back to the heaven. It was way too dangerous out here. He would better wait until the flood consumed up all the life-force of the humankind, and softened the hard bones like Ji Hao, then come back down to take revenge.

Dishi Cha was confronting Yemo Shayi. Seeing Yemo Tian leave, he sneered, silently transformed into a blood-red beam, and flashed away.

At the moment, no one but Ji Hao, those warriors he won from Yemo Luoye, and Yuan Li, were left in midair. Yuan Li had been crying heartbreakingly with Snow's spirit pearl held in his hands.

From behind him, a large wave rolled over. Xiang Liu Junior and thousands of strong water-kind spirit creatures in their human shapes raised the great wave and chased up.

While controlling the wave, Xiang Liu Junior yelled loudly, "Snow! Don't be afraid! Your brother Xiang Liu Junior is here to

save you! Haha! Yuan Li, that monkey is soft! But I’m not like him! I will certainly make you safe!"

Xiang Liu Junior gave a big grin and showed his large shiny teeth, while excitedly swaying his long boa tail in the wave.

Yuan Li suddenly burst with a shrill howl. He swiftly dove down from the air, flashed to before Xiang Liu Junior’s face. He pulled out a large iron stick from an unknown source, and smashed heavily on Xiang Liu Junior’s head.

Xiang Liu Junior never thought that Yuan Li would attack him so suddenly. Following a howl, Xiang Liu Junior’s teeth all shattered. Vomiting blood, he was sent a long distance away by Yuan Li.

Chapter 1132: Ice Flood Dragons

Ji Hao stood in midair as he watched Yuan Li bash Xiang Liu Junior away.

Tens of man-shaped spirit boas growled out loud in rage, pulled out their weapons and rushed up to Yuan Li. These spirit boas served the Xiang Liu Family, and Xiang Liu Junior was their young master.

Xiang Liu Family had always been fighting against Wuzhi Qi Family, openly or secretly. Back in the North Sea, conflicts often burst between these two families for resources and territories; undoubtedly, young members of these two families had many reasons to hate each other.

Yuan Li attacked Xiang Liu Junior suddenly, seeing which, those spirit boas immediately launched killing attacks against Yuan Li with glowing-red eyes, as if he had just killed their parents. All kinds of weapons smashed down towards Yuan Li's vital body parts mercilessly.

Yuan Li roared resonantly, wielding the stick so swiftly that made it look even like a black tornado, and started an intense fight against those spirit boas. Metal clangs lingered in the air while blood splashed out of that black tornado from time to time.

Xiang Liu Junior wriggled out of the water while shaking. The few boa-men under his command hurriedly rushed over and attempted to hold him up, but all ended up being whipped away by his long tail. Xiang Liu Junior's teeth were all shattered by Yuan Li with that black stick. Covering his mouth with both hands, Xiang Liu Junior mumblingly shouted, "Beat him to death! Kill this bloody water monkey! I'd like to know who else dares to fight me over Snow!"

Followed by a series of clangs, the weapons held in the hands of those boa-men were sent flying away. In the following moment, an

iron stick flew into the sky, while a boa-man penetrated Yuan Li's stomach with a long spear. Yuan Li was covered in wounds now, and his body was soft and powerless like an empty gunnysack.

The boa-man laughed viciously. He gripped the long spear with both hands and swung fiercely, sending Yuan Li's body high up into the air. Next, the other few boa-men rushed up together, with their weapons aiming at Yuan Li's vital body parts.

"Yemo Shayi, save him!" Seeing Yuan Li was seriously wounded and sent up into the sky, Ji Hao sneered.

Inside Yemo Shayi's eyes, a dense black mist rose, spinning swiftly and transformed into bottomless dark whirlpools, that seemed to devour everything in the world. Yemo Shayi smirked coldly and flashed straight to Yuan Li, pulled out his sword with his left hand, and wielded it easily.

Yemo Shayi's sword was extremely heavy, a typical two-handed sword. However, Yemo Shayi was as nimble and swift as a poisonous snake hiding in a grass wood. Every single sword move made by him could deliver a lethal attack to the enemy in the most impossible way.

The seven to eight boa-men had just stepped into the level of Divine Magi. They saw nothing but a dazzling light flash across the air before they sensed a piercing pain from their hearts, foreheads, and necks simultaneously. Afterward, they all lost their eyesights and fell unconscious.

Yemo Shayi's sword turned purely black. Faintly, cheers rang out of his sword. Meanwhile, the bodies of those wounded boa-men began withering. A series of popping noise was started, followed which, all those boa-men were blown into ashes almost at the same moment.

Their spirit blood, even their souls, were devoured by Yemo Shayi's sword. Visibly, blood-red gleams of light flew into Yemo Shayi's body through the sword. Yemo Shayi took a deep breath.

Suddenly, he straightened up his body, and even his wrinkles faded a little bit, that made him look ten years younger.

"So full!" Yemo Shayi carried Yuan Li, who was now covered in blood, with his right hand, then elegantly bowed to Xiang Liu Junior and the other boa-men as he said, "Thank you for the meal, that was very delicious!"

Xiang Liu Junior's golden pupils immediately shrank to the size of a needlepoint. In both shock and fear, he started at Yemo Shayi and growled out hoarsely, "This...Old man, you, you, you should go find our ancestors. You, how can you slaughter young people like that? Aren't you ashamed?"

Yemo Shayi was a Supreme-level powerful being!

Xiang Liu Junior almost cried out. He didn't have too many Divine-Magus-level warriors under his command, and he had to depend on those Divine-level warriors to kill human beings to achieve his goals and scramble for power in Xiang Liu Family.

But all of a sudden, Yemo Shayi killed seven to eight of those Divine-level warriors he had, which meant half of his top-grade force had evaporated!

Divine-level spirit creatures were not like those weak water-kind spirit creatures, who were basically canon folders. Every divine-level spirit creature had to cultivate itself severely for thousands, even tens of thousands of years. The death of any divine-level spirit creature would be a major damage to his or her clan.

How could they encounter a Supreme-level old freak? These old monsters should never step into the fights between young people! Not to mention the fact that Yemo Shayi was a Yu Clan man, and had absolutely nothing to do with Yuan Li, a water monkey!

The other boa-men were frightened by Yemo Shayi's brutal style. They hurriedly stepped back to Xiang Liu Junior, surrounded him and shielded him. A few of their brothers had died, which didn't

matter. But, if Xiang Liu Junior were killed, they would all die, and that was what really mattered.

"Dear Master!" Yemo Shayi bowed deeply to Ji Hao.

"Give him this!" Ji Hao threw a magic pill to Yemo Shayi, then pointed at Yuan Li.

Yemo Shayi forcibly opened Yuan Li's mouth and put the pill in. Yuan Li coughed intensely, and abruptly let out a stream of blood, then stood back up immediately. He pointed at Xiang Liu Junior and yelled crazily out.

"Xiang Liu Junior! You b*stard! Useless thing! How could you let someone take Snow?! You, you, you..."

Tears flowed out from his red eyes as Yuan Li screamed hoarsely, "You always say that your army is a hundred times stronger than my troop, so you forced Snow to stay with you. But, how could you let someone take her? You b*stard! You rubbish!"

Xiang Liu Junior activated his spirit creature power. Long tusks had already grown out from his jaws.

Hearing Yuan Li, Xiang Liu Junior's eyes sparkled with a dim, weird light. He surely wouldn't tell Yuan Li that he wanted to play 'the hero rescued the beauty', and on purpose let someone take Snow, because that was the only way for him to chase up and save her!

With a dark face, Xiang Liu Junior said in a cold voice, "Who took Snow? Where is he? I'll behead him myself! No one can hurt my Snow right before my face! Whoever dares to touch a hair of Snow, I will crush his entire family!"

Ji Hao clicked his tongue. He could almost read Xiang Liu Junior's mind, 'Childish boy, you messed it up this time. The little flood dragon called Snow is already crumbled by a Jia Clan warrior, with nothing but a spirit pearl remaining.' thought Ji Hao.

In a good way, as long as Snow's spirit pearl remained unharmed, her souls would be safe. If she could find a body to fit her soul, she could live again. What she would lose was nothing more than a part of the original soul.

In a bad way, where could she find a dragon body? And, she had to merge her spirit pearl with the new body within a short period of time. Otherwise, with the passage of time, the original soul contained in the spirit pearl would begin to fade. Then, not even Gods from the heaven could bring Snow back to life.

Xiang Liu Junior wanted to play 'the hero saved the beauty'... And now, he had caused himself such trouble.

Ji Hao was silently criticizing Xiang Liu Junior. Unexpectedly, dense cold clouds rolled over from the north. Along with frigid gales, large flakes of snow drifted all over the sky. Faintly visible, within those dense cold clouds, a large group of enormous flood dragons approached speedily.

"The ice flood dragon family from the North Sea?" Ji Hao popped out his eyes in shock, "One of Gong Gong's eight senior ministers is called Devil Flood Dragon King, and he seems to be the ruler of all ice flood dragons." murmured Ji Hao.

Chapter 1133: The Flood Dragon King from the North Sea

The cold clouds came closer and closer, as Ji Hao sensed an abrupt temperature drop. He didn't only feel the coldness from the outside, he also sensed a strange, fierce chill from the inside, coming from the deepest area of his soul, which seemed to freeze his soul.

His body turned a little frigid, and his mind slowed down.

Ji Hao was shocked. He hurriedly activated his extremely negative power, which was the strongest negative power in the world. After he filled his body up with the extremely negative power, all the uncomfortable feelings faded instantly. However, Ji Hao noticed that all those non-humankind warriors he won from Yemo Luoye now had a thick layer of ice crystal covered on their armors.

"Draw back to a hundred miles away! Make battle formations! Prepare for the fight!" Ji Hao gave a deep shout while pointing at the water city.

A hundred thousand elite non-humankind warriors that Ji Hao won from Yemo Luoye, kneeled on one knee and saluted to Ji Hao. Then, they formed a battle formation, transformed into a dark shadow, and speedily moved backward.

Yemo Shayi waved his hands and told his families to retreat along with those warriors, while he stayed beside Ji Hao. Narrowing his eyes, he silently observing those dark-blue, glistening flood dragons, which were faintly visible in those cold clouds.

Ji Hao had also been looking at that army of flood dragon, curiously and vigilantly.

Gong Gong had eight senior ministers under his command.

Among them, Kun Peng, Xiang Liu, Wuzhi Qi were the most famous ones, while Snake Xiu, Henggong fish and the other few mostly stayed in their nests back in North Sea all year round, cultivating themselves, and were less well-known.

However, among those eight senior ministers of Gong Gong, the most unknown one was definitely the Flood Dragon King from the North Sea. He was also the most mysterious one, with an inscrutable power.

Ji Hao had read from some secret records kept in the Magi Palace. Powerful human ancestors once said that the North Sea Flood Dragon King had nothing in common with ordinary flood dragons in Pan Gu world. The North Seal Flood Dragon King looked like a flood dragon, but in fact, he should be another magical type of creature; he might even not be a local creature of Pan Gu world.

The North Sea Flood Dragon King had rarely shown his power. Back in the golden age of the ancient heaven, when Gong Gong Family hadn't become the dominator of the Northern Wasteland, he easily defeated the North Sea Dragon God, who was conferred by the heaven, and occupied the coldest ice sea area in the North Sea as his territory. As far as human beings knew, that was the only time he fought someone.

That dragon God he defeated was the seventh son of the Dragon Emperor at that time. The North Sea Dragon God had his pair of horns broken, and scales pulled off by the Flood Dragon King. He rushed back to his home in the East Sea, and cried to the Dragon Emperor. The Dragon Emperor was infuriated, so he took eight dragon kings and twenty-four dragon generals and marched to the North Sea, attempting to get justice back for his seventh son.

As for the result, there was none.

The Dragon Emperor marched straight to the North Sea, yet returned to the East Sea with his strong army and a low profile.

The seventh dragon prince indignantly went to the heaven, resigned as the North Sea Dragon God, and took the position of the Ji Water God in the Midland. Then, he brought his people down from the heaven and built an underwater city in Ji Water. Afterward, he never mentioned about what happened back in the North Sea for the rest of his life.

The Flood Dragon King was powerful enough to rival the ancient dragon-kind, which had been swollen with arrogance. It was not hard to imagine how powerful he was, and how strong was the ice flood family under his lead.

At the moment, the ice flood family raised the cold clouds and rushed over furiously. This looked no good. Ji Hao silently activated the Taiji Cloak, the Taiji Universe Mirror and the golden bridge, preparing for everything that might happen.

A dragon roar could be heard. Following the roar, the cold clouds suddenly split up. Eight hundred-miles-long blue ice flood dragons with glistening, crystal-like scales, hovered in midair. They quickly transformed into eight strong and handsome men, wearing blue colored heavy armors.

These men shouted out resonantly. Along with their voices, the cold clouds shrunk, and transformed into a blue ice cloud that paved in the sky. Behind the eight men, whole three-thousand ice flood dragons raised their heads, each letting out a frigid airstream towards the sky. They also transformed into heavily armored warriors and lined up orderly.

From the ice cloud, large blue ice crystals darted up, and gathered speedily along with a shrill noise, becoming a mountain-like ice block. Within the crystal clear ice block, a blue flood dragon with five claws curled quietly in the middle.

Gasping deeply, the five-clawed blue flood dragon slowly opened his eyes. On his head, between the eight angular horns, a smooth, round-shaped blue crystal sparkled and released a frigid airstream.

Next, a middle-aged man, who had blue hair and eyebrows and purely dark eyes, walked out of the ice block wearing a long white robe, flying straight to Ji Hao.

Yuan Li paused in shock. His ape face twisted badly as he tremblingly kneeled to the middle-aged man and said, "Uncle Flood Dragon!"

Xiang Liu Junior even screamed when he saw the middle-aged man. With a pale face, he kneeled to that man from a distance away and yelled, "Flood Dragon King, listen to me, I brought Snow out with good intent. She was so bored in the North Sea, so I brought her out to see the human world..."

The middle-aged man took a glance at Yuan Li, then his eyes shone as he gazed at Snow's spirit pearl, which was held in Yuan Li's hands.

He then turned around and expressionlessly shouted at Xiang Liu Junior, "See the human world? The human world is a vast water now, what's the difference between here and the North Sea? What do you want her to see in here? Those corroded corpses of human beings and terrestrial animals?"

He reached his hand towards Xiang Liu Junior and continued word by word, "Since you convinced Snow to come to Midland... Where is Snow now?"

Xiang Liu Junior was frightened to death. Quivering and stuttering, he couldn't say a word. He couldn't tell that the Flood Dragon King that Snow was protected by his army, but because he wanted to play 'the hero saved the beauty', he let a non-humankind warrior take Snow on purpose, yet after that, he failed to save her. Instead, he started a fight against Yuan Li.

"Where is Snow? Where is she?" The Flood Dragon King continued expressionlessly, "If she is alive, I want to see her. If she is dead, I want to see her body. Where is she?"

Xiang Liu Junior’s face twitched intensely. With a hoarse voice, he responded, "No, she won’t die, she won’t die. Snow is just kidnapped by someone, but nothing will happen to her! Flood Dragon, listen to me, Snow..."

The Flood Dragon King took a long breath, then let it back out.

A white and misty gust of wind blew out from the Flood Dragon King’s mouth and froze all boa-men around Xiang Liu Junior. Following a series of creaking noise, the ice cracked. Thousands of boa men, including quite a few divine-level ones, all shattered into small pieces, floating on the water surface.

The bodies were shattered, and the souls perished. Those boa-men died immediately, without leaving a trace.

Xiang Liu Junior’s hundred-meter-long snake tail was frozen as well. Strands of cold mist were spreading to his man-shaped upper body.

The Flood Dragon King then continued with a frosty voice, "You said nothing will happen to her... So...what is this?!"

The Flood Dragon King crooked his finger. Following his move, the blue spirit pearl darted out from Yuan Li’s hands and flew into his hand, along with a dim light stream.

Chapter 1134: The Only Child

Silver-cold strands of ice mist flew out from the Flood Dragon King's fingers and transformed into a small cloud, that held Snow's spirit pearl up.

Inside the blue spirit pearl, a tiny, light-silver flood dragon was faintly visible, crying with a slight voice. Hearing the tiny flood-dragon cry, the Flood Dragon King's cold face was added with an intent of killing.

Ji Hao glanced at Xiang Liu Junior, who had a big half of his body frozen. He also thought of those boa-men, who were frozen by a breath of the Flood Dragon King, then shattered. Hurriedly, Ji Hao sent his spirit power backward, by using which, he ordered all Jia Clan warriors to draw back again, straight to the water city.

Through his spiritual power, he also told Shaosi and Hao Tao to let this non-humankind army into the city and accommodate them.

The Flood Dragon King turned around and emotionlessly glanced at Ji Hao. An especially strong and heavy, ice-berg-like spirit power came to Ji Hao and coiled around his body. It attempted to drill into his body and scan him.

Without hesitating, Ji Hao activated the nine dragons chariot that belonged to the East Emperor Taiyi. A splendid, violent golden-red light shone from his entire body. Touching the golden-red light, the Flood Dragon King's spirit power immediately drew back like a startled shrimp.

The Flood Dragon King gritted his teeth and threw a threatening glance at Ji Hao, then snorted and said in a deep voice, "East Emperor Taiyi, that old bastard...Did he leave anything in this world? Did he die? Or did he fake his death and went away?"

Ji Hao paused briefly. Of course, East Emperor Taiyi had died.

Wuzhi Qi witnessed Taiyi's death, which was the reason why he found Taiyi's nine dragons chariot and divine seal where Taiyi died. But what did the Flood Dragon mean? Could anyone ever deceive Wuzhi Qi? Was there anything that no one in the world knows?

Smiling faintly, Ji Hao cupped his hands to the Flood Dragon King, then stood aside quietly.

He wanted to see the end of this. He wanted to know what the Flood Dragon King would do to Xiang Liu Junior and Yuan Li. The ice flood dragon family from the North Sea, added with Wuzhi Qi Family and Xiang Liu Family, that was a small half of Gong Gong's main force. If an internal conflict burst between these three families, that would be wonderful to the humankind.

Ji Hao even wanted to tell everyone in the world about this, 'Oi, come over and have a look! Xiang Liu's stupid boy got the North Sea Flood Dragon King's daughter killed! Look, look at her! The Flood Dragon King's daughter died so miserably with disgrace, what a tragedy!' That was what Ji Hao would like to tell the whole world.

Making and spreading rumors, creating troubles, these things were evil and immoral. But for the humankind... Ji Hao silently sighed heavily. For the future of the humankind, sometimes, one had to do some evil and immoral things.

In the spirit pearl, Snow's soul told the Flood Dragon King about everything she had been through. The Flood Dragon King glanced at Ji Hao one again, then looked at Xiang Liu Junior, then turned to Yuan Li at last.

"Little monkey, you're a good boy. You knew that you were not powerful enough, so you tried to convince Snow to stay in the North Sea instead of coming to Midland...Snow has a friend like you, it's good." The Flood Dragon King nodded to Yuan Li. An extremely faint warmth was added to his speaking tone.

Afterward, the Flood Dragon King looked at Ji Hao and said, "Marquis Yao...Ji Hao? You're a good person, I owe you one. I don't care what relationship you have with Yuan Li, you risked your life and faced a Sun and Moon Stage non-humankind being for Snow. I'll remember what you have done for Snow."

Turning slowly around, the Flood Dragon stared at Xiang Liu Junior and continued in a frigid tone, "Now, seriously, Xiang Liu Junior, I isolated myself to focus on getting through a major natural trial, and you took that as an opportunity. You took Snow to Midland, yet you failed to protect her. Now, she has lost her body, and only a weak soul of hers remains. Can you explain?"

Xiang Liu Junior opened his mouth, but still couldn't say a word.

His long tail was frozen, and the ice power had been extending to his upper body. The bone-piercing coldness had drilled into his internal organs, which made him tremble ceaselessly. Moreover, an even fiercer coldness was coming from his soul. Deep down, he clearly understood that he had caused a giant trouble for himself and the entire Xiang Liu Family.

"Uncle..." Xiang Liu Junior struggled to explain.

"You think you can call me uncle?" The Flood Dragon King flicked his finger and sent a cold beam of light to Xiang Liu Junior. Right in the next moment, the foot-long tip of Xiang Liu Junior's tail was shattered.

His lower body was sealed in ice, therefore, he didn't sense any pain. But watching a part of his body shattered, exposing his bones, muscles, blood veins, and tendons, Xiang Liu Junior was scared to death. Large drops of tears suddenly gushed out of his eyes sockets, but instantly froze into ice beads.

"I am a rare creature in this world. Since the beginning of the world, I have been alone. These ice flood dragons were ordinary flood dragons in the North Sea. I gifted them with a drop of my spirit blood and allowed them to become ice flood dragons, but

their bloodline power is no better than ten-thousandth of mine."

"It has been countless centuries. I have many wives, but only Snow's mother, as the only Chi in the world, was pregnant for me for a million years, then gave birth to Snow, my only child."

The Flood Dragon King still sounded cold as ice, completely emotionless. Therefore, Ji Hao couldn't tell for sure that if he were as calm as he sounded like, or actually as raging as an erupting volcano.

But, he wouldn't have a good mood, would he?

Since the prehistorical era, Snow was the only child he ever had...Nevertheless, because of Xiang Liu Junior, Snow had now lost her body. The Flood Dragon King should be infuriated.

Coughing sightly, Ji Hao said in a calming voice, "As a man, don't promise anyone anything if you're not capable enough to fulfill your promises. See, you messed it up, didn't you? Snow was such a lovely girl!"

A strong coldness instantly rose from Flood Dragon King's eyes. He slowly nodded, and responded with a deep voice, "Indeed, she was such a lovely girl. I spoiled her too much. Her mother died when she was little. No one else in the ice flood dragon family could ever restrain her. Therefore, when I wasn't there, she was easily tempted, left the North Sea and came here... to die!"

Xiang Liu Junior weakly screamed, "Flood Dragon King, I, I, I meant well! I..."

The Flood Dragon King stared at Xiang Liu Junior, and remained emotionless as he said, "You meant well? Xiang Liu Junior, I should have eaten you back then when you visited Snow for the first time."

Sighing slightly, the Flood Dragon King raised his right hand and launched a palm attack to Xiang Liu Junior from a long distance away.

"You die. Then, I'll go find the old Xiang Liu bastard, and let him explain to me!"

Chapter 1135: Flood Dragons and Snakes

A cold beam of light flashed across the sky. Wrapped in the light beam was a fist-sized, sharp ice flake, darting towards Xiang Liu Junior's head.

Xiang Liu Junior screamed out loud. He had been suppressed by the Flood Dragon King the whole time, but at this life-and-death moment, he suddenly overcame the great fear he had towards the Flood Dragon King and showed his real face.

Following the sizzling noise, a one-hundred-mile long, slim Xiang Liu snake showed up. The Xiang Liu snake had one tail and nine different colored heads. After Xiang Liu Junior showed his real face, a dark-blue head of his swung up and raised giant waves.

Along with the muffled water-clattering noise, a giant water wall rose that shielded Xiang Liu Junior behind. A snow-white head of his opened its jaws and released a frigid airstream, freezing the thick water wall instantly.

"Flood Dragon King, how can you kill me so easily?" Xiang Liu Junior yelled at the Flood Dragon King while shaking his nine heads. No one knew where he got that courage from.

The ice flakes sent out by the Flood Dragon King heavily struck on the ice wall and generated a clear cracking noise, creating a water-tank-sized hold on the ice wall. The edge of that hole was perfectly smooth.

The ice flake punctured the ice wall and landed fiercely on Xiang Liu Junior's tail, penetrating his body.

The ice flake was aimed at Xiang Liu Junior's head, and was powerful enough to take his life right away. However, at the moment, Xiang Liu Junior had turned enormous, with a miles thick tail. The small ice flake left a water-tank-sized hole on his body, but to Xiang Liu Junior, this injury was no worse than

having a toothpick pierced into his palm; it was nothing.

A faint layer of ice crystal spread out from the wound, releasing a bone-piercing cold power, which made Xiang Liu Junior's tail stiff and inflexible.

That snow-white head of his instantly turned around. Facing the wound, he opened the jaws and took a long, deep gasp. Strands of ice crystals flew out from the wound, into that large mouth of his. Soon, the ice around the wound began melting, and a thin stream of blood flew out from the wound. Xiang Liu Junior twisted his enormous body while new flesh and skin grew out speedily in the puncturing wound. The wound seemed to recover in no time.

"Xiang Liu Junior, you do have guts!" The Flood King growled deeply, "You even have more guts than that old Xiang Liu b*stard!"

"I'm not afraid of you!" Xiang Liu Junior opened his large mouths, spurting out different colored venoms while staring at the Flood Dragon King as he laughed viciously, "I respect you, old man, for Snow's sake...Now that Snow has become a dead soul, I have no chance to sleep with her, and you don't have another daughter. So, why should I still respect you then?"

Yemo Shayi and Ji Hao glanced at each other. Silently, Ji Hao straightened his thumb, 'How could he talk like that? That old Xiang Liu has truly taught his offsprings something, and this Xiang Liu Junior is indeed 'extraordinary'!'

Yuan Li leaped up in anger. He roared towards the sky as his body suddenly expanded to around six hundred meters tall. Carrying that huge iron stick, he pointed at Xiang Liu Junior, growled, "Xiang Liu Junior! You're such a b*stard!"

Xiang Liu Junior spat loudly to the water. Followed a sizzling noise, a large number of fishes floated up, with their bellies facing the sky. Xiang Liu Junior's saliva was highly poisonous, and wherever it reached, countless water-kind creatures were poisoned to death.

He stared at Yuan Li and shouted, "B*stard? Your father is Wuzhi Qi, and your mother is a human Maguspriest, a human being! You half-monkey and half-human little thing. Don’t you think that you’re a b*stard too?" Spitting again, Xiang Liu Junior continued, "Don’t pretend in front of me! You’ve been trying to get close to Snow and make her happy too. Isn’t that because you want to sleep with her?"

Yuan Li was enraged. He screamed shrilly as he raised the large iron stick, seeming to start a life-risking fight against Xiang Liu Junior.

Ji Hao hurriedly waved his hand. The Taiji Universe mirror released beams of clear light, transformed into glowing ropes that tied Yuan Li up. Loudly, Ji Hao said to Yuan Li, "Yuan Li, what are you doing? The North Sea Flood Dragon King is right here, and you’re not needed.This silly snake is dead."

The Flood Dragon King threw a cold glance at Ji Hao, then gritted his teeth tight which even caused a creaking noise. Ji Hao was obviously stirring up trouble, as he was afraid that this might end too soon and too quietly...But, the Flood Dragon King didn’t care if this would get too intense or not. Something happened to Snow, and the Flood Dragon King had to kill someone to vent his fury!

Xiang Liu Junior was probably out of his mind, or simply frightened too much by the Flood Dragon King. He actually straightened up his half body, and almost reached his nine heads into the dark clouds in the sky.

Shaking his long, slim necks, he screamed hoarsely, "Flood Dragon King... do you think that I’m afraid of you? You’re nothing special! You’re just like my old ancestor, he’s also one of the eight senior ministers under Gong Gong’s command. With our old ancestor protecting us, no one from our Xiang Liu Family will take you seriously!"

The Flood Dragon King's eyes turned green in rage. Even his original body, that blue ice flood dragon which stayed inside the giant ice block, opened its eyes. Two blue, frigid beams of light darted out of those large eyes that locked on Xiang Liu Junior.

The Flood Dragon King gritted his teeth and sneered, "Hehe... hehe... So, you Xiang Liu snakes see me as...Hehe, hehe... I like being quiet, and don't like traveling around. I occupied the ice sea area, then focused on my own cultivation, never wanting to cause any trouble."

Taking a deep breath, the Flood Dragon King continued murmuring, "Gong Gong Family went to Northern Wasteland and tried to occupy the entire Northern Wasteland, to be the dominator. At first, we were equal; we were like neighbors, never disturbing each other. Once, I was crossing a ten-thousand-year natural trial, and I failed, almost having my soul perished. That old Gong Gong concocted a blood pill with his own spirit blood and saved my life."

Xiang Liu Junior popped out all his eighteen eyes while slowly shaking his nine heads. He never knew the Flood Dragon King's past. In his eyes, the Flood Dragon King was the same as Xiang Liu, his old ancestor, because they both were senior ministers of Gong Gong. He never heard that the Flood Dragon King chose to serve Gong Gong Family only because an old Gong Gong saved his life!

"My life is so precious. Old Gong Gong saved my life, and I have to pay a debt of gratitude. Therefore, I took the cold flood dragon family and joined Gong Gong's force. However, I was never beneath Gong Gong, and I am respected by every generation of Gong Gong!" The Flood Dragon King sneered with a dark cold face, "I was keeping a low profile, and was being generous. But in the eyes of young creatures like you, I have become weak and soft. How dare you cast your lascivious eyes on my daughter?!"

The sky turned white, and so did the water surface and the surrounding air.

Icebergs emerged from the air, while chilly wind roared out from between them. The air temperature suddenly dropped to an unbearable level. Surrounded by the awfully cold air, even Ji Hao quivered for a few times in a row!

Ji Hao was shocked, looking at the Flood Dragon King who had been releasing torrents of frigid airstreams from his body, ‘Is this the power of the Flood Dragon King?’ thought Ji Hao.

The Flood Dragon King had forcibly separated a small space from Pan Gu world and turned it into a frozen zone, a small world of ice and snow.

A slight sigh came from the air, then a scrawny silhouette emerged before Xiang Liu Junior. That was Xiang Liu. Standing before Xiang Liu Junior, he seriously bowed to the Flood Dragon King and said, "Flood Dragon King, for my sake, please spare his life... for this time only."

Chapter 1136: An Unpleasant Conversation

Ji Hao silently activated his spirit power. Wave after wave, he sent his spirit power to every corner of this small world which was ruled by the Flood Dragon King.

Chilly airstreams swished all over the ground. Cold light dazzled, as sharp as blades and swords. Icebergs drifted across each other along strange, complicated tracks. Occasionally, those icebergs would bump against each other and generate soft waves of thunder power, bursting out.

Ji Hao scanned this mysterious small world with his spirit power and uncovered some basic secrets of it. Silver-blue spell symbols flashed swiftly in the air, leaving countless silver-blue light beams that covered this small world.

These spell symbols were anciently and simply styled, completely different from all spell symbols Ji Hao knew about. Those spell symbols were not created by the humankind or the non-humankind. These were either prehistorical natural spell symbols or ancient spirit creature spell symbols, or divine spell symbols from the ancient heaven.

Ji Hao silently memorized these silver-blue spell symbols. In the future, if he could understand them and merge them with his great Dao of Yin, he would certainly gain a further improvement.

The Flood Dragon King’s voice could suddenly be heard, and this entire small world responded to him. Countless palm-sized, sharp, hexagon-shaped snowflakes screamed down from the sky, hovering swiftly around Xiang Liu and Xiang Liu Junior. Those sharp ice flakes transformed into a while tornado that wrapped both of them up. These ice flakes hit against each other in the air and caused loud metal-clangs. Based on this sound, it was not hard to imagine how strong and sharp these snowflakes were.

"Xiang Liu, cut the crap!" The Flood Dragon King said blandly,

"My only child has died. You kill every last one of your offspring and turn yourself into a childless one like me, and we'll call it even."

All Ji Hao's fine hairs stood straight up, as he quivered instantly in both coldness and shock.

Yemo Shayi raised his eyebrows and said in a low voice, in surprise, "So aggressive! Back then, when my kind invaded this world, we never encountered this Flood Dragon King on battlefields...Today, I have learned that he surely is a terrifying enemy."

"I like his style!" said Ji Hao, also in a low voice. "Isn't he right? Everything that happens in this world should be fair. The Flood Dragon King's only child is died because of Xiang Liu Junior, so, all Xiang Liu's offsprings should be buried with the dead. That would be the fairest thing ever."

Once again, the Flood Dragon King glanced at Ji Hao, he slowly nodded. He couldn't agree with Ji Hao more. As the Flood Dragon King, he never bullied anyone; all he wanted was fairness and justice, nothing more.

Xiang Liu's face twisted in anger; his eyes had almost fallen out of his eye sockets. He stared at Ji Hao and shouted, "This is...Marquis Yao Ji Hao, one day, I will flatten your Yao Mountain city for what you said today! You're causing yourself troubles!"

Ji Hao spread his hands and said in a carefree tone, "Xiang Liu, say that to me after you have dealt with the Flood Dragon King's fury. Then, if you still have the interest to come visit my Yao Mountain City, you are most welcome!"

Xiang Liu's face twisted again. At last, he turned to the Flood Dragon King, grinned bitterly and said, "Flood Dragon King, no one wanted this to happen...This is just a misunderstanding. If you can change your request, I'll do whatever you want."

The Flood Dragon King narrowed his eyes and responded coldly, "Good, your children can live, and you kill yourself! My little girl Snow has lost her life, so you are going to give your old life back to me. After you have died, I won't harm your families."

Xiang Liu had a large stream of blood choked in his throat. He opened his mouth, and swallowed the blood back down with difficulty.

Kill all his offsprings or himself? Neither of these two options the Flood Dragon King offered was acceptable to Xiang Liu. His scrawny body trembled slightly, while his twisted triangle-shaped eyes sparkled with a green light. He looked the Flood Dragon King and said with an unfriendly tone, "Flood Dragon King, you talk like that, does it mean that you're not going to give any respect?"

The Flood Dragon King responded with a deep, ice-cold voice, "Why should I respect you? You don't want your offsprings to die, but what about my Snow?"

He didn't finish his speech; instead, he waved his hands with flagging interest and continued blandly, "I don't like verbal battles, I only like physical battles. Since we're not having a good conversation, you shall die!"

The Flood Dragon King raised his head and let out a resonant dragon roar. In the air, fierce cold airstreams condensed into countless ice daggers and other weapons, along with numberless heavily armored warriors. Along with a sky-freezing aura, this ice army marched towards Xiang Liu and Xiang Liu Junior.

Xiang Liu and Xiang Liu Junior were still wrapped in a tornado of snowflakes. All of a sudden, those snowflakes darted inward and hacked violently down, raising countless, extremely thin, frigid beams.

Xiang Liu roared in rage, then shouted, "Flood Dragon King, if you hadn't isolated yourself to get through the natural trial, I would surely flee away once I saw you...But during your ten-

thousand-year natural trial, you still dared to attack me with a primordial spirit clone of yours...Don't blame me for being too coldhearted, because I have no choice!"

An awful stink speedily spread out, strong enough to knock people to the ground. Within a light-green mist, Xiang Liu showed his real face — A ten-thousand-miles-long, nine-headed serpent!

Compared to Xiang Liu Junior, whose scales were smooth and clear, whose body was filled with life-force, Xiang Liu was dirty and messy. His mottled scales were covered with a thick layer of sticky fluid. Large amounts of fluid had been oozing out of his scales, flowing to everywhere with that horrible stink.

Xiang Liu's real body was withered and wrinkled, looking like an old zombie which was buried in a corroded coffin along with countless decayed corpses for hundreds of years old. He looked rotten, old, withered.

Ji Hao felt unconformable only because he took a quick glance at Xiang Liu's real body. He felt soft and powerless, as if he were suddenly a hundred years older. In a panic, Ji Hao made his heart drum for two-hundred times and sent the magical Chaos blood of his to his entire body. In ten whole breaths, Ji Hao finally freed himself from that 'old' feeling.

All ice weapons and ice warriors darting to Xiang Liu melted into sticky liquid and fell when Xiang Liu showed his real face.

"Flood Dragon King...A drop of your spirit blood created the family of ice flood dragon in the North Sea. These ice flood dragons are no worse than pure-blood dragons." Xiang Liu opened his nine mouths and said with nine hoarse voices in chorus, "I've been thinking about it for tens of thousands of years, if I drank all your spirit blood, how strong will I become?"

While smirking, Xiang Liu continued with that creepy voice, "But you're too powerful, and I can't be your rival. Therefore, I told Xiang Liu Junior to approach from your precious daughter ...What

a shame, what a shame! She was such a beautiful girl, but the body was destroyed...Waste, what a waste!"

The Flood Dragon King stared at Xiang Liu with a complicated look. "I see. Hehe...You miscalculated one thing." said the Flood Dragon King with a deep voice, "Even though I am in the middle of my major natural trial, you still can’t be my rival!"

Endless cold power gathered towards the Flood Dragon King. The cold power quickly condensed into a tens of thousands of miles long ice flood dragon. The Flood Dragon King gathered the cold power and created a body for himself, then roared thunderously and pounced on Xiang Lu.

Chapter 1137: Cut Xiang Liu Junior

The air vibrated as strong gales roared.

Two tens of thousands of miles long enormous creatures coiled their bodies together like crazy lovers. Without casting any magic, and with pure instinctive violence, they bit each other, scratched each other, and soon quaked the earth and the sky.

Both Xiang Liu and the Flood Dragon King were afraid that they might accidentally injure their own people because of their world-destroying style of fighting. Therefore, they soon broke the space and rushed up to above the sky to continue their battle. Three-thousand ice flood dragons were left down here to guard the Flood Dragon King’s true body, the one sealed in the giant ice block. Xiang Liu Junior was left down here as well, spurting poisonous gases and venoms.

Ji Hao chuckled. He sent the Taiji Universe mirror back into his body, then threw a heavy kick on Yuan Li’s back and, sent him to Xiang Liu Junior.

"Little monkey, if you want to revenge, do it! This thing got your beloved girl killed, so you shall kill him!" Ji Hao shouted while rushing to Xiang Liu Junior along with a clear beam of light, "You do whatever you want, and I’ll help!"

Yemo Shayi chuckled coldly. He flashed across the air, transformed into a thin dark shadow, and quickly merged with Ji Hao’s shadow. Ji Hao was helping Yuan Li, while Yemo Shayi was helping Ji Hao. As a new slave of Ji Hao, Yemo Shayi knew how to ingratiate himself into the master’s favor, and how to earn better treatment for himself and his families.

In a distance away, eight ice flood dragon commanders glanced at Ji Hao and Yuan Li, raised their hands and made a few signs. Instantly, a troop of ice flood dragon warriors trod on cold gales and dashed over, making a large circle in the air to surround Xiang

Liu Junior from a distance away.

These ice flood dragon warriors had shown a very clear attitude — If Ji Hao and Yuan Li failed to kill Xiang Liu Junior, they would do it themselves; Xiang Liu Junior could never survive, no matter what.

Nine enormous snakeheads of Xiang Liu Junior had been rampantly releasing poisonous gases and venoms. Crazily, Xiang Liu Junior barked at Yuan Li, "Come! Come fight me! Yuan Li, you stupid water monkey, I bet you can’t harm a hair of mine!"

Yuan Li roared towards the sky. He was hundreds of meters tall now. Raising that huge iron stick, Yuan Li started a fierce gale as he swung it violently down towards the middle head of Xiang Liu Junior. His long silver fur fluttered in the air,as a strange silver light had been flashing across his body. In the sky, twelve silhouettes of Yuan Li suddenly emerged. Each silhouette left shreds of afterimages in the air while flashing towards Xiang Liu Junior together.

Xiang Liu Junior was confused. Yuan Li had brought the extremely negative power under control, for which reason, he was magically nimble and swift, and a master of transformation. In terms of moving speed and transformation skills, Xiang Liu Junior was much weaker than Yuan Li.

Xiang Liu Junior’s eighteen eyeballs rolled quickly in his eye sockets, but still failed to see Yuan Li’s real body clearly. He largely opened his mouths and spurt out a stream of venom towards each of the twelve sliver, sparkling silhouettes of Yuan Li, as fast as he could.

The twelve silhouette faded simultaneously while Yuan Li silently popped out from behind one of the heads of Xiang Liu Junior and thudded his meters thick iron stick thunderously on that giant head while raising a strong gust of wind.

Scales shattered and blood splashed; that head of Xiang Liu

Junior was nearly blown up. The skin and scales were gone, exposing his dark-green skull. This strike of Yuan Li was extremely violent, as it created a hundred-meters wide, spider-net-like series of cracks on Xiang Liu Junior's head.

Brain and blood sprayed out from those cracks on Xiang Liu Junior's head. The destructive pain squeezed streams of tears out of all eighteen eye sockets of his simultaneously. He screamed in pain, madly swinging nine giant heads and swaying his long tail, whipping the water surface along with a shrill swishing noise.

Yuan Li moved swiftly. Like a ghost, he was flashing around Xiang Liu Junior, dodging every crazy attack launched by him. The poisonous gases couldn't touch him, neither could those venoms. Xiang Liu Junior's nine heads quickly incanted spells, launching thunderbolts, dark ice, flood, raging fire and all kinds of fierce attacks. But still, he failed to touch even a hair of Yuan Li.

Xiang Liu Junior was strong and talented; in any battlefield, Xiang Liu Junior could be powerful enough to destroy a heavily armored army with his real body. However, Yuan Li, this nimble water ape, was his invincible opponent. Yuan Li was way too agile; with the extremely negative power, he could hide and move in an unpredictable way. No matter how hard Xiang Liu Junior tried, he could not bring Yuan Li any harm.

Yuan Li's large iron stick started another fierce gale, roaring towards Xiang Liu Junior over and over again, until Xiang Liu Junior was covered in wounds. His scales were shattered, and muscles were torn apart; in many areas of his body, squirming internal organs and dark-green bones were exposed.

Within a couple of breaths, Xiang Liu Junior was already injured severely. Yuan Li bashed straight on his few mouths and broke countless teeth of his. That made Xiang Liu Junior hiss towards the sky in pain, with tears splashing out of his eyes like fountains.

"Yuan Li! You coward! Don't dodge! Fight me with your

strength!" Xiang Liu Junior screamed, "Why are you leaping around? You’re not a man! You’re not a decent man! You dare not to fight me face to face!"

Yuan Li continued bashing Xiang Liu Junior’s body with his iron stick, with a dark face.

Ji Hao had been watching from aside. Hearing Xiang Liu Junior, he laughed out loud. Then, he pulled out the Taiji divine sword, opened his mouth, and breathed a stream of extremely negative power onto it. Instantly, the eight-feet-long sword started expanding speedily, reaching hundreds of meters long within a blink of an eye. By now, this giant sword was perfect for Yuan Li’s hundreds of meters tall body.

Ji Hao pushed the sword to Yuan Li, along with a cold beam of light.

Ji Hao laughed again and said, "Yuan Li, why don’t you fight him with your strength? I’m lending you my sword, do it!"

Yuan Li dropped his large iron stick, which had no other advantages other than being heavy, then swung his arm backward and caught the sword. Gripping the sword hilt with both hands, Yuan Li burst with a resonant roar, then hacked down towards a head of Xiang Liu Junior.

Ji Hao had injected a supreme sword intent that he attained through learning Yu Yu’s sword art, into the sword. When Yuan Li wielded the sword, the hundreds of meters long sword released a tens of miles long sword light which split the air as it descended.

Xiang Liu Junior excitedly stared at Yuan Li, who finally decided to fight him face to face. He put his nine heads together and released thunderbolts, venoms, poisonous gases and all kinds of attacks together, creating a nine-colored torrent that swooshed towards the sword.

A gleam of light flashed across the sword. As the Yu Yu sword

intent spread out, the nine-colored torrent collapsed and transformed into dense, dark mist, which drifted away along the wind.

The sword light dazzled, then a loud puffing noise could be heard; A sharp sword power could be sensed everywhere while Xiang Liu Junior was chopped into thousands of pieces by Yuan Li with a single hack.

The Taiji divine sword was so powerful that even his soul didn’t manage to flee before it was shredded along with his body.

From the higher sky, Xiang Liu’s furious roar descended, "Yuan Li! You’re killing yourself!"

Ji Hao laughed out loud. He swiftly grabbed back the Taiji divine sword, then dragged Yuan Li and walked straight away.

Chapter 1138: A Philosophical Problem

Ji Hao dragged Yuan Li back into the water city. Yuan Li's mind wasn't clear at the moment.

Countless water-kind creatures had still been crazily rushing to the altar, which had the dragon blood pill placed on it. More and more powerful, oddly shaped water-kind creatures emerged, such as three-headed flying fishes, seven-tailed water snakes, a water centipede with eighteen wings, mountain-huge salamanders... These water-kind spirit creatures were weird-looking, and their powers were strange and rare as well. If this area was a real battlefield, Ji Hao's elite human force would definitely suffer severe damage.

However, facing the Pan Gu Defense magic formation, these water-kind spirit creatures didn't manage to harm even a single human warrior. They could only rush to the dragon blood pill through the path that Ji Hao built on purpose, and suffer violent attacks launched by human warriors. Magus Palace Magi had spread all kinds of magic poisons and cast fierce spells in the water city, making countless water-kind spirit creatures fall on their way to the dragon blood pill.

When Ji Hao returned to the city, Yu Mu had been shouting loudly, directing over a hundred Magus Kings to drag a three-hundred-mile-long dragon whale into the city with some solid difficulties.

Large groups of human warriors rushed up like a group of ants. They peeled this divine-level dragon whale, pulled out its tendons, then chopped it into large pieces and delivered into the storage. A few Magi Palace Magi followed them into the storage. Soon, a strong cold power came from the storage, as these Magi cast a magic and froze the entire place. Thus, the meat of the dragon whale could be stored for at least half a year, without going bad.

Water-kind spirit creatures rushed up wave after wave, while human warriors killed them one by one. Yu Mu led the group of Magus Kings and dragged those giant ones into the city, cleaning and chopping them up.

Ji Hao felt that this place didn't look like a battlefield. Instead, it looked like an enormous slaughterhouse, and those water-kind spirit creatures were animals to be slaughtered. They had been giving their own lives away, trying pretty hard to serving as a food resource, easing the pressure of this water city.

"Greediness is an original sin!" Ji Hao dragged Yuan Li and stood on a watchtower, looking around. Next, Ji Hao flicked his wrist and sent out three streams of sword power that smashed the heads of three large water-kind spirit creatures, who were about to reach the altar. Killing the three spirit creatures right on the spot, Ji Hao turned around and slapped on Yuan Li's face for twice, not so heavily.

"Oi, come back, come back! This is not a peaceful time. Look at you now, you could be chopped into pieces by the enemies at any time!" Ji Hao stared at Yuan Li and said. Seeing Yuan Li's eyeballs starting to roll slowly, Ji Hao sneered and said, "If I didn't promise..." While snorting, Ji Hao continued, "I would leave you to die, little monkey."

Yuan Li's eyeballs rolled slowly in his eye sockets. Suddenly, he cried out loud like a baby, "Snow...Snow is dead!"

Ji Hao looked at Yuan Li and shook his head. Spirit creatures were so different from human beings. Yuan Li was a thousand years old at least. How could he still be like a twelve-year-old boy? Those powerful human beings who had lived for over a thousand years, which one of them wasn't extremely sly and wily?

Spirit creatures were born with especially long life spans, but their intelligence development was awfully slow. Therefore, Yuan Li was over a thousand years old, yet was still like a little boy.

"You've already avenged her. You killed Xiang Liu Junior yourself, so why are you still crying?" Ji Hao slapped Yuan Li once again and said, "Pull yourself together. You have a life to live. In the future, you will meet many nice girls. Probably, you will have a bunch of tiny monkeys with one, or a few of them!"

Ji Hao looked at Yuan Li, who was still crying heartbreakingly. He even wanted to say something like 'beautiful flowers are all over the world, don't waste your entire life on one', to comfort Yuan Li.

With warm tears flowing out of his eye sockets, Yuan Li looked at Ji Hao with red eyes and stuttered, "I don't want other girls, I only want Snow. I, I only want her..." Yuan Li was even choked with sobs. "Ever since I was little, she was my only friend. Only she played with me...She, she...Damn you, Xiang Liu Junior!"

Ji Hao spread his hands helplessly and said, "Xiang Liu Junior, you killed him yourself. As for that girl Snow...Her father is a powerful man. He will bring her back to life sooner or later. Her spirit pearl is fine, isn't it? As long as her father finds her a beautiful female dragon body, she can merge her spirit pearl with that new body and live again!"

Yuan Li paused, looked at Ji Hao, and sobbed, "But by then, will Snow still be the same girl?:

Ji Hao rubbed his smooth, beardless chin, and looked at Yuan Li in a profound way as he asked a question which would become the cause of countless arguments of generations of water ape, "Do you love Snow's body or her soul?"

This was such an abstruse philosophical question. It struck Yuan Li's heart like a thunderbolt and dispelled the dark clouds in his heart, letting Ji Hao's smile shine into his heart like the sun, warming his soul. He gripped Ji Hao's hand tight and laughed loudly, "I like Snow's kindness and gentleness, of course!"

"Then you love her soul!" Ji Hao looked at Yuan Li seriously and

continued, "You are an honest ‘philosopher’. Through her beauty, you believed in the nature of love. Little monkey, you’re amazing! I admire people like you!"

Slapping hard on Yuan Li’s shoulder, Ji Hao laughed, "So, don’t’ cry, stay alive. Do you remember what you promised me? From on now, you’re under my command. Cheer up, get ready for the war!"

Yuan Li puffed out his chest, but paused briefly, and asked another question, "Flood Dragon King will find Snow a nice body, right?"

Ji Hao looked at Yuan Li’s cautious face, then speechlessly patted his own forehead, and evilly threw a question back, "If the Flood Dragon King only found Snow a male dragon body...Would you still love her?"

Standing behind Ji Hao, Yemo Shayi quivered slightly, then fixed his three weirdly sparkling eyes on Yuan Li.

Yuan Li was lost in his thought. He knitted his eyebrows, with his ape face twisted like a dried apple.

After a long while, Yuan Li responded seriously, "I love Snow’s soul! Even if she becomes a male dragon, so what?"

On the watchtower, an Eastern Wasteland archer had his bow pulled open, prepared to release an arrow. But on hearing Yuan Li, for the very first time, his hands trembled and his arrow missed the target. The arrow swished across the air, and even brushed against the face of another human warrior who was standing on the ground.

On the watchtower, the atmosphere had become extremely weird. A few archers turned around from time to time, looking at Yuan Li from head to toe, as if he were a ‘truly brave man’. Human beings living in this era were mostly simple-minded and traditional. Hearing Yuan Li say stunning words like that, those archers were all amazed.

As the starter of this, Ji Hao stared at Yuan Li in shock. He quivered, then laughed embarrassedly. He silently turned around while frowning, and stared straight at those water-kind spirit creatures down below, which had been crazily rushing towards the city.

Ji Hao really wanted to know what Wuzhi Qi would do if he found out these mental changes Yuan Li had. Would he want to kill Ji Hao?

A long distance away, on the water surface, countless enormous water boas raised their heads high. Some of these water boas had two heads, some had three, and some even had six to eight heads. These enormous boas released poisonous mist from their jaws and screamed shrilly, while marching to the city in fury.

Chapter 1139: Flowing Poison, Without an End

Because of Xiang Liu Junior's death, a spirit boa army started a life-risking charge towards Ji Hao's water city.

The city was guarded by the Pan Gu bell. As the final result of the life-risking charge started by those spirit boas, warriors under Ji Hao's command had been eating roasted boas, boiled boas, air-dried boas, and all kinds of boa meat for half a month.

The Dragon Blood Drunk pill had still been emitting an attractive aroma on the altar. Tempted by the pill, countless water-kind creatures risked their lives and marched to Ji Hao's water city. Waves of water-kind spirit creatures rushed up, only to be killed.

The water surface around Ji Hao's water city had already become a pool of blood, a hell, because a thousands of miles wide area was dyed red by the blood of those water-kind creatures. Countless violent water-kind spirit creatures soaked in the blood-water, sensing the strong blood scent from the battlefield. Their eyes turned glowing red, as they seemed to lose their mind.

During the past few days, Ji Hao took out Yu Yu's full-body portrait once again and introduced Yuan Li to Yu Yu. As a water ape, Yuan Li learned to use the extremely negative power; without a doubt, he was extraordinarily talented. Yu Yu delightedly took Yuan Li as his disciple, and gifted him the Great World Scripture, which was specially created for spirit apes and monkeys to cultivate themselves. Meanwhile, Yu Yu also gave Yuan Li a pre-world dragon staff.

Within a couple of days, Yuan Li had already started to understand things in the Great World Scripture. Every time he wielded that dragon staff, faintly audible dragon roars would rise into the sky, and hundreds of silhouettes of dragons would hover around him to protect him. Moreover, with the staff, he could now

create natural thunderbolts and fire to attack his enemies. This powerful dragon staff was now being held in Yuan Li's arms all day long; from time to time, he would look at the staff while giggling.

It seemed that Yuan Li had already recovered from the emotional blow that Snow's death brought him. Ji Hao silently criticized his heartlessness, while letting Yuan Li freely wander in the city, without exercising too much control over him.

In the headquarters tent, all elders and high-grade commanders gathered up, with numerous official documents that came from Pu Ban City passing around in their hands. From time to time, an elder would sigh, or a commander would curse out loud.

Ji Hao caught the attentions of those water-kind armies which had been heading south. As a result, the heavy pressure suffered by the flood-control troops under Si Wen Ming's command was eased instantly. A few flood-control troops had already opened a few channels around Pu Ban City, and the excessive water power started to be drawn away by the great flood-control magic formation which was formed by those channels. Although the flood had still been roaring on the ground, the dense dark clouds in the sky had already begun fading.

Currently, people in Pu Ban City could see the sunlight for a couple of hours every seven to eight days, which was already amazing.

What made those elders sigh and commanders curse out was the casualty number of human beings recorded in those official documents. In many areas around Pu Ban City, numerous villages were swallowed by the flood entirely, with almost no survivors.

Those water-kind spirit creatures, who had occupied all rivers, streams, and lakes, had still been attacking those flood-control troops. Even single day, warriors in all flood-control troops had to fight desperately. Each day, a large number of human warriors would fall on battlefields.

What was even more infuriating was that by now, not only water-kind creatures were in the water-kind armies, human warriors from Northern Wasteland clans had started emerging as well, and those human warriors were mostly commanders.

Not too many water-kind spirit creatures knew how to use their brains. Instead, most of them relied on their bloodthirsty instincts. However, unlike before, led by those elite Northern Wasteland warriors, those water-kind spirit creatures were well-organized now. That allowed them to cause greater damage to the flood-control troops. Over ten marquises and earls were unfortunately encircled by water-kind armies, but the other human forces failed to rescue them timely, and all had fallen already.

Earl Hao Si Ling was a neighbor of Ji Hao, as his territory was right next to the Yao Mountain territory. He was also encircled by a water-kind army earlier; fortunately, a human troop nearby rescued him timely, destroyed the encirclement, and saved Si Ling from the water-kind army. Nevertheless, Si Ling was injured by an unknown poison. His body remained unharmed, yet his soul was damaged. He was a brave earl days ago, but now, he had become a mentally handicapped man who couldn’t even take care himself!

"Emperor Shun clearly said that it was lucky that we managed to stall the main force of the water-kind."

Ji Hao pointed to the north and said with a dark face, "If we failed to get them stuck in here and let them go straight down to south, I’m afraid the flood-control mission would be even more difficult. But in these days, I believe you have all seen that those water-kind creatures coming from the north are endless. If we make any mistake in here, an unpredictable disaster might be caused."

Hao Tao sat beside Ji Hao. With that typical serious face of his, he slowly said, "People, we have to come up with a plan. How can we teach these water-kind creatures a heavy lesson."

Sighing slightly, Hao Tao showed a faintly sensible tiredness, that seemed to come straight from his heart, while he continued, "To be honest, I don't want my children to live in a world that is ruled by the water-kind...Back in the ancient times, before those legendary powerful human beings were born, human beings lived as preys of the other creatures. We didn't live through that miserable era, but the elderly ones had always been telling stories about it, that we've all heard."

The headquarters tent fell into a deathly silence.

Back in the ancient times, not long after the humankind was created, many living creatures fed on human beings; even thinking about that miserable life could make people shiver. If Gong Gong succeeded, the world became a water realm, and those brutal water-kind creatures would become the owners of this world. The lives of modern human beings might be even more miserable than the lives of those ancient human beings!

"We have to come up with a plan. How can we destroy those evil creatures for good?" A Kua Fu Family warrior commander drummed his own head, causing heavy and rumbling thuds, that even shocked the rest of people.

Abruptly, a magic poison master, whose skin was covered by colorful tattoos of all kinds of poisonous bugs and cruel spell symbols, coughed loudly and said, "Marquis Yao, I think by raising the flood, those water-kind creatures are actually committing suicide. The water is the best carrier of magic poisons. If we can make enough magic poisons..."

A master healer interrupted him with knitted eyebrows and said, "Elder Bug, the magic poison is a good idea, but hundreds of billions of water-kind creatures are surrounding the city now. How many materials we need to make the giant amount of magic poison?" While speaking, a strong herbal aroma was released from this healer's body.

With a scary-looking face, which was also covered in colorful tattoos, Elder Bug chuckled, gritted his teeth and murmured to respond, "These years, I've been studying the mixed magic poisons concocted from plague viruses and blood poisons...One single drop of blood can activate the magic poison I made. As long as one water-kind spirit creature is killed by it, my magic poison will be able to spread."

All people in the tent quivered instantly.

Ji Hao frowned and asked in a deep voice, "Elder Bug, if the magic poison you made is truly so powerful, why did you never mention it?"

Elder Bug spread his hands, helplessly looked at Ji Hao, and answered, "Marquis Yao, the only problem about this mixed magic poison I made is that I can release it, but I can't take it back. In other words, once I release it, I won't be able to control it's spreading area, neither do I have an antidote. Possibly..."

Ji Hao's face twitched instantly. The suggestion Elder Bug made turned out to be an irreversible killing plan.

Chapter 1140: Poison Attack

That uncontrollable mixed magic poison was surely not appropriate to use. However, the suggestion Elder Bug made, of attacking the water-kind armies with widely effective magic poisons, was approved by everyone else.

Before this elite force left Pu Ban City, all kinds of supplies were well prepared, especially medicines and magic herbs. Ji Hao even brought some thousands of years old, strong herbs from the Magi Palace.

Elder Bug was from the Magi Palace. He had no children or other families; he focused on making and detoxifying magic poisons for his entire life. He was a top-grade master of magic poison in the Magi Palace.

Ji Hao gave his order, and allowed Elder Bug to use all herbs and medicines in storage, and put all Magi, who were good at magic medicine or magic poison concocting, under his command. Within a couple of hours, Elder Bugs and those Magi made a vat of water-clear magic medicine, which had a faint refreshing aroma. This was a pure ‘blood poison’ named ‘Girl’s Heart’ by Elder Bug, which represented the idea of ‘strong and determined, never giving up’.

Ji Hao and all elders and high-grade commanders ran a quick discussion, then selected tens of warriors, who each took a bowl of ‘Girl’s Heart’. They carefully brought it to all four sides of the city wall and poured in the water outside.

Once the clear poison was poured into the water, the blood accumulated around the city began boiling slowly. The blood had accumulated around the city for a big half a month, and was already dark, almost solid. But, under the effect of the poison, the blood melted speedily, and its color turned vivid again.

The color of the blood changed quickly. On the water surface, in tens of areas where the poison poured in, the vivid color of the

blood was spreading rapidly. Countless water-kind spirit creatures crowded the vividly colored blood while releasing water streams and cold power.

The storm-like waves of arrow, which had been releasing by archers on watchtowers, suddenly stopped. The ear-piercing swishing noises caused by those arrows disappeared, and even the roars of those water-kind spirit creatures near the city had faded as well.

This sudden quietness brought everyone in the city an emptiness in their hearts. Something bad seemed to be happening.

All of a sudden, shrill howls of water-kind spirit creatures could be heard. Ji Hao stood on a watchtower and witnessed thousands of spirit creatures twitch and fall. Their bodies melted quickly. Their shields, fish scales, snake scales, dragon scales, all melted in the vividly colored blood.

The ‘Girls’ Heart’ created by Elder Bug worked effectively. The strong poison spread to a thousand miles away in no time. Within this area, all water-kind spirit creatures in the water were affected, and none of them survived. Except for a few enormous spirit creatures, who had been proudly treading on watery clouds and floating in the air, all the others within this area were killed by the ‘Girl’s Heart’, melting rapidly in the water. Within a few breaths, over ninety percent of water-kind spirit creatures at senior-level or below were turned into puddles of sticky blood.

Spirit Creatures’ screams could be heard wave after wave, which made people’s scalps numb. Outside the city, on the vividly red water surface, countless corroded skin pieces, scales, and shells rolled. At first glance, this place looked like a blood pool in hell.

"This vat of blood poison has killed so many water-kind creatures within such a short span of time. Even if we send out all warriors in this city to kill, it would still require three days to kill all those water-kind creatures." Ji Hao held his hands behind his body and

said calmly, "But, Elder Bug, this blood poison..."

Elder Bug bent his body and gripped the fence of the watchtower with his eyes fixed on the water surface while carefully observing the effect of the poison. Hearing Ji Hao's worrying tone, he responded with a deep voice, "Marquis Yao, don't worry. This 'Girl's Heart' I created only has a short-term effect. It's strong indeed, but its effect will fade naturally after twenty-four hours. It won't spread to further areas, so no need to worry about that."

Crooking his fingers and drawing a few lines in the air, Elder Bug continued confidently, "We have twenty-four hours, enough for the 'Girls' Heart' to spread to eight-thousand miles away. Then, all water-kind creatures we can see now will be dead!"

Before Elder Bug finished, from a water-kind army in a thousand miles away, tens of toad-shaped, dark-green-colored creatures suddenly leaped out. Each of these toads had tens of centipede-like long legs under its green belly. The skins of these toads were covered in different colored pustules, from which, thin streams of venom had been spurting out from time to time. These toads croaked towards the sky, then each took a deep breath, instantly expanding their hundreds of meters long body to the size of mountains.

These enormous, oddly shaped toads started twitching intensely, while the pustules on their skins blasted one after another. Sticky streams of venom splashed out and fell into the water like a heavy rain.

The colorful venoms didn't stink; instead, they had refreshing herbal aromas. Falling into the water, the colorful venoms started to merge, and turned as clear and transparent as the 'Girl's Heart' at last, then spread speedily as well.

A faintly visible glisten appeared on the water surface, which quickly surrounded the area affected by the 'Girl's heart'.

A sizzling noise could be heard without an end, while the two

types of strong poisons neutralized and devoured each other in the water. The tens of toads croaked loudly, sounding happy and satisfied. They croaked and leaped on the water surface for a while, then opened their mouthparts and sucked deeply. Followed their moves, five-colored mist streams rose from the water and drifted into their mouths.

"They feed on poisons!" Elder Bug frowned, murmured to himself, "Since the slightly toxic rain started falling, I've been worrying that, among these water-kind creatures, some might be used to living in a highly toxic environment."

"I turned to be right. These creatures neutralized the 'Girl's Heart with their own venoms, then turned the power of the 'Girl's Heart' to their own." continued Elder Bug, "Gong Gong found such a toxic world and raised a group of poisonous water-kind creatures there. I'm afraid that before he started this war, he was well-prepared for all kinds of magic poisons created by the Magi Palace."

Ji Hao frowned as well. These creatures fed on poisons...

If Gong Gong selected a toxic world on purpose, and raised a large group of water-kind creatures who lived on poisons, he indeed had a long-term vision, and his plan would truly be unpredictable.

From all directions, those toads' venoms approached the city, and quickly purified the blood accumulated around the city. The vividly red blood turned water-clear. The strong poison contained in the blood was devoured by the tens of toads, after which, the power vibrations they released grew stronger and stronger. At last, each of these toads had turned three times stronger than before.

The 'Girl's Heart' was cleaned, but the number of water-kind creatures around the city was still huge. They roared excitedly and continued rushing to the city, towards the dragon blood pill.

"Marquis Yao, if we truly want to destroy all these water-kind creatures, I'm afraid, we have to use something evil."

Elder Bug looked at Ji Hao with hesitation, "That mixed magic poison will be effective, I assume. It’s a mixture of plague viruses and blood poisons...But, I can’t control it."

Ji Hao frowned again, lost in his thoughts.

Chapter 1141: ‘Natural Disaster’

The headquarters tent was crowded with people. Elders and high-grade commanders from all clans surrounded a square table.

Placed in the middle of the iron square table was a palm-sized jade plate, and on the place, a thumb-sized drop of black blood had been squirming slowly, like a living creature.

Ji Hao sat beside the table with his eyebrows knitted, eyes narrowed, as he stared at this drop of mixed magic poison, called ‘Natural Disaster’, created by Elder Bug. Elder Bug named this magic poison as ’Natural Disaster’; it was not hard to tell how terrifying this poison was, even in the eyes of Elder Bug.

According to Elder Bug, this ‘Natural Disaster’ had the features of both plague viruses and blood poisons. It spread fast, with a long incubation period, and was incomparably virulent. Both the fleshy body and the soul of a living creature could be destroyed by it within a short span of time. More terrifyingly, ‘Natural Disaster’ could grow rapidly; the more living creatures it devoured, the faster it would grow, and the stronger it would become. It could even mutate in a short period.

Because of the high probability of mutation, Elder Bug honestly told everyone that he didn’t have an antidote for it. Based on the level of research in this area, not a single Magus in the Magi Palace was capable enough to create an antidote for the ‘Natural Disaster’.

A thick turtle shell was paved under the jade place. The mottled ancient turtle shell was carved with tens of sealing magic spell symbols, releasing a strong sealing power, preventing the ‘Natural Disaster’ from leaking out.

The black blood drop slowly flew on the jade plate. All of a sudden, an extremely thin stream of black blood darted towards Ji Hao, who was the nearest to it, along with a dark dim beam of light. Followed a slight sizzling noise, the thin stream of blood flew

up for about a foot high, then an electric bolt struck down from the air. Hit by the electric bolt, the blood beam turned into a strand of dark smoke immediately.

The blood drop slightly squirmed on the jade plate, then the dark smoke drifted back down, and merged again with the drop.

"What a strong corrosive power!" A Master from the Magus Palace said with a dry voice, "Elder Bug, all these years...You didn't waste your time! If we truly release this thing, those water-kind creatures will surely die out. But, I'm afraid our humankind will also..."

Elder Bug sat by the other side of the table, facing Ji Hao, as he murmured with a bitter look, "I created this thing for those non-humankind beings. The recipe is not yet perfect...Here is my original idea. You see, a human being only has two eyes, and none of us has the third eye. Therefore, this 'Natural Disaster' I created is aimed at the third, forth, fifth eyes of those non-humankind beings."

Knocking the table with his knuckles, Elder Bug continued a bit excitedly, "A human being only has one pair of eye, but why do those non-humankind beings have three, four, even five eyes? As we can imagine, they are different from us at the bloodline level. Based on the bloodline differences between the humankind and the non-humankind, if the 'Natural Disaster' can be effective only to them..."

Ji Hao's scalp numbed when hearing Elder Bug. He stared at Elder Bug, and felt that his entire body was ice-cold.

What an old freak! He created such a scary magic potion, and he created the concept of a genetic virus! If he had enough time, he might truly succeed! After all, those Magi Palace Magi had strong spirit powers, with which, they created powerful yet strange magics and spells. According to Ji Hao's previous life memories, not even the later generations were as good as them. Who could

tell for sure that Elder Bug won’t be able to create a new version of ‘Natural Disaster’, only effective against the non-humankind?

"It’s just too dangerous."

The black blood drop in the jade plate abruptly stated squirming quickly and intensely. The blood drop reached out tens of thin tentacles, fiercely towards those elders and commanders in the surroundings. Obviously, the senses of life-force released from the bodies of these people attracted the blood drop, and made this small drop of magic poison attack like the craziest wild dog.

The sizzling noise could be heard again, while tiny thunderbolts emerged from the air and crushed those blood tentacles. Strands of black smoke merged back into the drop, which was much smaller than before. The drop grew large slowly. Meanwhile, on the surface of the drop, extremely thin and faded electric bolts emerged.

"It...It seems to have some immunity to the thunder power, doesn’t it?" Ji Hao looked at Elder Bug and asked in shock.

"Hm, according to my design, if we allow this magic poison to develop freely, and give it enough time to grow and mutate, in the future, thunder, fire, ice, acid, none of these would be able to do any harm to it."

Elder Bug looked at the black blood drop affectionately, as if it were a child of his, then continued, "Back in the Magi Palace, After I tested the ‘Natural Disaster’s power with a non-humankind being, I would destroy the corpse in an hour, tops. Otherwise... Even I don’t know how terrifying it will become!"

No one in the tent said a word, and everybody stared straight at Elder Bug.

A long while later, Tao Sha asked with a dry voice, "Old dude, you, you... you played with such a scary thing in the Magi Palace?"

Elder Bug showed the whites of his eyes to Tao Sha in

speechlessness, then responded coldly, "I know what I've been doing...Did anything happen in all these years? If anything did happen, I would be the first to die. What are you all afraid of?"

Many people in the tent had cold sweat oozing out of their heads. Even though they hadn't witnessed the true power of the 'Natural Disaster', by merely hearing Elder Bug, they all learned how powerful it was. This old man, how had actually been studying such a terrifying thing in the Magi Palace, which was also the core of Pu Ban City...If it ever leaked out, Pu Ban City would have become a dead land, wouldn't it?

Unlike those people, Ji Hao was carefree towards Elder Bug's behaviors, as he had seen many people much crazier than Elder Bug in his previous life.

Staring at the 'Natural Disaster' for a while, Ji Hao said, "This thing, Elder Bug, let me keep it for now. Don't use this scary thing, unless we have to. Who knows what true disaster it might cause?"

Narrowing his eyes, Ji Hao continued in a bland tone, "But if those water-kind creatures truly don't know when to stop, and if we're really desperate one day, even if the poison will spread in the world for ten-thousand years...even if we die together with them, no one can blame us."

The others in the tent remained silent.

Die together?

Will this flood really push the humankind into that kind of despairing situation? Gong Gong's water-kind armies, and those Northern Wasteland clans, were they qualified enough to push this whole thing to the point that the humankind would even decide to die together with them?

A quick series of footsteps came from the outside. Following that, Feng Xing lifted the door curtain and rushed in. With a dark face, he said hurriedly, "Elders, commanders, things aren't good. Just

now, I saw large groups of human warrior come from the south. By now, they’re yelling at those water-kind spirit creatures surrounding this city."

Ji Hao paused shortly, then wielded his hand. A light screen emerged in the air, showing the water-kind armies outside the city.

As Feng Xing said, a heavily armored human troop with at least ten-thousand elite warriors mounted on horned carps rushed into the crowd of water-kind spirit creatures. The leader of this troop was holding a dark tablet, shouting at those enormously shaped spirit creatures.

Before, all water-kind creatures had been crazily pouncing to the city. But now, ninety percent of them stopped, paused in where they were.

Chapter 1142: Yu Mu Volunteers

Those water-kind armies around the city had been madly attacking Ji Hao's water city like headless chickens, for nearly a month. But at the moment, they were back in order. Hundreds of enormous spirit creatures roared towards the city from long distances away, reluctant to give up. Meanwhile, countless oddly shaped smaller sized spirit creatures trod on waves and cursed Ji Hao's whole family with the dirtiest languages they knew. Followed muffled drums, all water-kind spirit creatures lined up orderly, and started moving south.

The human troop with dark armors and horned carps floated on the water surface, staring at Ji Hao's city with unfriendly faces. Ji Hao stood on the fence wall, also staring at them seriously and coldly.

Many people in this city knew the leader of this troop. His name was Meng Da; he was a warrior from the Dragon Carp Clan, Northern Wasteland, and in Pu Ban City, he was a famous brave warrior.

Since the flood came, only water-kind creatures had been running rampantly all over the world, but human beings from Northern Wasteland clans hadn't yet shown their faces in public, till now. Today, Meng Da came straight to Ji Hao's city like that, and brought those messy water-kind armies back in order, forcing them to continue heading south.

"They quitted pretending!" Feng Xing stood behind Ji Hao and said with an inclination to launch an arrow, "Idiots from the north, it seems that they've made up their minds to follow Gong Gong. They truly quitted pretending...Shall I give him an arrow?"

Ji Hao slowly nodded. He pulled out a 'wolf tooth' arrow and gripped the arrow with both hands, sending streams of melted-gold-like light into it. The silver-white arrow was instantly covered

in golden patterns, and those feather-like patterns gradually turned clearer. Soon, the entire arrow turned golden.

A strong heat was released from the arrow, as Ji Hao handed it to Feng Xing.

Feng Xing took over the arrow, then immediately showed his teeth in pain. The arrow shaft burned his palm. Even as a Divine Magus, his palm was burned severely, that by now, the smoke had wrapped his palm up, while an aroma of grilling meat started spreading in the air.

Surrounding Ji Hao, all elders, and commanders stared at him in shock.

Ji Hao had only infused a slight part of his power into the arrow, but the arrow was already hot enough to burn the palm of a Divine Magus!

With a low voice, Tao Sha murmured, "This kid, what a freak he is. How old is he now? Even my youngest grandson is about ten years older than him...Is he a Supreme Magus already? It can't be possible!"

"It hurts!" Feng Xing shouted deeply in pain, holding that scorching hot arrow. He hurriedly put the arrow on his bowstring, sent all of his power into his bow, then slowly pulled the bow open.

A wolf roar rose into the sky. The golden wolf roar darted forward, leaving a sharp and dazzling golden beam in the sky.

Meng Da was around thirty miles away from the city wall, but the arrow Feng Xing released flashed straight to him in no time. No one knew the name of the strange archery skill Feng Xing used, because when the arrow reached to Meng Da's chest, a strong gust of wind suddenly flew out of it and the arrow abruptly split up, turning into tens of hazy arrow silhouettes.

Only one of these silhouettes was the real arrow.

Meng Da was a Divine Magus, but human Magi never cultivated their souls. Therefore, not even Divine Magi could release their spirit power. Instead, he could only differentiate those hazy arrow silhouettes with his own eyes.

Roaring loudly, Meng Da instantly raised a round-shaped shield with his right hand, as his left hand wielded a six-feet-long sharp spear, bashing down towards the tens of silhouettes.

Those cyan-colored silhouettes shattered, as none was real. Meng Da paused. In the following moment, his right hand suddenly quivered, as his round shield was already penetrated. Before that, the shield had already released a dark watery light. The shield was punctured easily, and the arrow had gone through his left hand, sinking deeply into his chest.

Layers of watery light were emitted from his dark armor, shielding Meng Da against the arrow.

All of a sudden, the essence sun fire Ji Hao put into the arrow blasted. A golden fire swept across the area with a radius of miles. Meng Da howled out loud while his armor vaporized instantly. Half of his body was burned into ash, while the other half was sent tens of miles away along with his shrill screams. Shedding blood like rain, Meng Da fled desperately to the south.

A big half of the troop under Meng Da’s command was covered by the golden fire. The armors worn by those warriors were of much lower quality than Meng Da’s armor. Therefore, five to six thousand elite warriors were all burned into strands of smoke, before they could even burst with a scream.

"Retreat!"

While fleeing, Meng Da gasped quickly for air. Wisps of muscle fiber grew out from the edges of his wounds, squirming quickly as he was trying his best to boost up his spirit blood power and heal himself. Nevertheless, streams of essence sun fire lingered in his wounds and burned all new muscles into ashes. His wounds

showed no sign of recovering. On the contrary, they had already started to threaten Meng Da's life.

"Run! Run!"

In a panic, Meng Da whined. Hearing his voice, the surviving warriors under his command hurriedly kicked their wounds. Thousands of horned carps screamed with high-pitched voices and quickly sank into the water, all fleeing south as they stirred up waves of sharp ripples.

Those water-kind spirit creatures didn't take another glance at the city; instead, they turned away from the city and continued moving south.

Ji Hao and all the others clearly understood that once these water-kind spirit creature arrived Pu Ban City, they would join the main water-kind forces stationed in all rivers and streams and lakes in or around the city, then start to attack the flood-control troops as hard as they could.

If the flood never subsided, human beings would always be trapped in small spaces, struggling to survive. If the situation didn't change, the life-force of the humankind would be ground away bit by bit, and when all human beings were weakened to an extreme point, Gong Gong would enslave the entire humankind, without needing the slightest effort.

They couldn't allow these water-kind armies to go south as reinforcements. They had to figure out a way to stall these water-kind creatures in the north.

Ji Hao and those elders and commanders walked back to their own rooms, and worryingly dropped in silence.

The dragon blood pill had lost its effect. No one knew what Gong Gong promised those water-kind spirit creatures, that allowed them to restrain their strong desires for the dragon blood pill, and head south without taking a glance at the city. Controlled by those

large spirit creatures, even those smaller ones, which could barely control themselves, never took another glance at the dragon blood pill; not even a tiny shrimp looked at the dragon blood pill again.

Sitting in the headquarters tent with crossed legs, Ji Hao murmured to himself, "Should I send out the army to fight those water-kind spirit creatures directly?" Soon, he shook his head. Fighting a great battle against so many water-kind spirit creatures on this vast water? Without a doubt, human warriors would fall in disadvantage. Those water-kind spirit creatures were uncountable, but how many warriors did he have? Without the Pan Gu Defense magic formation, how many human warriors would die?

But with merely this water city, he couldn’t seal these water-kind creatures’ path to the south.

Ji Hao frowned again, lost in his thoughts.

The door curtain was lifted. Then, Yu Mu squeezed his meatball-like chubby body in, while gasping quickly. Clang! He threw his large pot on the ground, and slightly bowed to Ji Hao with difficulty.

"Ji Hao, let me try!"

"Try what?" Ji Hao raised his head and asked confusedly.

"That drop of ‘Natural Disaster’!" said Yu Mu seriously, "If it’s really a virus-magic poison, let me try! Maybe, I can control it!"

Chapter 1143: Try the Poison with His Body

The headquarters tent was all quiet. Yemo Shayi silently showed his figure from a dark shadow, looking at Yu Mu confusedly. In his eyes, this life-risking behavior of Yu Mu was completely against the values of Yu Clan people. Yu Mu was living a healthy life, so why would he sacrifice himself to protect the others?

Ji Hao looked at Yu Mu from head to toe.

He was chubby, white, completely wrinkle-less. He looked as honest and simple as always, but in his eyes was an inflexible will.

He looked at Ji Hao and said word by word, "Let me try, if you see me as your brother."

Ji Hao stood up and took two steps towards Yu Mu. What a giant fatso! He was about three-feet taller than Ji Hao, with a huge belly. Ji Hao’s body had already touched Yu Mu’s belly, but even when he reached his arm out as long as he could, he still failed to pat Yu Mu’s shoulder.

"Give me a reason!" Ji Hao patted on Yu Mu’s huge belly helplessly, making his fat ripple like water surface; even his cheeks leaped happily.

"If we can’t stop those water-kind creatures, our flood-control troops won’t be able to focus on their mission. Then, this bloody flood would last for a very long period, am I right?" Yu Mu stared at Ji Hao straight in the eyes and asked seriously.

"You are right." Ji Hao nodded, also looking at Yu Mu in the eyes.

"Then, many clans won’t be able to survive…Adults will drown in the flood, or be killed by water-kind creatures. Many children will become orphans, or…be killed as well, right?"

Yu Mu rested his hands on his belly, lowered his eyelids, and continued slowly, "When I was little, I watched non-humankind warriors’ battle beasts bite off the heads of my little brother and

little sister. I watched my father be captured and enslaved, my mother be..."

Taking a deep breath, Yu Mu continued with a low voice, "If I can kill those bloody water-kind armies by taking a slight risk, the flood will be overcome sooner. This is risky indeed, but I am willing to take it!"

Yu Mu moved slightly while chuckling. A turbid gray mist rose from his head. The broken Disease God streamer floated in the mist, silently releasing a strong, old, and evil power.

"And, I have this ancient Disease God streamer. It's a bit ragged, but it might be able to restrain the 'Natural Disaster'." said Yu Mu seriously to Ji Hao, "Besides, even if I failed, you won't watch me simply die, will you?"

With a slightly conning face, Yu Mu smirked proudly, washing away the soul-deep shock he brought Ji Hao by saying what he had said just now.

"Bloody fatso, you do know how to convince people!" Again, Ji Hao slapped Yu Mu's giant belly heavily and said, "Indeed, I won't watch you die, but you might suffer. The 'Natural Disaster'? Are you truly ready?"

Yu Mu was truly ready.

The jade plate with the 'Natural Disaster' contained in it was now right in front of Yu Mu. The mottled turtle shell beneath the plate had a magical yet weak power flowing on its surface, sealing the 'Natural Disaster' and disabling it from leaking out.

Yu Mu sat before the jade plate like a hill. The Disease God streamer released thin streams of gray mist, slowly merging with his body. He carefully took out nine gray-white calabashes, taking out all kinds of strange powders, magic pills, ointments, and liquid medicines from it, putting those where he could easily reach them.

Ji Hao held his breath and popped out his eyes, watching every

move of Yu Mu. In his hands, a detoxifying golden pill concocted by Priest Dachi was ready.

‘Bloody fatso, what the hell did he learn from those old masters in the Magi Palace?’ thought Ji Hao.

Those strange kinds of powders, magic pills, ointments and liquid medicines Yu Mu took out from the nine calabashes, Ji Hao could easily guess that they were used for neutralizing the ‘Natural Disaster’. But next, Yu Mu took out some other things. Even though Ji Hao was born in the Southern Wasteland jungle and had seen all weird, creepy kinds of things created by Southern Wasteland Maguspriest, he still had his scalp numbed on looking at those other things Yu Mu took out; he even had goosebumps all over his body.

At first, Yu Mu took out seven blue leeches, which bit on his tender white skin. Soon, blue stripes covered Yu Mu’s eyes, nose, mouth and years. After that, the sense of power released from Yu Mu’s body faded instantly.

The next thing Yu Mu took out was a vividly colorful poisonous scorpion. Yu Mu put it on his chest, near his heart. The scorpion pierced its tail hook deeply into Yu Mu’s chest. Yu Mu trembled instantly. Meanwhile, faint colors emerged in Yu Mu’s eyes.

Yu Mu then took out a red, black, and blue poisonous snake. He carefully let out his tongue, and let the chopstick-sized snake made a bite on his tongue. The snake’s teeth were thickly covered with tiny barbs. Those teeth sank deeply into Yu Mu’s tongue, which swelled visibly. A large number of red, black and blue speckles emerged on Yu Mu’s skin.

"So evil, so disgusting...I can’t understand this. Dear master, I can’t understand that your people had been fending against the Yu Dynasty for so many years with these strange, weird, evil magics!" Yemo Shayi was deeply shocked while watching Yu Mu’s scary movements.

In Yemo Shayi's eyes, that could only happen in a nightmare. As a Yu Clan noble, Yemo Shayi would never, ever allow those nasty, dirty things to touch his skin. But Yu Mu, he, he...

Yemo Shayi even showed the whites of his eyes and silently preyed to the Dark Sun he believed and worshiped.

Yu Mu took a heavy breath. He had let a couple of potent poisons into his body in a row, but as a senior player of all kinds of magic poisons, he remained unharmed, and could still move freely and nimbly.

He took out two golden centipedes. The pair of three-feet-long golden centipedes each took a bite on a foot of his. After that, his legs quickly turned light-golden, his skin became transparent, and even his squirming muscles and blood veins under that light-golden skin of his were indistinctly visible.

"Done!" Yu Mu murmured, then grabbed the small jade plate over.

The 'Natural Disaster' was like a living creature. It was freed from the turtle shell, then sensed Yu Mu's strong and strong power. The thumb-sized black blood drop leaped up immediately and landed on Yu Mu's chest, drilling into his body.

Yu Mu quivered intensely, then his fat began rippling fast crazily.

Following a sizzling noise, tiny wrinkles merged on Yu Mu's skin, as his fat began melting and shrinking speedily like snow blocks grilling on a bonfire.

Sticky sweat started oozing out from Yu Mu's skin without an end. His waistline turned smaller and smaller, his eyeballs rolled blindly, while his teeth struck against each other.

On the Disease God streamer, countless strange spell symbols sparkled, then the silhouettes of all kinds of poisonous creatures drifted out, merging with his body.

Chapter 1144: The Disease God Seal

"Dear Master, this might be slightly offensive, but I have to say that sometimes, I truly can't understand the way of thinking, of your humankind." Standing aside, Yemo Shayi looked at Yu Mu, who had sweat flowing down his back in streams and his skin rippling from time to time, then said in a low voice.

"Eh?" Ji Hao had been observing Yu Mu nervously. He dared not to miss even the slightest change in his body. Hearing Yemo Shayi, he mumbled to respond.

"Sacrifice himself to protect the others...This is just against the value of Yu Clan people, especially Yu Clan nobles...Why do so many human beings think like this?"

Yemo Shayi knitted his eyebrows and looked at Ji Hao confusedly, "Why will they sacrifice themselves for the others? Why don't they make others sacrifice for themselves?"

Ji Hao remained silent while strange spell symbols emerged on Yu Mu's skin, and the sense of power released from his body turned even subtler. He took a few circles around Yu Mu, then answered with a deep voice, "Because they are human beings."

Yemo Shayi opened his mouth, looked at Ji Hao helplessly and confusedly. He wanted to get a clear answer from Ji Hao, to explain some questions he had for many years. Those questions were not important, but they had been making him so curious. Nevertheless, Ji Hao gave him a vague, empty, and meaningless answer.

Showing the whites of his eyes, Yemo Shayi looked at the few scary poisonous bugs on Yu Mu's body and murmured, "At least, he can let a slave to do this for him. Yu Clan people have ten-million ways to make lowly slaves sacrifice for them. Why does he have to sacrifice himself?"

Ji Hao remained silent for another while, then gave Yemo Shayi another vague answer, "Because he is Yu Mu."

Yemo Shayi's eyes had even bulged from his eye sockets. He felt very helpless in the face of these two answers Ji Hao gave. Continuing showing the whites of his eyes, he squinted at Yu Mu, hearing those strange noises made by Yu Mu's creaking bones and twitching muscles.

According to Yemo Shayi's years of rich battling and slaughtering experiences, he could tell for sure that this fatso, Yu Mu, now had all his bone joints dislocated, muscles, blood veins, tendons, and nerves all twisted into a mess. In addition to that, his life-force and spirit blood had become uncontrollable. Simply speaking, Yu Mu's current body condition was in an inhuman state.

Yemo Shayi couldn't help but quiver with fear by merely imagining that pain which Yu Mu had been suffering right now.

The leather carpet paved on the ground already had a thick layer of sweat puddled on it. On the surface of the glistening sweat puddle was a thin layer of sticky fat. Yu Mu's body twisted in a weird way. Agitated by the 'Natural Disaster', his spirit blood had been changing constantly and strangely, directly twisting Yu Mu's body.

His fat had been oozing out of his skin, along with the sweat. Apart from this, Ji Hao also clearly sensed that 'Natural Disaster' had also been stimulating the life-force contained in Yu Mu's internal organs. As a consequence, Yu Mu's internal organs had grown hundreds of times stronger than before. But this improvement was twisted and unhealthy.

Ji Hao covered Yu Mu's body with his spirit power to capture every slight change that happened to his body. In shock, he found out that within such a short span of time, Yu Mu had already grown one extra liver and six extra kidneys in his body.

More surprisingly, on both sides of Yu Mu's spine, besides each

joint, a small pair of hearts had been growing speedily.

Countless tiny blood veins reached out from these new hearts, quickly connecting with Yu Mu's old blood veins. Yu Mu's blood circulatory system was now tens of times complicated than before; the flowing speed and directions of his blood were both random and disordered now.

The 'Natural Disaster' had been remolding Yu Mu's body in such a strange way. It forcibly stimulated his body and generated a hundreds of times stronger life-force from his body. However, this new life-force was being consumed rapidly at the same time. A part of this life-force was used for nourishing those new hearts, and the rest was absorbed by the 'Natural Disaster' itself, which had been dividing and growing ceaselessly.

One to two, two to four, four to eight...

The 'Natural Disaster' crazily absorbed Yu Mu's life-force, growing at a terrifyingly rapid speed. Soon, the blood flowing in every vein of Yu Mu had become black, looking exactly the same as the black, glittering, and translucent drop of 'Natural Disaster'.

A strong sense of death was released from that black blood when it was flowing quickly inside Yu Mu's body. Thew few poisonous bugs Yu Mu put on his body screamed out loud one after another. Those bugs struggled and attempted to leave Yu Mu's body. But all of a sudden, their bodies melted into dark sticky liquid, being absorbed completely by Yu Mu's skin.

These poisonous bugs failed to protect Yu Mu from the 'Natural Disaster'. On the contrary, they were killed by the 'Natural Disaster' and became its nourishment, being absorbed by Yu Mu's body.

What frightened Ji Hao more was that after the few poisonous bugs were absorbed by Yu Mu's body, the 'Natural Disaster' began mutating quickly. The dark blood of Yu Mu already had a colorful glow emitting from it. The 'Natural Disaster' was efficiently

digesting the venoms of the few poisonous bugs, learning from the venoms, strengthening itself, and making itself even fiercer and harder to deal with.

"Yu Mu, stop it! It's not too late!" Ji Hao gritted his teeth and gave a deep shout, while putting the life-saving magic pill made by Priest Dachi before Yu Mu's face.

"It's alright, I can still take it...And I can feel it, it's not impossible!" Yu Mu opened his eyes and glanced at Ji Hao. His eyeballs seemed to be sticky, purely black and lusterless. He grinned to Ji Hao, but his tongue and teeth had all turned pure black, looking as lifeless as his eyes.

Yu Mu was like a soft white meatball, but now, his waistline had shortened by at least three-feet. His skin was turning black quickly as well.

Ji Hao took a deep breath and remained silent. He stared straight at Yu Mu without blinking his eyes, gripping the life-saving magic pill in his hand, tightly. As long as any bad change happened to Yu Mu, Ji Hao would foist the pill into Yu Mu's mouth and make him swallow it.

Yu Mu started incanting a strange spell that sounded old and sad, like a warm yet especially dry gust of wind, blowing over from the prehistorical era. Hearing Yu Mu's voice, Ji Hao instantly felt anxious, and even his red sun primordial spirit quaked slightly.

Yu Mu raised his head. Clouds of gray mist descended from the Disease God streamer, transforming into ancient-styled spell symbols that flew into his mouth.

A strange power emerged gradually from the streamer. Yu Mu incanted the spell faster and faster, louder and louder. Meanwhile, a gray layer of mist slowly rose from his body, instantly suppressing the darkness spreading in Yu Mu's body.

A whole hour later, a thumb-sized, heart-shaped, gray-colored

magic seal slowly flew out from the Disease God streamer, descending towards Yu Mu's heart. The magic seal was covered in holes, and had a large breach on it, as if a bug had bitten off a large piece from it.

Ji Hao thought he heard a raging roar before the gray magic seal merged with Yu Mu's body.

Immediately, a dense and strong gray mist puffed out of Yu Mu's entire body. The 'Natural Disaster' inside Yu Mu's body seemed to meet its natural enemy, that it screamed with a despairing hissing voice. Only Ji Hao could hear that scream by using his spirit power.

Chapter 1145: The Disease God's Legacy

Gray streams of mist rose from Yu Mu's body, while a weak spirit power spread in the tent.

Ji Hao carefully restrained his own spirit power, then slightly touched this weak, hazy, dream-like spirit power. Next, the mysterious life of an ancient powerful being replayed before Ji Hao's eyes.

In the boundless Chaos, Chaos tides surged like countless ferocious dragons, roaring across the space, madly, crazily and inexhaustibly. These Chaos tides could create everything, and were powerful enough to destroy everything. Occasionally, a few Chao tides would bump violently against each other and generate thunderous bangs and dazzling light. But soon, all noises and lights would be devoured by the Chaos.

An enormous egg, which was tens of millions of miles in radius, drifted along a Chaos tide. Nothing existed in the egg except a growing weak spirit. The egg didn't know where it came from, neither did it have a destination; it was only pushed around by Chaos tides, wandering across the universe.

The time never existed in Chaos. The egg couldn't tell how many centuries it had been drifting for, but one day, struck by tens of unprecedentedly strong Chaos tides, the spirit inside the egg woke up.

Once he woke up, the egg cracked.

The strong power contained in the egg generated his body, while the strong shell of the egg transformed into a long streamer pole, and the eggshell membrane became a streamer. He instinctively gripped the streamer, which was born with him, then confusedly looked around.

It was probably the pure power released from the egg when it

cracked that attracted many oddly shaped Chaos creatures. They raised destructive Chaos undercurrents, cast all kinds of strange magics, and launched fierce attacks on him.

In the Chaos, newborns like him had strong and pure pre-world power contained in their bodies. Even a slight little bit of that pure pre-world power could bring a living creature amazing benefits. He was a newborn, just like a fragile infant, weak and muddled. He hadn't even mastered his natural abilities. No matter what kind of power he was gifted with, those attackers could easily win.

However, those attackers completely underestimated him.

In a panic, he gripped the streamer and slightly wielded. Invisible disease power spread out, which softened those attackers, then quickly melted them down and turned them into sticky, rotten blood.

Within a couple of breaths, all those powerful attackers died. Their bodies transformed into strong streams of spirit blood power, being absorbed by the streamer. The streamer purified the spirit blood power, then sent a part of it back into his body.

He sensed that his body was growing stronger, and his muddled mind was much clearer. Therefore, he started his journey. All Chaos creatures he encountered with ended up being killed by him with the streamer. As the streamer devoured more and more living creatures, he got to know more and more about himself. Meanwhile, he grew more and more powerful, and gained more and more abilities.

In the boundless Chaos, he survived countless deadly dangers, and also met some other strong creatures who were generated by the universe itself, without parents, just like himself. Some powerful creatures became his enemies, while some became his friends. Sometimes, he had company, and other times, he was alone. The Chaos didn't have an end to be reached, and dangers always existed. He witnessed the deaths of many of his friends.

In his long journey, he and his friends saw quite a few great worlds.

Unlike the cruel Chaos, those great worlds already had earth, water, fire, wind separated, with great Dao and natural laws; those worlds were peaceful and stable. Compared with the Chaos, where a destructive disaster could descend at any time, those great worlds were paradises.

Therefore, he and his friends tried to invade those great worlds many times. But, the owners, also creatures of those great worlds, violently cast them away, and even killed some of them mercilessly. Facing those world creatures, he and his friends were too weak.

After a very long period, he and his friends finally found out that any creature that was powerful enough to create a world was a top-grade being. The talents, gifts, fortunes, and powers of those world creatures were all millions of times greater than his.

If an owner of a great world didn't die of exhaustion when creating the world, by depending on the great world, with the energy provided by the entire world, he or she would be invincible.

He and his friends kept traveling in the Chaos. They met other pre-world creatures, communicated with them, and gradually summed up some special experiences of survival. For example — How to gain as much as possible during the creation process of a new world, and make himself stronger.

Many years later, he and his friends suddenly sensed an especially strong power.

An unreasonably strong world was going to be created. According to the information delivered by the strong power he sensed, he even knew the name of this powerful creature, the one that was going to create this new world, 'Gu'!

Carefully, he and his friends approached 'Pan Gu world', which

was about to be created. If they could get close enough to this new world and absorb some creation power and natural reward released at the moment the world was created, he and his friends could already gain great benefits.

The sense of power that came from Pan Gu world was incomparably strong; it was hundreds, thousands of times stronger than any world they had ever seen. Without a doubt, they could harvest much more during the creation process of a world like this.

However, before they approached Pan Gu world, they were violently beaten up by a female creature with a human-body and snake-tail, and her brother. They suffered badly. Later, they were told that the two snake-tail creatures were Spirit Wo and Spirit Xi, 'Gu's friends, the protectors of this new world.

Spirit Wo and her brother were way too powerful, thousands of times more powerful than his friends and himself. Therefore, all his friends were scared away. Only he carefully hid near the enormous Chaos egg which had given 'Gu' his life. He watched the egg crack, watched Pan Gu rise, then watched countless Chaos creatures crazily pounce on Pan Gu and his protectors.

That was a brutal massacre. Pan Gu was too powerful. He wielded his giant axe and chopped millions of creatures, which were much stronger than himself, into nothingness.

However, too many Chaos creatures attacked. Spirit Wo and the other protectors were all wounded severely. Eventually, Pan Gu fell to the ground under the endless attacks too.

He seized the opportunity and sneaked into the newly created Pan Gu world, gaining more than he could imagine.

He earned a giant amount of creation power and natural award power, and thus, grew a physical body. With his natural abilities, he also controlled the great Dao of disease of Pan Gu world. From then on, he became the famous Disease God in Pan Gu world.

Countless years later, he fell, with all that was left being a dilapidated Disease God heart, that contained all he had learned about the great Dao of disease.

Chapter 1146: Endless Locust Infestation

"Ah, what an interesting life!"

Yemo Shayi opened his eyes as a dim beam flashed across. To him, the life of the Disease God was merely interesting. The Disease God was strong indeed, but Yemo Shayi worshipped the Dark Sun in Pan Yu world. Therefore, no strong creatures from outside that world could mean anything to him.

"What a profound Dao!"

Unlike Yemo Shayi, what Ji Hao sensed from the Disease God's long life story was the great Dao in the Chaos, which seemed to be disordered and chaotic, but was actually perfectly, mystically organized.

Disease God's journey in the Chaos, the dangers he survived, those magical places he had been, were all embodiments of all fantastic types of great Dao in the Chaos.

Ji Hao had only roughly read the Disease God's life story, but already, his red sun primordial spirit in his spiritual space, had grown larger, shone brighter. Inside the red sun, the golden silhouette generated by the great Dao of Yang and the silver silhouette generated by the great Dao of Yin were turning clearer and clearer, especially the golden one. By now, the outlines of eyes, nose, and mouth had already emerged from the golden silhouette's face, looking exactly like Ji Hao.

But what improved the most was the incomplete great Dao of destruction that Ji Hao gained during the fight between Yemo Shayi and himself. On the edge of the red sun primordial spirit, the dark light with sharp rays was now almost tangible. Ji Hao's red sun primordial spirit currently looked like a Xanthium, with a glowing red body and a dark edge. The dark rays around the red sun moved from time to time, making his red sun primordial spirit look dark and mysterious.

What surprised Ji Hao even more was that inside the red sun, behind the golden silhouette and the silver silhouette, an extremely faint and dim, dark silhouette had silently emerged. The dark silhouette was filled with a sense of destruction. It was thin, like a faint stream of dark mist, that could be killed by one gentle breath.

The dark silhouette was weak and faint, but it had indeed emerged! It represented the fact that Ji Hao had already understood the great Dao of destruction to a certain level.

"The Dao of destruction?" Ji Hao paused slightly. Suddenly, he thought of what he saw in the retrospect of the Disease God's life. After Pan Gu created this world, hundreds of millions of Chaos creatures attacked him. Facing those attackers, Pan Gu wielded his giant axe and crushed thirty millions of Chaos creatures with one move.

When Pan Gu wielded his axe, the axe was purely dark, same as the dark edge of Ji Hao's red sun primordial spirit.

"But Pan Gu's fighting style was way too simple." Thinking of the fight he watched through the Disease God's memories, Ji Hao shook his head. In his eyes, Pan Gu was just like a strong gorilla, madly hacking every living thing in front of him with a giant axe. He was indeed strengthful, but skill-less.

Yu Mu hissed in pain. The gray mist suffused in the tent slowly drilled into his mouth, eyes and nose. After that, the weak spirit power that belonged to the Disease God gradually disappeared from this world.

The Disease God streamer glowed brightly as it floated above Yu Mu's head. Gray streams of mist poured down, flowing into Yu Mu's body. Yu Mu's heart beat strongly. His heavy and muffled heartbeats were clearly audible; somehow, his heartbeat agitated the spirit blood of Ji Hao and Yemo Shayi.

Ji Hao looked at Yu Mu in shock. Loud heartbeats had been

coming out from his body. That heartbeat was strange, and even evil. It made Ji Hao feel like countless octopuses had crawled over from all directions, wrapped Ji Hao's heart with their tentacles, and attempted to control his heartbeat.

Dong! Before Ji Hao made any reaction, his heart beat heavily. A clear and strong heartbeat was generated from Ji Hao's chest, which shattered Yu Mu's heartbeat. The Disease God streamer shook intensely above Yu Mu's head, while Yu Mu suddenly opened his eyes. By now, Yu Mu had become a skinny man.

A dense layer of gray mist covered Yu Mu's eyes. He took a long breath that lasted for a whole quarter of an hour. Rich natural powers were inhaled into Yu Mu's body. Meanwhile, Yu Mu's skinny body began swelling, and a nice pinkness appeared again on his pale scrawny face. He slowly stood up, while his body expanded like a balloon.

As white and tender as always; all abnormal colors on Yu Mu's skin were gone. Ji Hao released his spirit power and covered Yu Mu's body. However, Yu Mu's power had become deep and mysterious, that no matter how hard Ji Hao scanned with his spirit power, he could only sense Yu Mu as a living being. He could never grasp a trace of Yu Mu's power, and neither could he measure Yu Mu's body shape with his spirit power.

"Eh? Is it done?" Ji Hao took a step forward and looked at Yu Mu nervously.

Yu Mu reached out his hands, scrubbed the back of his head, and said, "I think so, right? The 'Natural Disaster' has already merged with my body...No, it can't be explained in this way. Um, I think I ate the 'Natural Disaster'...No, still not right. Anyway, I can now freely control the Natural Disaster, and..."

Yu Mu raised his hand and dragged the strangely shaped, ugly Disease God streamer down, swaying it before Ji Hao's face. Then, he said to Ji Hao grinningly, "A lot of nice things are left in here.

Hmm, such as this locust infestation!

Yu Mu reached his hand into the streamer. The thin streamer was like a bottomless hole which swallowed a half of Yu Mu's arm. Rummaged in the streamer for a while, Yu Mu took out a fist-sized, gray-colored locust. Compared with ordinary locusts, this one had a giant pair of tusks, and extra large wings on the back. On its gray belly, some vividly colored spell symbols were visible.

"I didn't know this streamer still has its own spirit." murmured Yu Mu, "This streamer told me that I dared to try the 'Natural Disaster' with my own body and swallow such a strong magic poison into my body, which fits the spirit of the Disease God. Therefore, the streamer chose me and gave me the Disease God's legacy. "

"This locust infestation is a good treasure, a special one created by the Disease God. These locusts in there are countless, endless, and extremely fast. Back then, these locusts were the best helpers for the Disease God to spread diseases. With these locusts and this streamer, I can set up a locust infestation magic formation that will cover tens of thousands of miles in radius, and bring the 'Natural Disaster' to every water-kind creature within that region."

"Can you take it back?" Ji Hao asked hurriedly.

"Don't worry! I can easily release it, and easily take it back. I can control these locusts. Most importantly, it will be effective only to water-kind creatures!"

Yu Mu grinned and patted on his belly, which was large and round again. He held the streamer and wielded. Instantly, dense clouds of gray mist rose from the streamer along with a loud buzzing noise. Following that noise, billions of locusts flew out from the streamer.

These locusts were not large in shape. The largest ones were only around a foot long, while the smaller ones were extremely tiny,

and could even drill into pores easily. Without a top-grade power, no one could ever notice these tiny locusts. Indeed, these locusts were amazing, terrifying helpers, for spreading viruses, poisons, and diseases.

The gray mist puffed out of the headquarters tent, out of the city, and transformed into two dragon-like large streams. One of the streams headed east, and the other flew west, right upon the water surface, roaring towards those water-kind armies.

Swoosh! The gray mist swept across the crowds of water-kind creatures.

Chapter 1147: Hundreds of Millions of Floating Bodies

The gray mist puffing out of the headquarters tent startled everyone in the city.

Elder Bug smelled something familiar. He was the first to rush out of his room, grasped a handful of the gray mist, put it under his nose and carefully sensed it. After that, he swayed his hands excitedly and said, "Marquis Yao is amazing...He is definitely the best among all young human beings!"

He didn't know how Ji Hao managed it, but Elder Bug had already found out that the 'Natural Disaster' in the gray mist was different from the original one. Compared to the violent and crazy original version, the 'Natural Disaster' was now gentle and obedient, and would no longer run rampantly.

The 'Natural Disaster' was conquered by someone. But according to Elder Bug's years of experiences, the 'Natural Disaster' contained in the gray mist was much stronger than the original version. Once it was activated, it would be hundreds of times fiercer and more brutal than before, and no one affected by it would survive.

More terrifyingly, the 'Natural Disaster' was not only the single type of magic poison contained in the gray mist. Over ten-thousand strange kinds of viruses and toxins were also mixed in it. Those viruses and toxins were rather strange, completely different from anything collected by the Magi Palace in these years. However, every single type of these viruses and toxins was considerably powerful, and was highly lethal. Over ten-thousand types of strong viruses and toxins were mixed together, discovering which, Elder Bug worryingly estimated that even if the ancient God of Medicine, Shennong came back to life, this might still not be dispelled.

"Those water-kind creatures are in trouble." Elder Bug and a group of masters of Magic medicine and poison hurriedly rushed to the city wall, because they wanted to know how the gray mist would kill those water-kind creatures.They wanted to watch the whole process.

Curious human warriors instantly crowded the top of the city wall. They stood on their tiptoes, looking at those water-kind armies.

Some human warriors with even stronger curiosities mounted on their flying battle beasts and rose into the sky, slowly approaching those water-kind armies.

The gray-mist formed a tall and thick wall that crossed the water surface from the east to the west. Within a blink of an eye, the grey mist wall extended for over ten-thousand miles.

If the Disease God streamer were an ordinary piece of magic treasure, with Yu Mu’s current power, he wouldn’t be able to spread the mist to such a large range even if he attained the Disease God’s legacy. He would not be able to maintain the shape of the enormous gray mist wall either.

Fortunately, those locusts that flew out from the streamer were living creatures. They didn’t need any energy aid from Yu Mu. The dense gray mist had been puffing out from both sides of each locust. Therefore, the grey mist wall grew longer and longer, taller and taller. A large amount of the grey mist had dissolved in the water, spreading even more rapidly along the waving water.

From a great water-kind army, a three-hundred-meter-long swordfish wagged its tail and went through the gray mist wall. He sensed that some tiny things had stuck to his body. Therefore, he instantly transformed into his human shape and rubbed his skin hard with both hands.

Checking his body carefully for a while, the swordfish-man found nothing wrong. Confusedly, he scratched his head and murmured,

"What the hell? Eh? When did this gray mist appear?"

A strange noise could be heard. The swordfish-man simply scratched his head, but his fingernails broke his scalp, which was supposed to extra strong, and dragged a large piece off from his head. His fingernails scratched on his exposed skull and generated that strange cracking noise, which was not so pleasant to hear.

In a great panic, the other few swordfishes stared at this swordfish-man. These few smaller swordfishes had halfway transformed into human shapes, as their skins were still covered in fish scales, and heads were still fish heads. "Great Grandpa! Your head is broken! Your head is bleeding!" screamed these few small swordfishes.

The swordfish-man paused for a second, then dropped his hand, looking at the blood on his hand as he felt dizzy.

He never felt dizzy before. As a Divine-level strong spirit creature, he never even had a cold; no symptoms like cardiopalmus or cramp had ever happened to him either.

Therefore, this swordfish-man ignored the dizziness and stared at the blood on his hand, asking confusedly, "Did someone curse me to have blood on my head? But this isn’t right!"

The swordfish-man lowered his head and glanced at a black jade talisman tied around his waist. This type of magic talisman was created by Northern Wasteland Maguspriests,, specially designed for preventing all kinds of magic curses cast by those Maguspriests from the alliance of human clans.

Nothing was shown on the magic talisman, which meant this swordfish-man wasn’t cursed. But if he wasn’t cursed, he shouldn’t bleed, right?

The other few swordfishes suddenly quivered. One of them murmured, "Why am I feeling so cold...I feel cold from my bones. Ah, this place is even colder than the coldest days in Pan Luo

world."

This swordfish started to swing his body while speaking. He then opened his jaws and vomited. At first, the things came out from his mouth was the large pile of sardines he ate in the morning. But soon, he started to vomit gastric juice with a strange smell. After a couple of breaths, he started to vomit blood.

"Oi, you boys!" The swordfish man paused in shock. He pointed at the few great-grandsons of his, not knowing what happened to them.

Another two swordfishes started quivering. They covered their stomachs with their hands, screamed in pain as thunder-like noises came out from their bellies. Soon, they sat straight down on the water surface, suffering a serious diarrhea. Following the disgusting puffing noises, a giant amount of dirty things came out of their bodies, then blood.

The rest few swordfishes had a high fever. Differently sized pustules popped up from their faces, and grew larger and larger, then broke quickly, letting large streams of yellow liquid flow down.

As the pustules were growing, the few spirit swordfishes fell down weakly. Next, they began vomiting and having diarrhea as well. Within ten minutes, these strong spirit creatures were dehydrated, and were even out of shapes.

The swordfish man opened his mouth. All of a sudden, he sensed a strong death power from the surrounding environment.

He turned around in shock. In the water-kind army, divine-level ones like himself were still fine, while Magus-King-level spirit creatures had all fallen down, floating on the water surface while crying and wailing in pain. As for the ones under the level of Magus Kings, those had turned back to their original shapes, floated with their bellies facing the sky.

At the first glance, this swordfish man saw countless white bellies of water-kind spirit creatures, which had died suddenly, floating on the water surface.

A strong stink spread in the air. Pustules emerged on those white belies, as those corpses were rotting rapidly. Rotten blood and pus flew into the water, affecting the other water-kind spirit creatures which had been unharmed. Soon, all strange kinds of toxic symptoms happened in them too.

"My heaven, what is this?" The swordfish-man screamed in fear. Suddenly, he sensed a sharp pain from his stomach. That pain was indescribable and unbearable. He was a divine-level strong spirit creature, but still, he lost his eyesight temporarily because of that pain; even tears had flown out of his eye sockets.

His tears were red — All blood veins in his eyeballs had broken for an unknown reason, and the blood started flowing out of his eyes in streams.

Strong water-kind spirit creatures fell down, including the enormous ones. Meanwhile, the relatively weaker and smaller ones, and those countless ordinary water-kind creatures, died right on the spot.

Three hours later, a group of Eastern Wasteland archers mounted on giant birds, flying across the sky. Wherever they flew across, they saw nothing but the white bellies of dead water-kind creatures.

Chapter 1148: The Flowing Poison Never Stops

"My heaven!"

A golden scale horned turtle struggled miserably in a pile of corpses, as large streams of rotten blood gushed out of his mouth.

The water surface was now covered by corpses of water-kind creatures, layer by layer, all piled up. The piles of corpse upon the water surface were over ten meters tall, and the underwater space was also filled with corpses. Some corpses had even reached into the mud in the bottom of the water.

Golden scale horned turtles were born with a highly poisonous gallbladder, and were famous, highly poisonous water-kind creatures. They had strong immunity to all kinds of poisons, and could even be counted as poison-proof. This golden scale horned turtle was the leader of a family, in charge of the entire water-kind army that came from the highly toxic world.

However, as the gray mist swept across his army, all offspring of this golden scale horned turtle died, and that great army was almost wiped out. His enormous body was now covered in pustules. He slowly swam across piles of corpses, crying in pain and strugglingly activating his spirit poison contained in his gallbladder. He was barely fighting against the viruses and magic poisons released by Yu Mu.

A colorful spirit toxic mist had been coiling around his body like a beautiful cloud. A dense gray mist surrounded the colorful mist, crazily devouring the former like countless tiny bugs. The colorful mist had been shrinking all the time.

As the spirit toxic mist was devouring, the life of this golden scale horned turtle had been fading. Gradually, he could no longer move. Gasping weakly, he lied on the belly of a stiff dead dragon

whale, raised his head, and looked at the dark sky with the last bit of his strength. A heavy rain violently whipped his body. On the vast water, no other living being could be seen, except for himself.

"Lord Gong Gong...The poison...It's too strong!" The eye corners of the golden scale horned turtle split, squeezing out two stinky streams of blood. "Miserable...Too miserable...Human beings, human beings...They are too cruel, heartless. They want to destroy us, every last one of us!"

"Caw"

A shrill scream came from the sky. Mounted on an iron feather black eagle, Yi Di descended from a dark cloud with hundreds of elite archers, hovering above the turtle's head. Hearing the turtle murmuring, he couldn't help but sneer loud.

Cruel? Heartless?

Human beings wiped out several great water-kind armies, and that was cruel and heartless already? What about Gong Gong and his people? They raised this endless flood that drowned countless human beings. That was not cruel and heartless?

Human beings were forced to right back, for nothing else but allowing their children and grandchildren to live a free life under the sunshine. They were forced to fight in such a cruel and brutal way. Compared to the water-kind, how could human beings be described as cruel and heartless?

"What a giant turtle... Such a shame that it's poisoned and no good for eating anymore!" Sitting on the eagle's back, Yi Di laughed loudly, "But its shell is luxurious! These golden scales are quite beautiful too." He chuckled, "Take his shell and scales back. We can make some nice decorations with those!" Yi Di ordered his people.

The golden scale horned turtle raised his head and glanced at Yi Di with blood-tears in his eyes. He opened his mouth and tried to

talk, but tens of thumb-sized locusts flew out of his mouth. His throat and vocal cords were all corroded, and couldn't generate any sound.

The gray mist rapidly devoured the turtle's body. His spirit toxic mist was gone. Relying on his strong life-force, countless tiny locusts had been growing fast inside his body. Soon, large groups of thumb-sized locusts tore apart his body, creating thousands of bleeding holes on his skin while flying out.

These locusts devoured a great amount of blood and flesh. At the moment, their life-force had been boosted to an extreme point. They buzzed and hissed, which sounded like happy laughter. They raised their round butts and sprayed out billions of eggs.

Those eggs drifted in the air and eventually landed on those corpse piles. Gray mist streams began rising from the corpses, drilling into those eggs, which were even tinier than dust grains. These eggs started moving quickly, and soon, countless newborn locusts cracked their eggs.

A faint buzzing noise could be heard in every corner of the world, as billions of billions of newborn locusts, which were even smaller than dust grains, vibrated their wings and flew into the sky.

The gray mist shrouded the mountains of corpses. Those corpses decayed speedily, transforming into strands of spirit blood mist, being absorbed by the gray mist. Countless newborn locusts opened their mouthparts and greedily inhaled the spirit blood power contained in the gray mist. Their weak bodies were strengthened instantly, turning even stronger than metal.

Countless types of viruses, toxins and magic poisons mixed with the spirit blood power, merged with these newborn locusts. Over ten-thousand kinds of viruses and toxins devoured each other, merging with each other and mutating in those newborns' bodies. After this, the gray mist became even stranger, more lethal, and harder to deal with, for water-kind creatures.

This was the scariest feature of the Disease God streamer; it could efficiently upgrade the toxins it released, to make them even more terrifying to the enemies.

A sizzling noise lingered in the air. The corpse piles on the water disappeared in a short span of time, like mulberry leaves eaten by silkworms. The spirit blood of these dead water-kind spirit creatures hatched billions of billions of locusts, with upgraded toxins and viruses inside their bodies. The gray mist released by these newborns had a faint, cold, and blue luster.

A strong gale roared down along with large raindrops. In the north, countless water-kind spirit creatures were still heading south in ordered lines.

The gray mist spread way too swiftly, that the water-kind armies in the front had already been wiped out, but the armies behind hadn't found out anything yet. These water-kind creatures raised strong waves, marching to the south, while the gray mist wall, which was now over two-million-miles-long, unhurriedly moved northward.

The storm was especially strong, and the water surface was already covered in a dense white watery mist. Therefore, the gray mist released from the Disease God streamer didn't seem strange at all under the storm, mixed in the watery mist.

Countless water-kind creatures rushed into the gray mist. They didn't notice it, but, tiny locusts that were smaller than dust grains had already drilled into their bodies, releasing countless types of toxins and virus inside their bodies. Nourished by their spirit blood, those toxins and virus started growing and spreading readily...

The gray mist rolled towards the north. Behind it, all kinds of water-kind creatures floated up to the water surface, with belies facing the sky. These corpses then quickly decayed, turned into sticky blood, and were absorbed by the mist.

Occasionally, shrill screams let out by strong enormous spirit creatures could be heard from the mist. But these screams were too weak in the storm. Giant waves struck on the water surface, easily covering their cries and screams.

More dead water-kind creatures floated up. Sticky black blood gushed out of their bodies ceaselessly, as those fierce viruses and toxins had been crazily spreading and growing inside those corpses.

Chapter 1149: Be Uncovered

A tall tower stood in the middle of the city, surrounded by hundreds of Magi from the Magi Palace, who mastered the art of magic poison. They had all been trying their best to cast their own special magic poison, even showed their teeth and twisted their faces. Their magic poisons transformed into colorful dense smoke, flowing towards the tall tower.

Yu Mu sat straight on top of the tower. His eyes were colorful, as if countless beautiful poisonous bugs had been crawling inside his eyes. The Disease God streamer stood before his face, swallowing streams of colorful mist created by those Magi Palace Magi, while releasing strands of grey mist, which had been merging with Yu Mu's body.

As the successor of the Disease God streamer, Yu Mu now had the 'most poisonous body' in the world. By now, the magic poison that could kill all ordinary living creatures within a second was highly nourishing to Yu Mu.

After the Disease God fell, the Disease God streamer disappeared. It was hiding for countless years before it was given to Yu Mu. During all these years, the world had changed, and powerful beings had died. The magic poisons controlled by the humankind at present, were much stronger than the ones back in the ancient time. For the streamer, these new magic poisons were the perfect nourishment. The Disease God streamer absorbed those new magic poisons, then sent countless oddly shaped spell symbols into Yu Mu's body. They worked to fix the Disease God magic seal inside Yu Mu's body, stimulating and strengthening the magic seal.

Within three days, the poisonous materials brought by Elder Bug and the others had been consumed by eighty to ninety percent. Meanwhile, from a low-grade Divine Magus, Yu Mu had directly become a peak-level Divine Magus. The sense of power released from his body was now profound and mysterious, that even Ji Hao

would have his heart beat fast when he scanned across Yu Mu's body with his spiritual power.

"Viruses, toxins, poisons, all terrifying things indeed." Ji Hao stood on the city wall, looking at the tower in the middle of the city, with his mouth corner twitched.

In these couple of days, Yi Di and the other Eastern Wasteland commanders had been mounting on their giant birds, flying all over this area with their warriors. Wherever they reached, they saw absolutely nothing but corpses of water-kind creatures. Those water-kind creatures died so miserably. By now, the gray mist released by the Disease God streamer and those locusts had already moved north for over ten-thousand miles. Behind the gray mist was a death zone.

Ordinary water-kind creatures, powerful, enormous water-kind spirit creatures which were strong enough to turn an ocean upside down, none of them survived the mist. Apart from the those already killed ones, in the further northern area, countless water-kind creatures were already down with the sickness.

They hadn't touched the gray mist directly. Instead, they were only infected through the distance. Therefore, they hadn't died yet. The main water-kind forces had moved south, while these ill ones hid in the northern water zone, raising countless icebergs to protect themselves. They could now barely protect themselves.

Northern Wasteland archers had been keeping watch on those icebergs. They found out that the water-kind armies were in lack of herbs. Those water-kind creatures could only fight against illness with their strong life-force. Within these couple of days, more than one-hundred-million water-kind spirit creatures fell ill.

Once the gray mist reached this area, they would all die, every single one of them.

"Lack of herbs?" Hearing an archer's report, Ji Hao couldn't help but laugh out loud. He was totally taking pleasure in those water-

kind creatures' misfortune.

Even Hao Tao laughed, who always had a dark and serious face. They were lacking herbs, and couldn't brew medicines to cure themselves. This was their own fault, and no one else should be blamed for it.

This area was a part of Chi Ban Mountain. Before the flood came, many herbs existed on the mountains, in the valleys, and especially the grassland on the northern side of Chi Ban Mountain. That grassland was a large herb producing area, and quite a lot powerful spirit herbs could be found over there.

But the flood had come, which destroyed all plants on that grassland, including those life-saving spirit herbs. It would be ridiculous if those water-kind spirit creatures could still find any herb to save their own lives.

Elders and commanders from all clans laughed out loud too.

Emperor Shun gave them a mission, and they accomplished it perfectly. They did not only stall those water-kind armies, stopping them from heading south, they had also killed countless water-kind creatures with toxins and viruses. When the flood faded, these people could go straight to Emperor Shun and tell him about all contributions they had made. Probably every elder and commander in this city could earn a title of earl, which meant they would each have an independent, private territory. How wonderful would that be?

Which human being wouldn't want his or her children to have a fertile territory to live and develop in, and even build another strong clan, other than the clan he or she was born in?

They were human beings. No matter how, they relied on the land they lived on, and they always loved it. Having an independent, private territory, this was the pursuit of life of many brave human beings. Being awarded by the human emperor, earning a title of 'earl', and even 'marquis', that was just beautiful.

Therefore, everyone laughed happily and excitedly, showing their teeth which were shining under the lantern light.

While they were laughing, a loud howl suddenly burst from the sky. Following the howl, large streams of black blood poured down, merging with the storm and splashing all over the sky.

Countless violent thunderbolts struck down from the sky, along with a fierce cold power, landing on the Pan Gu Defense magic formation and the surrounding water. The Pan Gu Defense magic formation easily bore the thunderbolts and the cold power, but the surrounding water area was shaken overwhelmingly. Giant waves bumped thunderously against each other, then the strong cold power turned these waves into icebergs.

While pulling the city forward, those starry void spirit turtles screamed anxiously. The water surface was freezing quickly, and the ice layer was especially thick and strong. Even these enormous turtles couldn’t break it.

The slowly moving city was frozen on the ice. Under the strong cold power, this wooden city started creaking loudly.

High up in the air, a piece of cloud was suddenly shattered. Through the giant hole in the dark cloud layer, the sunlight poured in. Showering under the glaring sunlight, even Ji Hao closed his eyes. He hadn’t seen the actual sunlight for so long.

Xiang Liu fell from the sky while howling. His ten-miles-long body was covered in wounds, with black blood spraying out. As he got closer and closer to the water surface, his body turned smaller and smaller By the time he was only thousands of meters away from the water surface, he had already transformed back into his human shape.

He was vomiting blood. The black blood coming out from his mouth froze immediately. Xiang Liu raised his head and looked at the giant hole in the sky, howling himself hoarse, "Flood Dragon King...You just wait and see! I swear, I will make you pay for what

happened today, hundred times more...I, I, I will destroy your ice flood dragon family. I will peel you, tear you apart...I will pull your soul out of your body and burn it like a lamp wick!"

Three thousand ice flood dragons surrounded a giant iceberg and flew over. Inside the iceberg, the true body of the Flood Dragon King slowly opened its eyes. Smiling faintly, the Flood Dragon King responded, "Whatever you want...It's not convenient for me to kill you today. Lucky for you, your life is spared this time...Next time I see you, your whole family will be dead."

Xiang Liu cursed again. Next, he subconsciously glanced down at the water surface.

The boundless water-kind armies were gone, and the air was suffused by a strong scent of blood. Xiang Liu screamed with a hissing voice, then immediately turned to the north. He saw an endless, over ten-thousand-meters tall gray mist wall, slowly pushing north.

"The Disease God streamer! How can it be? The Disease God died long ago...I saw it with my own eyes...I saw someone kill him, and even his soul was destroyed...Who else can use the Disease God streamer? No, no, who has become the new Disease God?"

Xiang Liu screamed with his dry, hoarse voice. He looked at Ji Hao’s water city, and he couldn’t believe his eyes.

In a funk, he glanced at Yu Mu, then howled shrilly out and rose back up into the sky, leaving a dark smoke stream in the air.

Chapter 1150: It Has an Affinity for The Flower

Xiang Liu fled right away, but he was wounded badly by the Flood Dragon King, and was much slower than he usually was.

Seeing Xiang Liu's seriously injured body, Ji Hao sneered evilly, then let the golden bridge dart out of his forehead. It transformed into a clear beam of light, wrapped up a few people and himself, swiftly chasing towards the dark cloud Xiang Liu left.

The Flood Dragon King narrowed his eyes and coldly watched Ji Hao chasing Xiang Liu. A cold stream of air spurted out from his eyes and transformed into a handsome middle-aged man, who trod on a frigid cloud and descended towards the city.

"Little monkey, come out!" The Flood Dragon King coughed slightly, then shouted towards the city.

Yuan Li happily rushed out of the city. When he was still three-hundred meters away from the Flood Dragon King, he kneeled directly down and slid to the Flood Dragon King with his knees. Then, he flatteringly hugged the Flood Dragon King's leg with both arms.

Raising his head, Yuan Li looked at the Flood Dragon King with his sparkling eyes and asked worryingly, "How's Snow?"

The Flood Dragon King held his hands behind his body and looked down at Yuan Li. Suddenly, the Flood Dragon King's mouth corners twitched — The fight between Xiang Liu and himself only lasted for a short couple of days in above the sky. But, how come the sense of power that came from Yuan Li's body had already changed so severely?

At the moment, the Flood Dragon King sensed a prehistorical, violent power from Yuan Li's body. Even as the Flood Dragon King, he was shocked, and almost frightened. That power was still

weak, yet it had a terrifying nature. It was an immense power, that would be strong enough to turn the world upside down and crush all the natural powers in this world.

Wuzhi Qi couldn't do that. He could never help Yuan Li to improve so much. Days ago, when the Flood Dragon King saw Yuan Li for the last time, he was still an ordinary mix-blooded little water ape. This radical change must have happened in these few days after he followed Ji Hao's lead.

Thinking of Ji Hao, the Flood Dragon King's dark blue eyes sparkled brightly. Finally, he carefully looked at this City Ji Hao built with respect.

Nothing seemed to be special about this city, before he paid a closer look at it. This was a simple wooden city, and all spell symbols hid in it was simple too. But once the Flood Dragon King observed it carefully, the thin and dim layer of light released by the Pan Gu Defense magic formation, which had the whole city covered, made the Flood Dragon King's heart shake slightly.

"This is truly...Even the Sky Pillar was made into a magic treasure...And it's right here, protecting this city...Who are behind this Marquis Yao Ji Hao?"

Pondering for a short while, the Flood Dragon King nodded. He gently patted Yuan Li's head and said, "Snow is fine. Although her body is damaged, her spirit pearl is unharmed. The bodies of ordinary dragons aren't good enough for her...Fortunately, a hundred and twenty thousand years ago, I found an ice dragon generated by the essence ice power in the bottom of the North Sea Glacier. That creature is not yet conscious, so I can let Snow take that body."

The Flood Dragon King talked nicely to Yuan Li, while Yuan Li quietly nodded, with a leg of the Flood Dragon King held in both of his arms.

High up in the air, Xiang Liu gasped quickly while fleeing

towards the Heaven desperately. While flying, he was murmuringly cursing the Flood Dragon King. He thought the Flood Dragon King was going through a ten-thousand-year natural trial, and had no time to deal with anything else. That was why he told Xiang Liu Junior to sneakily approach Snow. He never thought that the Flood Dragon King would seal himself in ice and leave the North Sea with an army of fierce ice flood dragons. Moreover, the Flood Dragon King left a trace of his soul outside, gathered the essence ice power and created a body for it. This clone of the Flood Dragon King wounded Xiang Liu seriously. If Xiang Liu hadn't been cultivating himself in these years, and relied on a few powerful treasures he luckily attained, he would truly be beaten to death by the Flood Dragon King.

"You old b*stard, sooner or later, I will peel you, pull out your tendons, and drink your spirit blood, then eat your soul." cursed Xiang Liu, "Where are you truly from? We're both prehistorical creatures, but how can you be so much stronger than me? I, Xiang Liu, I am not weak!"

Riding on the golden bridge, Ji Hao had already chased up. Hearing Xiang Liu, Ji Hao laughed out loud and said, "Old Xiang Liu, it's not a background problem, it's about your moral quality! Well, of course, you silly old snake, you surely don't understand what 'moral quality' means!"

Feng Xing and Yi Di stood on the golden bridge and pulled open their divine bows together. They both threw a threatening glance at each other, and in the next moment, shreds of afterimages were left in the air by their arms, while the two divine bows banged thunderously. Within a single second, Feng Xing had already released three-thousand 'wolf tooth' arrows, while Yu Di had shot two-thousand, nine-hundred and seventy-seven.

Xiang Liu screamed out loud. Thousands of 'wolf tooth' arrows roared towards him like a storm. Xiang Liu didn't manage to dodge. During the fight between the Flood Dragon King and

himself, the powers of the few Supreme-level defensive treasure he had had been consumed up. At the moment, the few treasures were healing themselves and couldn't protect Xiang Liu.

In a great hurry, Xiang Liu flashed across the air and showed his original shape. A giant nine-headed serpent appeared in the air, with countless scales swiftly darting out from his sticky, mottled body. They tore apart the air like tiny sharp daggers, flying towards those arrows.

A long and loud series of puffing noise was started. Feng Xing's bow was the greatest treasure of the Eastern Wasteland; it was the sun-falling divine bow, used by the ancient god, Yi, for killing ancient three-legged Gold Crows. Yi Di's bow was called thunder-running bow, which was also one of the ten divine bows in the world. Facing two divine bows added with the 'wolf tooth' arrows Ji Hao produced with the mysterious caldron, Xiang Liu's scales could never protect him. Thousands of arrows penetrated Xiang Liu's scales and sank deeply into his body.

Over five-thousand fist-sized holes were left on Xiang Liu's giant serpent body. Blood spurted out in massive amounts. Xiang Liu was already injured pretty badly, and now suffered this. He howled out miserably, even having tears gushing out of his eyes.

"I am three arrows more than you!" Feng Xing proudly glanced at Yi Di

"Damn! Next time!" Yi Di was ashamed into anger. Till now, elite archers from Eastern Wasteland clans were still quite angry about Feng Xing having the greatest divine bow. Therefore, not a single Eastern Wasteland archer would willingly admit defeat to Feng Xing.

Ji Hao too a step forward, cracked the space with his body and popped straight out before Xiang Liu's face.

"Old Xiang Liu, you've come all the way here. Don't leave, stay, be our guest!" Ji Hao locked his right fingers together and created a

sharp series of dark beams of sword light, hacking down towards the middle head of Xiang Liu while laughing coldly, "Emperor Shun would love to listen to my suggestion and peel you to turn you into spiced meat!"

Xiang Liu roared shrilly. He opened his nine mouths and attempted to attack Ji Hao with poisonous gases and venoms. But before he could do that, a dark shadow flashed across his body and generated a heaven-shaking scream. Xiang Liu's nine heads each suffered a hack simultaneously.

Yemo Shayi launched his attack. His heavy sword evilly pierced into Xiang Liu's jaws, then came out from his skulls. All nine heads of Xiang Liu were injured severely. Shaking those heads, Xiang Liu cried in pain. Ji Hao hurriedly wielded his right arm down and cut off Xiang Liu's middle head.

"Er..." Xiang Liu wailed in despair. Normally, he would never take people like Ji Hao and Yemo Shayi seriously. But today, he was wounded severely by the Flood Dragon King just now, and was very weak at the moment, without even a slight little bit of power left in his body. How could he ever survive Ji Hao and the other fierce people on Ji Hao's side?

"Together, chop him! One of Gong Gong's eight senior ministers? Haha!" shouted Ji Hao.

Ji Hao wielded his right arm and released another beam of sword light. As Xiang Liu's second head was about to be chopped off as well, a lotus suddenly bloomed on that head.

"Xiang Liu, you're destined to meet me."

Chapter 1151: A Magic Lotus

Seeing the lotus bloomed and hearing the familiar voice, Ji Hao's heart missed a beat, yet his right arm still swung down fiercely.

Following a slight crack, the lotus bloomed on Xiang Liu's head was chopped into two, then transformed into strands of light mist and dissipated. A soft yet extremely strong power came sideway and dragged Xiang Liu's enormous body away. Meanwhile, a white hand slapped at Ji Hao's rib.

This hand came so suddenly and quietly that Ji Hao didn't notice it until it was only three-inches away from his body, despite the fact that he had his spirit power spread out all the time.

The Taiji cloak glowed instantly. Clear streams of mist rose wave by wave like the petals of a large blooming lotus. The hand slightly quaked, then tore apart tens of waves of clear mist in a row. However, after the hand tore apart each wave of clear mist, hundreds of waves of clear mist would puff out of the Taiji cloak and surround Ji Hao layer by layer, rotating like a giant whirlpool. A strong, unbreakable force was generated from the cloak, which pushed the hand hundreds of meters away.

"A nice treasure!" That hand disappeared, and instead, Priest Hua's scrawny face showed up hundreds of meters away, looking at Ji Hao's Taiji cloak from up to down with narrowed eyes. "This is Brother Dachi's work, isn't it? Indeed a masterpiece!" said Priest Hua.

Ji Hao smiled faintly, glanced at him and responded blandly, "I learned about the great Dao of Taiji from Uncle Dachi, but this Taiji cloak is not Uncle Dachi's work. This cloak is made by Uncle Qing Wei and my Shifu, and a nameless priest, with quite a lot of great materials and time."

Priest Qing Wei, Priest Yu Yu, and a nameless priest?

Through countless centuries of severe cultivation, Priest Hua's heart had already become as hard as a rock. Nevertheless, hearing Ji Hao, he still quivered in shock, and his face twitched intensively. He raised his eyelids and looked at Ji Hao from head to toe in surprise, then nodded slowly, "I see... I do not have the luck to own this treasure."

Ji Hao giggled. 'Finally, I know someone that even you dare not to offend, don't I?' Thought Ji Hao.

Did Priest Hua know the mysterious, powerful being that Ji Hao sensed faintly in Priest Dachi's palace of Dao? 'This treasure is destined to be mine', this was what Priest Hua would say for any treasure he saw. But facing Ji Hao's Taiji cloak, he dared not to say that anymore.

"I'm afraid that you don't have the luck to take Xiang Liu either." Ji Hao pointed at Xiang Liu, who now only had eight heads left, and one of those heads was vomiting sticky black blood. "Priest Hua, give Xiang Liu to me, then we can talk," said Ji Hao coldly.

Priest Hua frowned. Once again he carefully observed Ji Hao's Taiji cloak from up to down. Pondering for a short while, he slightly shook his head and responded, "Xiang Liu is indeed meant to be under my guidance. In the future, he will become a venerable guardian of my sect."

"Xiang Liu is a sinner!" said Ji Hao with a harsh tone, "He is causing disasters. Priest Hua, are you really going to accept such an evil creature?"

Priest Hua narrowed his eyes and smiled quietly warmly. He mildly nodded to Ji Hao and said with a soft voice, "What disaster did Xiang Liu cause? The one who raised this flood is Gong Gong. Does Xiang Liu has anything to do with it?"

Before Ji Hao could respond, Priest Hua smiled and continued, "As for Xiang Liu's sins, he may have killed some living creatures, but as long as he is willing to thoroughly reform himself and

follow my guidance, the supreme power of my sect will naturally wash off his sins."

Ji Hao looked at Priest Hua coldly. "'A butcher becomes a Buddha the moment he drops his cleaver'. Is that what you mean?" said Ji Hao without a second thought.

Priest Hua's face twitched again for three times in a row. His smile faded as he stared at Ji Hao in a complicated way and murmured the sentence Ji Hao said over and over again. Repeating the sentence for tens of times, Priest Hua dropped his eyelids and said blandly, "What is a 'Buddha'? Ji Hao, stop talking nonsense. Xiang Liu's life will not be ended today by you. I am here, and you can't do nothing to him."

Xiang Liu's enormous body slightly wriggled. His muscles squirmed, squeezing out all 'wolf tooth' arrows stuck inside his body. He gasped quickly, showed his teeth, and stared at Ji Hao. He laughed coldly and said through his gritted teeth, "Ji Hao, a powerful being is willing to help me today. You can't kill me! For what you tried to do today, I will make you pay, a thousand times more! You wait, you wait and see!"

Priest Hua smiled, then turned over his palm. On his palm was a fist-sized lotus seed, transparent, splendidly glowing like a beautiful colorful crystal piece, emitting a strong and refreshing aroma.

"Xiang Liu, you are a strong creature, given birth by the world itself. You shouldn't die in Ji Hao's hands. This magic lotus will heal your body, cure your wounds, and cast away the negative energies accumulating in your body for all these years. Your body will be cleansed, your blood will be purified, and you will grow much stronger, even reaching a new level of your cultivation!"

While smiling, Priest Hua continued in a bland tone, "At present, you can only grow power, yet your cultivation hasn't improved for many years, am I right? This magic lotus will solve all problems for

you."

Xiang Liu blinked his eyes, lowered a head of his, and picked up the lotus seed with his mouth.

Watching Xiang Liu do that, Ji Hao abruptly laughed, "Xiang Liu, you're under Gong Gong's command, but now you're throwing yourself into Priest Hua's lap. Do think about the consequences!"

Xiang Liu paused instantly, but Priest Hua chuckled relaxedly. He looked at Ji Hao with a big grin on his face and said, "Marquis Yao, you're wrong. I am standing aloof from all worldly affairs. Xiang Liu will become a disengaged guardian of my sect after he follows my guidance. Meanwhile, he can serve as a senior minister under Gong Gong's command. Nothing will change, nothing will change."

Xiang Liu laughed, let out his long fork-tongue and wrapped the lotus seed into his mouth.

Seeing Xiang Liu preparing to swallow the lotus seed, Ji Hao sneered again and said, "Do you truly dare to eat that? You shouldn't eat anything given by a stranger, should you? Even three-year-old kids know that. You're the famous Xiang Liu, but do you really dare to swallow that lotus seed?"

Xiang Liu paused again. Priest Hua immediately made a vow, "I swear with the future of my sect that this lotus seed will only help by friend Xiang Liu, and will not do any harm to him. If I say one world untrue, my sect will fall apart, and will never rise!"

Ji Hao gave up. With a heavy heart, he watched Xiang Liu swallow that lotus seed, but couldn't stop it from happening.

A magical power released from Xiang Liu's body. The head chopped off by Ji Hao grew back out instantly, while Xiang Liu's scrawny, skinny, zombie-like body gradually swelled. At the same time, a thriving life-force spread out from his body. The sticky liquid covered on his scales disappeared quickly, while his scales

turned clean, translucent, and vividly colored with a beautiful luster. He looked quite young now.

A clear beam of light flashed across Xiang Liu’s lusterless eyeballs. He abruptly opened his mouth and coughed out streams of sticky and stinky liquid.

"I understand!"

Xiang Liu shouted deeply, before a lump grew out from a neck of his. Puff! The tenth head grew out from Xiang Liu’s body.

The power vibration released from Xiang Liu’s body rapidly grew stronger. Xiang Liu roared towards the sky, then pounced on Ji Hao.

Chapter 1152: Sweet Words

While Ji Hao fought Xiang Liu in the air, Yuan Li was hugging the Flood Dragon King's leg, grinning flatteringly, as he wanted the Flood Dragon King to bring him back to the North Sea.

He wanted to see Snow having a new body, and only then could he stop worrying.

Man Man sat on the city wall as she watched Yuan Li hug the Flood Dragon King's leg tightly. "This old Flood Dragon King is such a nice man. My Abba would have kicked this water monkey away long ago!" Giggled Man Man.

The Flood Dragon King heard Man Man's giggles, sighed slightly and shook his head. But suddenly, he raised his head and shouted resonantly, "Who are you, my friend?"

A faint green light spot descended from the sky. Within the green light was a dust-grain-like linden leaf. Yet somehow, it seemed to even cover the whole world. The linden leaf quickly drifted down. The beautiful green linden leaf had golden veins; it shone brightly with a green light. The green light shone on the light screen created by the Pan Gu Defense magic formation. Two different colored light clashed against together. The Pan Gu bell buzzed, then shattered the green light.

Human warriors in the city all felt that their bodies were suddenly tightened and their minds weren't clear for a second. But soon, these discomforts faded. Meanwhile, Yuan Li and the Flood Dragon King, who were outside the coverage of the Pan Gu Defense magic formation, both had their bodies suddenly lightened after the green light poured on their bodies. Next, they arrived in a bright and warm place, sensing the fragrances of flowers and hearing the twittering birds.

They stood on a boundless grassland. The grass had reached their waists, waving like an ocean. Not far away, a few winding rivers

had been flowing peacefully. The river water was bottom clear, yet not sand or stones could be seen on the river bottoms, because crystals, pearls, jades and all kinds of gemstone had taken their places.

Some linden trees were scattered on this broad grassland, with luxuriant foliage. These trees seemed to be located randomly, but in fact, the locations of these trees and the distances between them represented a complicated natural pattern.

Yuan Li didn't understand it; he only felt that these linden trees were quite beautiful. The Flood Dragon King was thousands of times stronger than Yuan Li, and his experiences started from the prehistorical era. He almost knew all the answers. At first glance, he realized that these scattered linden trees were actually a great magic formation. Once the Flood Dragon King discovered this great formation, he sensed that a strong invisible force had chained his body, disabling him from making any move easily.

A long bright shout could be heard, and followed a series of rustling noise, the few rivers rippled. Countless tender shoots drilled out from the bottom of those rivers, growing rapidly. Soon, the surfaces of the few rivers were covered by lotus leaves, then countless lotuses bloomed slowly, and the air was suffused with a sweet aroma.

Right in front of the Flood Dragon King and Yuan Li, the ground sank into a hundred-miles-wide pit. The pit was glowing splendidly, as it was filled with all kinds of gemstones and pearls. Next, the pit became a lake, meters deep, bottom clear, emitting a sandalwood aroma.

A towering linden tree stood on the left side of the lake, while a seven-colored lotus bloomed in the right side of the lake.

The linden tree released a green light that shone straight into the sky. It transformed into a green cloud that covered the entire lake. From the cloud, green light spots with long tails descended, falling

into the water, causing silvery clangs like pearls falling into a jade bowl.

The seven-colored lotus sent up soft streams of glowing mist, which transformed into a colorful could in the air, pouring down golden and silver light streams. They fell into the water like a splendid light rain, sounding beautiful.

"My friend, long time no see. How are you?" A bland voice came from the linden tree.

A green light emerged from the tree trunk. From the light, the scrawny Priest Mu walked out slowly, his face filled with bitterness. A wooden staff was carried in his left hand. He raised his right hand and slowly bowed to the Flood Dragon King.

The Flood Dragon King sighed slightly and responded, "I'd be fine if you never show up."

Priest Mu narrowed his eyes and said with a mild tone, "You wanted my help, so I came for you. Since I am already here, this is your great chance to come join us. If you, my friend, are willing to join us, you will become the third owner of our sect, just like the two of us."

Deep wheezes could he heard. Three-thousand ice flood dragons who surrounded that enormous iceberg, which had the Flood Dragon Kings' true body sealed in it, flew over slowly. Obviously, they were dragged into this strange world as well.

"The third owner?" The Flood Dragon King laughed out loud. He looked around and showed a natural, proud look, then continued, "Can I be the highest one among all?"

Priest Mu remained silent for a while. He slightly waved his wooden staff and responded blandly, "If you can take three strikes from me, we can let you be the highest one."

The Flood Dragon King's face dropped. He stared at Priest Mu and said with a louder voice, "Do you think that I can't take three

strikes from you? If I am so weak, why do you want me to join your sect anyway? Priest Mu, are you humiliating me?"

Priest Mu narrowed his eyes again and responded with that symbolic bitter face of his, "My friend, if you join our sect, your ice flood dragon family will become the head of our dragon guardian department. Our sect has eight guardian departments, and they are all related to the future of our sect, important and honorable. My brother and I have been working on it with no spare efforts, for tens of thousands of years...This is also an opportunity of the ice flood dragon family."

The Flood Dragon King grinned frigidly. He glanced at his three-thousand ice flood dragons and said in an ice-cold voice, "I see, you want to recruit me because you want fighters, don’t you? You two are full of sweet words. You can easily find a large batch of strong spirit creatures to join you. But, why do you bother to come all the way to me?"

"How can ordinary spirit creatures join us? Which one of our disciples isn’t a powerful being with a strong background?" Priest Mu answered blandly with that bitter face of his.

The Flood Dragon King shook his head and said with a deep voice, "My family is strong and independent in the North Sea. We are free and happy. Why should we get involved in your business? Priest Mu, you go deal with your own problems. Don’t bother me."

Raising his head and looking at the clear sky, the Flood Dragon King continued coldly, "Will you let me out? Or do you want me to break this tiny place of yours?"

Priest Mu remained silent for a while, then slowly reached out his right hand. On his palm, a feet-long small white dragon coiled quietly. "That ice dragon from the North Sea Glacier is meant to be one of us. I’ve already brought her here."

The Flood Dragon King paused instantly. He stared at that small white dragon in shock and said, "You..."

Priest Mu then pointed down at the beautiful lake and said, "The water in this lake can perfectly nourish your daughter’s spirit pearl, allowing her to merge with this new body without suffering any harm. In addition to that, this water can also largely improve her body condition, giving her an immeasurable bright future!"

Priest Mu slowly squeezed a faint fake smile out of his dry, wrinkled face, and continued, "My friend, what do you think?"

The Flood Dragon King’s face twitched from time to time. For a long while, he didn’t say a word.

Chapter 1153: Motionless

High up in the sky, Xiang Liu laughed maliciously while pouncing straight on Ji Hao's face.

Yemo Shayi transformed into a shred of dark shadow, merged with Xiang Liu's shadow. He prepared to gave Xiang Liu a heavy strike with a secret Dark Sun magic, but Priest Hua suddenly tightened his face and burst with a bright growl, "Non-humankind monster, don't you dare! Piss off!"

Following his strong voice, Priest Hua clenched his five right fingers, then quickly loosened. A thunderbolt roared out and struck straight on Yemo Shayi's body.

Yemo Shayi howled in pain. His clothes were all shattered, and his arms, which were raised to protect his face, were torn into pieces. He vomited blood and stepped backward quickly. He stared at Priest Hua in a panic, gritted his teeth and murmured with a deep voice, "You, it was you...The ones who fought our 'Blood-thirst' weapon back then... were you and your people!"

Priest Hua smiled. Looking at Yemo Shayi, who was badly wounded and had been drawing back quickly, made an elegant face, slowly shook his head and then nodded. No one knew what he meant, but he felt wonderful anyway.

Facing Xiang Liu, Ji Hao swiftly drew a few circles in the air with his left hand. Circles of air ripples spread out, raising rapid airstreams that wrapped Xiang Liu up.

Xiang Liu was slowed down largely. He looked at Ji Hao in confusion, while Priest Hua frowned aside and shouted, "The great Dao of Taiji, going on and on without an end? Xiang Liu, break it with your strength, simply attack. He's no one but a little kid. Don't fight him with your special powers. Crush him with your strength instead!"

Xiang Liu was enlightened immediately. He roared resonantly, then his body began expanding speedily. Within a blink of an eye, he became over a thousand miles long, with his ten hideous heads staring straight at Ji Hao together. He opened his mouths and breathed deeply. Right after that, a shrill series of scream came from every corner of the whole world, sounding like countless evil ghosts.

Ji Hao felt that thousands of ghosts had been dragging his primordial spirit, even seeming to pull his primordial spirit out of his body, then tear it apart and feed it to Xiang Liu. Ji Hao's left hand paused shortly, then those circles he drew in the air fell apart one after another. He fell forward; no matter how hard he struggled, he could not free himself from the strong suction force released from Xiang Liu's mouths.

A dry and creepy voice came from Xiang Liu's stomach, laughing wildly, "Marquis Yao Ji Hao, my nine heads can release poisonous gas, venom, swamp power, disease power...But I never thought that the power of my tenth power would be the power of soul...I can take your soul now, are you feeling it?"

Ji Hao raised his head and glanced at Priest Hua in a slight fear.

Priest Hua smiled and said mildly, "You're a disciple of my friend Yu Yu, so I surely will not bully you myself. Besides, I'm far away from all worldly affairs, and I will not step into any internal affair of your alliance of human clans."

'Will not step into any internal affair of the alliance of human clans? Yet you've already started cutting the ground from under Gong Gong's feet!' Ji Hao cursed in his head. However, Ji Hao clearly understood that he shouldn't start any verbal battle against Priest Hua, because this old thing had a golden tongue in his mouth. With that tongue, he could almost talk the black into white, and talk the dead back to life. Ji Hao was afraid that no one in the world could ever win a verbal battle against Priest Hua!

"Elder Hua, it would be the best if you don't do it. Otherwise, I'd have no choice but letting my Shifu sort this out with you afterward." Ji Hao instantly stopped Priest Hua from continuing his speech with a tough tone, then a golden stream of flame spurted out from his erect eye.

East Emperor Taiyi's nine dragons chariot transformed into a hundred-mile-radius sun and flew out from Ji Hao's eye. Ji Hao roared out loud, then hopped onto the chariot. A red sun rose slowly from his head. The red sun had a dark edge, shining with sharp rays along with its dazzling red light, as it merged with the nine dragons chariot.

The sun rode high in the sky. The purely positive power in this area suddenly reached an extreme point. Within thousand-mile-radius, all dark powers were wiped out immediately.

The power of Xiang Liu's tenth head was the power of soul, that allowed him to capture the souls of his enemies. However, Xiang Liu was an evil creature with dark powers, and the soul power he had was also dark, extremely dark.

Once the nine dragons chariot rose, the golden light poured all over Xiang Liu's body. A, meters thick layer of golden flame covered Xiang Liu's body, burning his scales and skin. Streams of black smoke puffed out of his body.

Xiang Liu screamed in pain, while clouds of black smoke rose from his body. His tenth head suffered the worst, as both large eyeballs of that head had been blinded by the golden flame. Within a second, those eyes were burned into ashes, leaving two hollow sockets with black blood flowing out.

"The chariot of the East Emperor Taiyi!" Xiang Liu screamed hoarsely, quickly transformed into his human shape, and fled backward, "This treasure has disappeared for many years! Why do you have it? Who gave it to you?"

In Ji Hao's red sun primordial spirit, a clear golden silhouette

emerged slowly. A raging-dragon-like strong sun power was released from that golden silhouette, as Ji Hao had been boosting up the power of the nine dragons chariot as hard as he could, releasing the golden sunlight and illuminating the whole area.

He would never tell Xiang Liu that it was Wuzhi Qi who gave him this treasure!

Priest Hua instantly popped up his eyes, greedily staring at the nine dragons chariot. His facial muscles twitched slightly as he suddenly gave a loud and long sigh and said, "Marquis Yao Ji Hao, Xiang Liu is a Senior Minister of your human government too. How can you collude with a non-humankind monster and try to kill him?"

Ji Hao paused. Even Yemo Shayi, who had fled to over ten miles away, and was hurriedly spreading ointment on his wounds, paused in confusion as well. Feng Xing, Yi Di and the others, who were watching from the side and prepared to join the fight, were all deeply confused.

Earlier, Priest Hua said that he would never step into any internal affairs of the alliance of human clans, but why did he suddenly say something like this to Ji Hao just now?

Colluding with a non-humankind monster? Where did that come from? Yemo Shayi was a slave of Ji Hao, and Ji Hao won him over from Yemo Luoye, by risking his own life!

With a fake warmth, Priest Hua looked at Ji Hao, just like a father looking at his ‘beloved son’ with disappointment. Then, he sighed and said, "Marquis Yao Ji Hao, if you were an ordinary human being, I would let you do anything you like...But you’re a disciple of my friend Yu Yu. How can I watch you walking onto the wrong path?"

Sighing again slightly, he continued with a deep voice, "The bitterness will never end. Turn around, Marquis Yao Ji Hao, reform yourself with kindness and live again. You still have time!"

Priest Hua waved his hand. Following his move, eight men silently descended from a dark cloud in the sky and surrounded Ji Hao. Priest Hua then continued, "Ji Hao, I am a friend of your Shifu, so I shouldn't do anything to you myself...But, I can't bear watching you ruin your own life. Therefore, I will let the 'venerable eight winds' from my sect teach you a good lesson!"

The eight priests who descended from the sky were all neatly dressed and handsome. Each one of them had been releasing a strong and special power vibration. Clearly, these were all well-cultivated beings.

Hearing Priest Hua, these eight priests smiled faintly, then bowed to Ji Hao together.

"Brother Ji Hao, we created a magic formation called 'eight wind motionless'. Please, give us your advice!"

Before their voices faded, fierce gusts of wind suddenly screamed around Ji Hao's body, transforming into countless golden daggers and swishing to Ji Hao.

Chapter 1154: Sudden Unexpected Change

Countless extremely thin streams metal power transformed into hard sand, raising sharp gusts of wind as they compressed into golden daggers, swishing towards Ji Hao. These golden daggers were especially sharp. The golden shine of the nine dragons chariot swept across the sky for hundreds of miles far, melting all metal things it touched. But those fierce golden daggers had been drilling into the golden light along with loud sizzling noises. Many golden daggers almost touched the chariot before they were finally melted.

Ji Hao was shocked silently; even eight random disciples of Priest Hua could cast powerful magics like this! That so-called eight wind motionless magic formation of theirs, could it even break the golden light of the nine dragons chariot?!

But, Ji Hao gritted his teeth when he gave a closer look. He thought these eight people were all greatly powerful cultivators, but he saw a flag gripped in each of their hands. As they gently wielded those flags, strong metal power streams would roar out, transform into golden daggers, and swish to Ji Hao.

The power vibrations released from those flags were especially strong, and was rather familiar to Ji Hao, exactly same as the power vibration came from Priest Hua's body! These eight flags should belong to Priest Hua, yet they were now used by these eight priests to fight Ji Hao!

Instead of saying that Ji Hao was fighting against these eight people, he was fighting directly against Priest Hua.

Those flags were waved again. After the waves of sharp golden wind, rapid cold airstreams swooshed out and immediately transformed into fist-sized solid ice blocks, smashing towards Ji Hao. The cold power released by these ice blocks was amazingly strong. The golden light of the nine dragons chariot was narrowed

down by seven to eight miles by these ice blocks.

After the frigid series of airstream came a scorching hot gale. The dark hot gale rolled up puffs of black sands, violently clashing against each other in the air and starting countless fire sparkles. These fire sparkles landed on the golden light of the chariot, blasting immediately and thunderously.

Ji Hao stood on the chariot like a fragile leaf in a waving ocean. The nine dragon chariot was shaking intensely, and so were Ji Hao's internal organs.

A gentle breeze followed after the scorching hot gale. The breeze seemed to be harmless, but as it blew across, Ji Hao sensed a weird coldness from his entire body. His red sun primordial spirit vibrated suddenly. That breeze had actually avoided the golden light of the nine dragons chariot and directly attacked Ji Hao's primordial spirit.

Ji Hao hurriedly activated the Taiji Universe mirror and released a clear beam of light. The clear light vibrated intensively and spread out clear waves of air ripples in the sky, finally naturalizing the dangerous breeze for Ji Hao.

The eight priests waved the eight flags with all their strengths, releasing all strange types of air streams, roaring around the nine dragons chariot. Ji Hao cast all defensive magics he knew, and activated all of the powerful treasures he had. No matter how strongly those dangerous air streams blew, nothing could ever hurt Ji Hao.

Xiang Liu stood beside Priest Hua, gasping quickly. He glanced at Priest Hua, snorted coldly and said, "Priest Hua, my friend, you will never do anyone any favor for nothing. I owe you one now. How should I pay you back?"

Priest Hua sighed slightly and looked at Ji Hao, who was stuck in the eight wind motionless magic formation. He grinningly bowed to Xiang Liu and said, "My friend, you misunderstood me...I

invited you to join us with pure kindness...In the future, something terrible will happen to you, you can survive that only by joining our sect."

Xiang Liu's face twitched, then he responded with a deep voice, "Then..."

Priest Hua smilingly took out a lotus petal from his sleeve, handed it to Xiang Liu and said, "The flood is sweeping across the whole world now, and human beings are struggling. Xiang Liu, my friend, do us a favor. Tell your armies that if they see people living in places with lotuses blooming, don't bother those people."

Xiang Liu paused slightly, then put the lotus petal into his sleeve and asked with a low voice, "So simple? Places with lotus blooming...hmm, you..." As he smirked, Xiang Liu squinted at Priest Hua and continued, "I thought you and your brother are truly kind and merciful. It turns out you only protect those people with lotuses around them!"

Priest Hua maintained that faint smile on his face as he lowered his head, glanced at the vast water, sighed slowly and responded, "Those people joined my sect. They're our disciples now. Facing a disaster, they can call the names of my brother and me, then they will be protected, and be spared from all disasters; not even wild beasts can hurt them anymore. Only our disciples can be shielded by us...As for the other human beings...My brother and I attained our powers with efforts."

Xiang Liu quivered slightly. He glanced at Priest Hua with fear and remained silent for a while, then laughed abruptly.

"Good, good. Since we all understand what is going on, let's make it clearer. Look at what Gong Gong is doing. I think he might suffer at last. If he succeeds, fine, I might as well have a fabulous future. Perhaps, one of those divine emperor thrones in the heaven will be mine."

"But if he fails, please, my safety will be counting on you and

your brother, my friend."

Xiang Liu seriously bowed to Priest Hua and said, "Everything will be depending on you, Master!"

Priest Hua smiled, slightly raised his hands and told Xiang Liu that he didn't need to bow. He was satisfied by Xiang Liu's attitude. "Great...Xiang Liu, if you are willing to join us, you will surely be different from those ordinary disciples. Your position will be as high as the deputy masters of our sect...As for your offsprings...Why don't you select some of them and let them follow me now? Thus, no matter what will happen in the future, you shall worry no more."

Xiang Liu raised his eyebrows and pondered for a while. He seemed to be convinced, as he nodded and took out a bone tablet from his sleeve. He handed to Priest Hua, then pointed at the north and said, "Good! In my place under Sky Mountain in Ling Water area, I hid some of my most talented offspring. Master, please take good care of them. They are the best of best."

Priest Hua nodded in satisfaction, then took over the tablet and glanced at the north. His body flashed slightly, then a white silhouette flew out of his body. That was another priest who looked exactly the same as Priest Hua himself. That priest smilingly bowed to Priest Hua and said, "My friend, what can I help with?"

Priest Hua gave the bone tablet to the priest, smiled and responded, "My friend, please, take a journey to the north. In the future, those kids will all become the backbone of our guardian departments!"

That priest nodded, then took over the tablet. He transformed into a beam of white light and disappeared without a trace.

Xiang Liu's wrinkled face twitched intensely, then he gazed at where the priest disappeared and murmured, "My friend, you are indeed powerful."

Priest Hua smiled again, took a calabash out of his sleeve, and handed to Xiang Liu.

"A single pill in there can cure all kinds plague and magic poison in the world. My friend, use these well!"

After handing the cyan calabash to Xiang Liu, Priest Hua swung his arm and slapped Xiang Liu with his brand sleeve. A strong gale rolled Xiang Liu up and sent him away swiftly.

Chapter 1155: Break the Formation and Kill

Inside the eight wind motionless formation, Ji Hao raised his head and watched Xiang Liu fly away. His heart was torn with anxiety.

‘Damn you, Priest Hua.’ Ji Hao cursed in his head. Ji Hao didn’t doubt the power of his magic pills. The Disease God streamer was indeed powerful and fierce, and the legacy of the Disease God was certainly reliable. Yet, Priest Hua’s magic pills could definitely cure the plague started by the Disease God streamer.

Once the Disease God streamer was defeated, those water-kind armies would continue heading south, and Si Wen Ming’s flood-control plan would be affected. Human beings would suffer longer, and countless human beings would struggle and cry miserably in the flood. By then, Priest Hua could naturally start recruiting believers all over the world, when everyone’s heart would be shaking. But how many people would die?

A sharp beam of light flashed across Ji Hao’s eyes. ‘A hero is nothing but a product of his or her time’. Suddenly, Ji Hao understood what this meant. Sometimes, one might not want to risk one’s life and be a hero, but some things and people would force one to do it. One was forced to do things that no one would do in peaceful days, and somehow, he would become a hero.

Just like Ji Hao under the current situation. What Priest Hua did just now forced him to do some almost crazy things.

"Yemo Shayi, head back with your people. Before Xiang Liu defeats the Disease God streamer with Priest Hua’s magic pills, tell Minister Hao Tao to lead the army to the north along with the gray mist and kill every last water-kind creature on their way!"

"Kill all of those damned water-kind creatures!" Ji Hao growled cruelly. The Disease God streamer was efficient, but in coordination with the human army, the massacre would happen

hundreds of times faster. Even though Xiang Liu now had those powerful magic pills, Ji Hao could still take a heavy bite from those water-kind armies before Xiang Liu cured those water-kind creatures.

Yemo Shayi cautiously glanced at Priest Hua and said in a deep voice, "Dear Master, as your loyal slave, I can’t leave you here alone. This is..."

"Piss off!" Ji Hao suddenly turned around, wielded his Taiji divine sword and shredded a few dark gusts of wind. He growled to Yemo Shayi like a beast, "Follow my order!"

Ji Hao’s eyes were glowing red. Looking at Ji Hao’s eyes, which were filled with nothing else with the intent of killing, Yemo Shayi even quivered in coldness. He hurriedly bowed to Ji Hao, then wielded his hand and transformed into a dark shadow. Wrapping up Feng Xing, Yi Di and the others, he quickly merged with a dark cloud.

Priest Hua smilingly looked at Yemo Shayi, who left in such a hurry, and said slowly, "He’s nothing but a non-humankind monster. I can easily kill him by flicking my little finger, but I am merciful. I don’t want to kill too much."

"Nothing good will happen if you kill him." Ji Hao looked at Priest Hua coldly and said, "Priest Hua, Don’t try to full me with your beautiful words. I know you, although not for long, but I know what kind of a person you are."

"I am not a person!" Priest Hua smiled warmly. He looked at Ji Hao and said in a mild, gentle tone, "Therefore, Marquis Yao, do not judge me with your mortal standards. In your eyes, I am evil. But in my own eyes, what I have done and have been doing are just right, perfect fit for the great Dao of nature."

"The great Dao of nature?" Ji Hao laughed out loud, staring at Priest Hua.

"Don’t laugh." Priest Hua locked his fingers before his lower abdomen and looked at Ji Hao with smiling eyes as he continued in that gentle voice of his, "I know more about the great Dao than you. The Dao in the Chaos, the Dao in Pan Gu world, I know them both more than you...Shame, what a shame, Yu Yu met you the first. Otherwise, you would have become a valued disciple of mine, and in the future, you would have an important position in the sect."

‘An important position in the future’?

Thousands of thoughts flashed across Ji Hao’s mind. He sneered, waved the broad sleeves of his Taiji cloak, and dispelled all fierce airstreams generated by the eight wind motionless magic formation. While sneering, Ji Hao said, "This magic formation of yours is average. It won’t be easy for you to take this nine dragons chariot from me."

Priest Hua nodded seriously to Ji Hao, then responded with that smiling face, "No rush, no rush. The effects of this magic formation will grow stronger and stronger. Now you’re simply trapped, but later, you will know the...Ah!"

While he was speaking, down below, a black turtle and a dragon-horse leaped out of the water surface together. They roared towards the sky, then transformed into a black beam and a white beam, and darted back into the water, slipping away like fishes.

"My He Tu and Luo Shu!" Priest Hua instantly transformed into a hazy stream of light, diving straight down to the water surface down below, without even taking another glance at Ji Hao. Ji Hao saw nothing but a bright light flashing across the air, but Priest Hua had already dove into the water, following behind the turtle and the dragon-horse.

‘No wonder Priest Hua showed up in this place for no reason. He was after Hetu and Luoshu.’ thought Ji Hao.

Back then in the Feather Mountain area, Sun Peng and a group of

Chaos monsters trapped Si Xi and Ji Hao and killed Si Xi. Later on, with Ji Hao's help, He Tu and Luo Shu were freed from Kun Peng's control.

He Tu and Luo Shu escaped happily, but were discovered by Priest Hua, who coincidentally passed by. It had been so long after that, but Priest Hua still hadn't caught the two treasures.

Priest Hua left suddenly. The eight priests glanced at each other, then shouted out together and threw their flags up into the sky. Next, they quickly sat in the midair with legs crossed, put their hands into their sleeves, and each took out a human-head-sized jade calabash. Their calabashes gad different colors, and a spell symbol was carved on the bottom of each calabash, representing a special cardinal direction. The eight priests pulled out the plugs of those calabashes together, and a loud bang could be heard right after that. Nearly-tangible, extremely strong gusts of wind were released from the eight calabashes immediately.

These gusts of wind speedily wrapped up those flags floating in the air. The air around Ji Hao's body began shaking intensively, then evil dragon-like gales roared in the sky, shaking the sky, cracking the space, and creating countless thin space cracks in the air.

Through these thin cracks, small traces of Chaos tide squeezed in and mixed with those fierce gales, strengthening them by tens of times.

The nine dragons chariot quaked intensely, but its golden shine was forcibly narrowed to around ten miles wide.

One of the eight priests, a young man, chuckled to Ji Hao and said, "Marquis Yao Ji Hao? You're not the East Emperor Taiyi after all. This nine dragons chariot, you can't even release one ten-thousandth of its power!"

Ji Hao smiled faintly and responded, "Can't I? Just now, Priest Hua was here to protect you, so I didn't want to make the fight too

intense."

As he sneered, the golden bridge roared down from the sky, transformed into a clear golden light, and surrounded Ji Hao. It cracked the space and brought Ji Hao out of the magic formation.

The fierce gales inside the magic formation suddenly lost their target. Without the strong golden light of the nine dragons chariot in the middle, those fierce gales bumped thunderously against each other. The eight priests trembled intensely, and some of them even suffered a great pain from the great counterforce. Their jade calabashes suddenly popped out from their hands.

Standing on the chariot, Ji Hao laughed out wildly, "Now, how much of this chariot's power do you think I can release?"

From the red sun primordial spirit, pure sun power flew into the chariot, then a dazzling golden light shone in the sky. The bodies of the eight priests started burning ragingly. They screamed desperately in pain, but golden flames puffed out from inside their bodies and quickly burned their bodies and their souls.

Chapter 1156: The Flood Dragon King Changes

Yemo Shayi rushed back to the water city with Feng Xing, Yi Di and the others. But once they saw the city from a distance away, all of them gasped in shock.

The enormous city floated on the water surface, without moving even slightly. A soft layer of green light covered the city, releasing a strong, inviolable power vibration. The ten-thousand starry void spirit turtles, which were pulling the city, now hid their heads and limbs in their shells, quietly floating on the water and daring not to make any sound.

Yemo Shayi stopped, standing on the water surface with the others. They dared not to approach.

In that beautiful small world, the Flood Dragon King had his eyes fixed on the small white dragon coiled in Priest Hu's hand.

"How did you predict that?" Abruptly, the Flood Dragon King curved his lip corners upwards, yet the fire of anger was burning in his eyes. "Snow lost her body. Did you plan the whole thing behind? You must have, you've done many things like this back then!"

The Flood Dragon King slightly trembled. He pointed at Priest Mu and shouted, "Back then, the deaths of the first generation of original divine gods in Pan Gu world...The disappearance of the first five divine emperors...You and your brother, you should be blamed for all those things!"

Priest Mu slightly dropped his eyelids, silently looking at the small white dragon in his hand and said nothing.

The Flood Dragon King sounded a bit hysterical when he continued, "If you weren't warned by someone, if you weren't expelled to the poorest Western Wasteland, and if you were

allowed to leave Western Wasteland, with your greediness and evilness, you would have ruined this world already!"

Gritting his teeth, the Flood Dragon King lowered his voice and sneered in a frosty tone, "Good, good, good, this time, your scheme is targeting me! You want me, fine. But, why did you hurt Snow too?"

A few creaking noise could be heard. Spider-net-like cracks suddenly appeared on the iceberg, spreading quickly, as the Flood Dragon King's true body sealed in the giant iceberg, was moving slightly, seeming to come out and start a life-and-death fight against Priest Mu.

"I am not targeting you with any scheme." Seeing the Flood Dragon King almost exploding, Priest Mu finally responded slowly, "I swear with my heart of Dao, without a foresign, I just suddenly realized that your daughter needs help. Then, I specially went to the North Sea Glacier, broke the ice, and captured this ice dragon. She is not yet mature, and neither is conscious."

Raising his eyelids, Priest Mu slowly glanced at the Flood Dragon King and continued, "I've also purified her body and helped her grow nine strong meridians, by using the 'three light divine water', 'sky one true water' and 'great dark dew'. I also consumed some of my own spirit blood for that."

The Flood Dragon King's face twitched again. Subconsciously, he glanced at the small white dragon in Priest Mu's hand. Clearly, he was surprised.

"This pool of mine is generated by the natural reward power, and the water in this pool is the water of natural reward. My friend, if you nourish your daughter's spirit pearl with the water in this pool, then let her take the body of this ice dragon, she will be as healthy as before." said Priest Mu blandly, "I want you to join us with honesty and sincerity, my friend, to be our third Master."

Yuan Li was dumbfounded; he couldn't even talk now. The 'three

light divine water', 'sky one true water' and 'great dark dew', were all top-grade pre-world spirit treasures. A single drop of any of these could create an ocean, and could even generate miracles. To any water-kind creature, these three types of water were even more precious than dragon spirit blood. Dragon spirit blood could provide water-kind creatures with a possibility for them to become true dragons, while these three types of pre-world water could largely improve the bloodlines of all water-kind creatures. With enough amount, these three types of pre-world-water could make an ordinary water-kind creature's bloodline as strong as the dragon bloodline!

For this little ice dragon, Priest Mu used all the above three types of pre-world spirit water to strengthen her body!

Yuan Li couldn't even imagine how gifted this ice dragon was now. With nothing else but the nine strong meridians she had, she was already more talented than Snow with her old body. Yuan Li clearly understood that Snow was a little silver flood dragon, and she only had six main meridians inside her body.

The Flood Dragon King remained silent for quite a long while as Snow's spirit pearl floated in front of him, Priest Hu's hand had reached to him as well, with the little ice dragon coiling right on his palm. Inside Snow's spirit pearl was a faint dragon silhouette, glancing at the ice dragon from time to time. Apparently, she was interested in this body as well.

"The third master..." The Flood Dragon King sighed slightly and said, "If I truly become your third master, I might have to exert my utmost effort for you and your brother...What a shame, what a shame! I lived a free life in the North Sea for so many years. Do I really have to get myself involved in the world of mortals? It's like wriggling in a mire..."

"The world itself is a large mire, and every living being is wriggling in it. Unless we can thoroughly understand the supreme Dao of this world, who can escape? Who can be truly free?" Priest

Mu looked at the Flood Dragon King and said honestly, "The so-called freedom, it’s only on the surface. My friend, when have you ever freed yourself from this mire?"

The Flood Dragon King turned around and glanced at the three-thousand ice flood dragons behind him, then glanced at Snow’s spirit pearl and looked at the ice dragon in Priest Mu’s hand.

Hesitating for another long while, the Flood Dragon King smiled bitterly and said, "Alright, alright, my little girl dragged me into the mire. Fine, I’ll take it. But I will not be your third master. Give me a position without much work to be done."

Priest Mu slowly, and strenuously gave a smile with his bitter, wrinkled face. His smiling face was even worse than his crying face. He raised his hand and gently threw a little ice dragon into the pool. The Flood Dragon King sighed slightly, stroked Snow’s spirit pearl, and threw it into the pool as well.

Priest Mu turned around his palms. Instantly, a splendid glow rose from the pool, while strands of black and yellow natural reward power descended from the sky, slowly merging with Snow’s spirit pearl and that ice dragon.

Priest Mu then nodded to the Flood Dragon King and said in a deep voice, "Snow is perfectly gifted. I am willing to take her as my last disciple. In the future, when she is strong enough, she will take my place and become a new master of our sect. What do you think, my friend?"

The Flood Dragon King’s tightened face seemed to be eased a lot. He slowly nodded and responded, "How many years will that take? Not to mention the others, it’s good for my daughter to have a tutor to guide her and restrain her, so that she won’t recklessly get herself killed again!"

From a long distance away, Yemo Shayi and the others saw the green light gradually fad above the city. Suddenly, thousands of people showed up before the city. Those were the Flood Dragon

King, Yuan Li and the three-thousand ice flood dragons.

A frigid gale roared in the air. The sky seemed to collapse, as countless dark cracks appeared in it. Through those cracks, fierce and frosty gales blew down. The iceberg with the Flood Dragon King's true body sealed in it cracked, then a hundred-mile-long dragon-head slowly reached out from it and let out a freezing breath towards Ji Hao's city.

Following the rumbling swooshing noise, the over one thousand miles square city on the water was frozen, sealed in an enormous iceberg, which had the radius of over ten-thousand-miles.

People in the city couldn't come out, while people outside the city couldn't get in.

This freezing breath even killed countless of those lotuses in the gray mist released from the Disease God streamer.

Chapter 1157: Endless Iceberg

"Oi, Oi, Uncle Flood Dragon!" Yuan Li looked at the Flood Dragon King in confusion, but the Flood Dragon King only took a quick glance at him and told him to ‘conduct himself well’. Then, he flew into the sky with the group of ice flood dragons and soon merged into the dark clouds in the sky.

Yuan Li stood on the water surface, without knowing what to do. What happened just now was like a dream, hazy and misty, that he couldn’t remember it clearly. Soon, nothing else but some very vague memories were left in his head. Snow seemed to be sent to a safe place by the Flood Dragon King, but where did she go? And what exactly had happened just now? Everything faded from Yuan Li’s brain.

"Uncle!" Yuan Li raised his head and shouted sadly towards where the Flood Dragon King disappeared, "How’s Snow now? What happened earlier? Why did you freeze that city?"

The Flood Dragon King didn’t respond. He had gone far away with his people.

Yuan Li helplessly sighed. He took a few circles, but he didn’t know what to do. Then, he lowered his head and looked at the enormous iceberg under his feet. This iceberg was over ten-thousand miles in radius, and the thickest part of it was nearly a hundred miles wide. However, this tremendous iceberg was perfectly transparent. Through the thick ice, Yuan Li clearly saw people in the city angrily banging against the ice. Hundreds of thousands of human warriors roared in anger, bashing the ice with their weapons. Yet, the ice remained perfectly unharmed.

Next, tens of Eastern Wasteland Divine Magi pulled out the strongest ‘wolf tooth’ arrows and shot the iceberg from the inside. Not a single scratch was left on the ice, while those arrows all shattered on it. Afterward, Divine Magi from the other clans all

launched their moves. At first, they didn't use all of their powers, but saw the ice remain completely motionless under their attacks. These Divine Magi were enraged. Without hesitation, they all launched full-power attacks to the ice.

At the moment, raging flames, thunderbolts, hurricane and hails all blasted above the city, added with all strange types of magic powers, striking on the ice along with dazzling lights.

Nevertheless, nothing happened to the iceberg, which was created by a breath of the Flood Dragon King. All strong human warriors in the city joined hands and tried for a whole quarter of an hour, but failed to leave even a mark on the ice.

"Is it truly so hard?" Through the tens of miles thick ice, Yuan Li saw those people in the city, but heard nothing. He stared at the unharmed iceberg and curiously pulled out the dragon staff, the one Yu Yu gave him.

"Ha-yah!" Yuan Li burst with a great roar. His long silver hair stood straight up one after another while he carried the staff up and flicked, then bashed violently on the iceberg, sending out waves of warm light. He spared no effort for this strike.

The dragon staff landed thunderously on the iceberg. Followed the loud bang, Yuan Li managed to leave a fist-sized dent on the iceberg with the powerful treasure given by Yu Yu. However, a shrill howl of Yuan Li came right after that. The dragon staff was sent flying away by the great counterforce, while Yuan Li's arms were nearly blown up. He cried so hard in pain that even had his face covered in tear and snot. Seeing This, Yemo Shayi excitedly pulled out his heavy sword.

"Great supreme Dark Sun, please gift me the inexhaustible power of destruction! Let every living creature in this world witness your greatness and dreadfulness."

Yemo Shayi murmuringly cast a spell. Meanwhile, his body transformed into a dark stream of mist that wrapped up his heavy

sword, then hacked fiercely down. Yemo Shayi was as powerful as a Supreme Magus, and for this strike, he activated all of his power, one hundred percent.

After another thunderous bang, Yemo Shayi howled out loud in pain, exactly the same as Yuan Li.

The heavy sword clanged against the iceberg, and screamed weirdly, after which, an over ten-miles-long, a foot wide, and three feet deep crack appeared on the iceberg, while the sword was sent straight into the sky by the counterforce. Yemo Shayi's arms were severely damaged as well, with the blood splashed everywhere.

"This...That flood dragon...He is...Is he truly so powerful?" Yemo Shayi raised his head in shock and glanced at where the Flood Dragon King disappeared. "Great supreme Dark Sun, I was weak back then when we invaded this world. Fortunately, I didn't encounter this terrifying creature!"

Yemo Shayi quivered slightly. He now had a clear understanding of the Flood Dragon King's power, and was shocked. Back then, when the non-humankind invaded Pan Gu world, some powerful non-humankind beings traveled across the space and helped the invading forces. Silently, Yemo Shayi considered himself lucky. Fortunately, those powerful non-humankind beings helped.

Ji Hao trod on a stream of light, flashed across the air, and returned to the city. From a long distance away, Ji Hao saw the city was sealed in an iceberg, while Yuan Li and Yemo Shayi were both with a pair of damaged, bleeding arms. Blood had still been flowing out from their wounds. People in the city saw Ji Hao coming back; Man Man and Shaosi had been waving to Ji Hao through a thick layer of ice.

"Break!" From around ten miles away from the iceberg, Ji Hao flicked his wrist and sent out the Taiji divine sword. The Taiji divine sword transformed into a silver and golden, long streak of light, which pierced into the iceberg along with a high-pitched

swishing noise. Following a sizzling noise, the three-thousand-meter-long sword light sank into the iceberg for over a thousand meters deep.

"Explode!" Ji Hao swiftly locked his finger together, then spread them out. The golden light and silver light transformed from the Taiji divine sword quickly merged together. The essence sun power and the extremely negative power clashed against each other, and immediately generated hundreds of fist-sized Taiji thunderbolts which blasted in all directions.

Those Taiji thunderbolts drilled deeper into the iceberg, as easily as sizzling in the air. Along with a few muffled booms, those thunderbolts expanded to hundreds of miles long. From each Taiji thunderbolt, a trace of extremely negative power spread out, which instantly triggered the thin yet extremely pure pre-world cold power contained in the iceberg.

A puffing noise could be heard without an end, as a hundred-miles-wide area of the iceberg was torn down by those Taiji thunderbolts. The ice was evaporated, and became clouds of steam, rising into the sky. A ten-miles-wide hole was opened up on the iceberg, beyond the city, and was large enough for warriors in the city to going out and in.

"Haha! I knew this bloody iceberg is not a problem for Ji Hao!" Man Man was always confident about Ji Hao. She excitedly raised her pair of hammers and banged the two hammers against each other while shouting for Ji Hao.

"This...This is probably because his power can naturally suppress the ice power, right?" Yemo Shayi watched Ji Hao break the iceberg, but still, he couldn’t believe his eyes. A full-power strike launched by himself only managed to create such a tiny crack on the iceberg, but what Ji Hao had achieved was way more than that!

"It’s because of the magic he cast and his powerful sword, but has nothing to do with his own power...My dear master is indeed

strong, but his cultivation...He is only a Divine Magus after all...A top-grade magic, a top-grade sword... so enviable." Yemo Shayi bowed deeply to Ji Hao and paid his highest respect to Ji Hao.

As people in the city were cheering and shouting for Ji Hao, countless gray-white beams of light flashed across the iceberg, sealing the large hole Ji Hao created back up with a thick layer of ice.

Chapter 1158: Caught Flat-Footed

"This!" Looking at the resealed iceberg, Ji Hao was shocked.

He quickly flew to the disappeared hole and touched the newly sealed ice with his hand. The surface of the ice was clean and smooth, and no coldness could be sensed from it. On the contrary, Ji Hao sensed a weak warmth drilling into his body.

The extreme of Yin could generate Yang. This iceberg created by the Flood Dragon King was not as simple as it looked like.

"Interesting!" Ji Hao closed his mortal eyes and opened the eye of Dao. His three-inch-long eye of Dao opened slowly and released a clear light. Within the light, strange glowing crinkles sparkled faintly; each one of these crinkles was a naturally formed mark of the great Dao, seeming to be mystical.

Showering under the light released from Ji Hao's eye of Dao, the iceberg disappeared. A purely white sphere of cold mist remained above the city, flowing slowly. The white mist was an entirety, but had divided into millions of river-like streams, flowing around. This was a powerful, great-scale magic formation.

The Flood Dragon King let out a simple breath towards the city. In fact, through this breath, he activated the natural Dao and built a natural magic formation, a high-grade one. With Ji Hao's current knowledge, he could only tell that this was a magic formation. As for where the core and entrance of this magic formation were, and the operation pattern of this magic formation, he had no clue.

"The Flood Dragon King!" Ji Hao frowned, but then he gave a big warm grin while waving to Man Man and Shaosi through the thick ice to ease their worries. Afterward, he stood up, activated the Taiji Universe mirror.

"Go!" The Taiji Universe mirror released a white and misty beam of light, immediately expanding into a ten-miles-wide column of

light, shining on the iceberg in front of Ji Hao.

Following a sizzling noise, the dazzling light column created a ten-miles-wide path in the iceberg, speedily extending down. Within seven to eight breaths, hundreds of miles thick ice layer were penetrated, and the path led straight into the city.

However, countless more gray-white beams flashed across the iceberg, dazzling like fishes. Within a blink of an eye, the path was filled back up with ice, and this time, this entire iceberg was added with a faintly sensible white glow.

What made Ji Hao speechless was that faint white glow was actually the purest extremely negative power!

This iceberg created by the Flood Dragon King could absorb all attacks coming from the outside, transform the enemies' powers into his own, then strengthen and upgrade itself, making itself even harder to destroy. And apparently, the Flood Dragon King had also gained a rather deep understanding of the extremely negative power. Otherwise, this iceberg would never be able to absorb the extremely negative power Ji Hao released.

"We have trouble now." Ji Hao sent the Taiji Universe mirror back into his spirit space, then gasped deeply. The pair of fire snakes coiled on Ji Hao's shoulder glanced at each other and raised their heads together. They widely opened their jaws each let out a golden stream of raging flame towards the iceberg. The lava-like flame streams struck on the iceberg and sent up puffs of fire crystals.

The pair of snake gasped loudly for air while continuously flaming the iceberg. They had been around Ji Hao for years. Therefore, the fire they spurted out already contained a trace of sun power, which made it hundreds of times more powerful.

Nevertheless, this raging fire merely managed to melt a thin layer of ice on the surface of the iceberg.

Flaming the iceberg for a quarter of an hour, the pair of snakes were exhausted. They weakly lied on Ji Hao's shoulders while the iceberg remained unchanged at all. Strands of white glow rose slowly from the iceberg. Because of the intense fire attack launched by the pair of snakes, the extremely negative power contained in the iceberg was strangely raised.

Ji Hao pondered for a short while, then let out the nine dragons chariot. Treading on the chariot, he boosted up the power of the chariot as much as he could and allowed the chariot to shine dazzlingly like the sun. The iceberg was instantly covered in a bright golden light. The iceberg was entirely transparent; the golden light went straight through it, twisted, and refracted in the iceberg, giving the enormous iceberg a splendid look, like a golden mountain. Trying for a whole hour, Ji Hao consumed up his power. As for the result, a sixty miles thick layer of ice was melted. Other than this, nothing else happened to the iceberg.

The sizzling noise could be heard once again as those gray-white beams flashed across the iceberg and quickly healed it. The iceberg was not only healed, the thickest part of it had even grown to around two-hundred-miles thick!

"This!" Ji Hao scratched his scalp, Yemo Shayi and the others were stunned as well. In the city, Hao Tao, Tao Sha and all the others, none of them knew what to do. The Flood Dragon King was too cruel, such that with a single breath, he almost wasted this city.

Divine Magi and Magus Kings had long lifespans. Therefore, those warriors commanders in the city would be fine, even if they have to be sealed in the iceberg for three to five hundred years. However, those elite warriors were all Senior Magi, and Senior Magi still needed to breathe for life!

The iceberg sealed the entire city. Although the Pan Gu Defense magic formation was still protecting the city, allowing a large space for the city, according to Ji Hao's estimation, the air left in

the city could last no more than half a month.

If the iceberg couldn’t be dealt with soon, this elite human force might die in there.

"Flood Dragon King..." Ji Hao gritted his teeth and activated the golden bridge. The golden bridge was able to travel across the space, and was best at breaking all kinds of magic seals. Back then, with the golden bridge, Ji Hao even managed to sneak into the Heaven and steal the breathing earth. The Heaven was guarded by the divine heaven and earth great formation, yet the golden bridge easily went through it. Based on this fact, it was not hard to imagine how powerful and magical the golden bridge was.

As a faint golden beam of light flashed across the air, Ji Hao merged into the iceberg, descended towards the city.

Following that familiar sizzling noise, countless soft yet strong white beams coiled the golden bridge up. Ji Hao controlled the golden bridge, continuously diving down. He felt that his body was wrapped in thousands of soft tentacles, and could only move in a very slow speed.

From the faint golden beam transformed from the golden bridge, countless arrow-like clear light streams suddenly darted out and flew forwards, silently shattered countless white beams. Afterwards, Ji Hao felt his body was light and flexible again. After twenty minutes, Ji Hao finally went through the iceberg and returned to the city.

"Eh?" Man Man and Shaosi both knew how powerful the golden bridge was. Normally, with the gold bridge, even a million-miles could only take Ji Hao only a second. But why did this two-hundred-miles-thick iceberg take Ji Hao such a long time?

They hurriedly walked to Ji Hao and held his hands.

"Hm, we’re in a little trouble now." Ji Hao smiled bitterly. He could indeed bring people in or our with the golden bridge, but

with his current power, he could carry no more than fifty people with the golden bridge. This was a huge city. With so many warriors and mounts in it, how could Ji Hao bring all of them out all by himself?

This was an unbreakable iceberg. Would the entire army truly be stuck in the city by this

iceberg till death?

Chapter 1159: Helpers

On the vast water, countless icebergs were connected closely, forming a glacier. In the darkness, strands of glowing green mist and dim flames spurted out from those icebergs from time to time. Those thin, matted, yet evil-looking mists and flames slowly rose into the sky and burned silently for a while, then died gradually. Right after that, more mist streaks and flame flakes rose into the sky.

The mists and flames with a green glow illuminated the whole area, which made the entire glacier green, seeming to be rather spooky and scary. On the southern side of the glacier, a tall and thick gray mist-wall was rolling. Countless water-kind creatures with strong ice powers gathered on the water surface, and had been letting out a dense ice mist with all their powers. The ice mist formed another mist wall, as tall and thick as the gray mist-wall. The ice mist-wall and the green-mist wall faced each other on the water surface.

Occasionally, some water-kind spirit creatures would fall into the water in exhaustion. Every time when this happened, some larger shaped water-kind spirit creatures, who seemed to be supervisors, would hurriedly rush over and immediately freeze these exhausted water-kind spirit creatures and the ones around them. They would then throw them into the ice mist wall, piling up them like bricks.

"Freeze then, free them all!" An enormous ice toad patted his large belly and yelled, "We don’t know if they’re just tired or infected with the plague! Freeze them all! Then, we can worry less! Haha! Do it quickly and neatly!"

Hearing the ice toad, some smaller shaped water-kind spirit creatures, who were almost used up, raised their heads with their last bit of strength, tremblingly stood up and each let out a thin stream of cold mist towards the ice mist wall in front of them. This thin stream of cold mist drained them. They softly fell on the

water surface, then those supervisors rushed over and let out strong and dense ice mist streams. They froze them and the other smaller water-kind spirit creatures around them along with the water, turned them into a giant ice block, then cast a magic to send them up and threw them heavily into the ice mist wall.

On the glacier, countless water-kind spirit creatures were sealed in countless different sized ice blocks. The power vibrations released from these water-kind spirit creatures' bodies had almost faded away, and their vital functions were nearly shut down. In these frozen water-kind spirit creatures, the effects of the viruses contained in the gray mist had been weakened to an extreme point.

Some water-kind spirit creatures were enormous; sealed up in ice, they became small-scale mountain ranges. Dragon whales, giant sharks, turtles, octopus and all the other kinds of enormous water-kind spirit creatures lied in transparent icebergs, with their bodies thickly covered in differently sized pustules, and their eyes filled with despair and fear.

Some water-kind spirit creatures had just arrived in Pan Gu world, and were not yet affected by the gray mist. They moved around the glacier in groups, tremblingly looking at the ones sealed in the ice, and murmuringly cursing the starter of this terrifying plague. In the meanwhile, some other water-kind spirit creatures with strong family backgrounds had been growling deeply in anger. They were mostly the offsprings of Wuzhi Qi, Xiang Liu, and the other few legendary water-kind spirit creatures in the North Sea. They were complaining, wondering why anyone didn't come to help them. Even the super low temperature was about to fail to control the plague.

The viruses released from the Disease God streamer had a strong potential for mutation. At first, those viruses were largely suppressed the low temperature, but as the hours passed away, inside the bodies of those enormously shaped water-kind spirit creatures which were sealed in the ice, these viruses adapted to the

low temperature. By now, those surviving viruses had been devouring the bodies of those water-kind spirit creatures and mutating unpredictably.

While complaining, a troop of water-kind spirit creatures walked past a three-hundred-miles-long inkfish, which was covered in a hundreds of meters thick layer of ice. They didn't notice that a tentacle of this ink fish was wriggling quickly, and on this tentacle, countless huge pustules had been squirming like boiling gruel.

Boom! That tentacle exploded, shattered the ice, and sprayed a sticky blood on the faces and bodies of the troop of water-kind spirit creature.

These water-kind spirit creatures had already learned how scary those viruses Yu Mu released were. They screamed out shrilly, but before they could do anything, over ten enormous spirit creatures dashed over, casting all kinds of ice magics from distances away.

Following a loud buzzing noise, a tens of miles wide area was frozen into a giant ice block, and all water-kind spirit creatures sprayed by the inkfish's blood were sealed in it.

But this time, the viruses released from the inkfish's tentacle had already adapted to the low temperature. Visibly, large pustules emerged on the skin of those water-kind spirit creatures, who were sealed in the ice. Next, their bodies began melting speedily, turning into puddles of sticky liquid.

More terrifyingly, those sticky puddles were like living creatures, transforming into countless thin, worm-like streams, wriggling in all directions swiftly.

"Heaven! Oh, my heaven!"

Seeing this, all surrounding water-kind spirit creatures were scared to death. They cried and screamed, abandoning this area immediately. They abandoned all their friends and families sealed in the ice, and fled away desperately.

The morale of these water-kind spirit creatures had collapsed completely at this very moment. The ancient heaven had fallen already. Otherwise, these water-kind spirit creatures would definitely shout the names of divine emperors and beg for mercy.

A strong gale roared over from high up in the sky. Coming along the gale were Xiang Liu and a large group of warriors in black armors.

From a long distance away, Xiang Liu saw that grey mist, which had billions of locusts hiding in it. He quivered slightly and cursed, "Ji Hao, that little b*stard. How brutal he is...This is unreasonable...The Disease God's legacy, how did he get that?"

Taking out the calabash given by Priest Hua, Xiang Liu proudly sneered and said, "However, I have my own fortune! Hehe, with this new fortune of mine, I can continue what I've been doing. I can also protect myself; I can go anywhere I want! Who can stop me now?"

Laughing wildly, Xiang Liu took out a thumb-sized magic pill from the calabash, put it in his mouth and chewed for a while, turning the pill into a paste with his own saliva. Then, he sprayed it out and created a rain with his special power.

The heavy rain descended along with the roaring gale, rolling up the paste Xiang Liu spat out. Instantly, a strong and refreshing aroma could be sensed in this whole area, which had a radius of thousands of miles. Coiled in a cyan-colored mist, raindrops fell from the sky, into the gray mist-wall. Inside the grey mist-wall, countless locusts screamed and died immediately. Their bodies exploded, turning into spheres of poisonous mist that dissipated in the air.

The rain fell on the bodies of those water-kind spirit creatures, which had fallen ill and felt their bodies were as heavy as mountains. Instantly, these water-kind spirit creatures were refreshed, as the viruses inside their bodies had been wiped out.

The rain dripped into the glacier, flowing into the bodies of those water-kind spirit creatures, who were almost killed by the gray mist. These dying spirit creatures gasped simultaneously for air. The illnesses were gone, and they recovered immediately, gaining their strengths back. They roared thunderously, twisted their bodies, broke the ice and rose from the glacier one after another.

Xiang Liu nodded in satisfaction. He pointed at the south and growled, "Boys, go south! Go, go, kill every human being you see! You kill all human beings who are brave enough to come out of their cities. Eat them, enslave them, and tread your feet upon them! Go! Go!"

All water-kind spirit creatures roared in chorus. They rushed across the gray mist-wall, which was already harmless, marching to the south.

At the same time, a red, misty silhouette abruptly showed up upon Ji Hao’s city. That was a man, with a tall hat and a long robe.

Chapter 1160: Suiren

"Marquis Yao!" The man with a tall hat stood in the air above the city and mildly greeted to Ji Hao.

"You are?" Ji Hao activated the golden bridge once again and squeezed out through the iceberg with difficulty. A while later, he stood in front of the man with a tall hat, and bowed politely.

Ji Hao had seen these people with tall hats around Emperor Shun for quite a few times. During the first great war between he humankind and the non-humankind that Ji Hao fought, he saw such a man with a tall hat by Emperor Shun's side.

Last time in the Town Hall, twelve men with tall hats showed up together, instantly suppressing a group of leaders of the alliance of human clans and forcing them to join hands and help Emperor Shun to control the flood with all their resources. Ji Hao clearly understood that these men with tall hats were probably the most powerful ones among the entire humankind, could even be those famous legendary heroes in the history of the humankind. Without a doubt, Ji Hao should have more respect for these mysterious people.

"I am Suiren." Before the man's face, the dense fiery mist suddenly faded, showing his ordinary-looking but especially amiable face. Suiren didn't have a stunning look, but he did have a pair of deep, bright eyes. If one looked into his eyes, one would see a vivid spark, just like the starlights in the sky.

Ji Hao's scalp was numbed. A short distance away, Feng Xing, Yi Di and the other few warrior commanders had already involuntarily kneeled on the ice surface.

Suiren was an ancient human emperor. When human beings were still ignorant, living like wild animals in the forest, Suiren lit the fire for the humankind. From then on, human beings started departing from the most primitive lifestyle, learning the

differences between human beings and wild beasts, standing up in Pan Gu world with the name of ‘humankind’.

"Emperor Suiren? Didn’t you..." Countless legends about Emperor Suiren crossed Ji Ho’s mind, including where he died, and where he was buried in. Till present, in every new year festival, groups of Maguspreists would pay respects to Emperor Suiren at his tomb. Before his gravestone, incense sticks had been burning all year round.

"I am only a clone of him. The real Suiren has left Pan Gu world long ago." Suiren nodded to Ji Hao seriously, then the fiery mist emerged again, covering his face as he continued, "Enough of the small talk. Let’s melt this iceberg and get these young warriors out first. After that, I have a mission for you."

Ji Hao took a few steps back, looking at Suiren curiously.

Ji Hao had all kinds of supreme magic treasures, including the divine seal of the East Emperor Taiyi. He also had the power of the great Dao of sun, and he had been speedily absorbing everything that Taiyi had learned about the great Dao of sun. Despite all this, he failed to melt even a little bit of this iceberg. Ji Hao truly wanted to know how Suiren would save them from this troubled situation.

"That old ice worm, he has made progress!" Suiren lowered his head and stared at the iceberg for a while, then sighed and said, "Back then, when he just occupied the north ice seal, the group of evil creatures under his command liked eating human beings. A few of my friends and I started a fight against him, forcing him to kill every last one of those evil creatures with his own hands."

"The old ice worm is sensitive about his reputation. After we injured him, he has been hiding in the ice sea for a very long period, never coming out again." said Suiren blandly, "Therefore, kids like you don’t know much about him! This iceberg he created, it’s not so hard to deal with, as long as you can grasp the ‘true

intent’ of it."

The ‘true intent’? Ji Hao knitted his eyebrows. Suiren’s words seemed to contain too many meanings.

"I’ve seen you release the essence sun fire and the Gold Crow flame, but your fires are ‘dead’. You have the powers of fire, yet you don’t have the ‘heart’ of fire. Therefore, you can’t lift the powers of your fires to the maximum stage." Suiren raised a finger and continued in a deep voice, "My fire is ordinary. It’s not a powerful spirit fire, nether is a pre-world divine fire. Instead, its the most ordinary fire in the world that I created back then by drilling a piece of wood."

A small flame lit up on Suiren’s finger. The faint orange fire was gentle and weak, shaking in the strong wind. As Suiren said, this was the most ordinary fire in the world. Housewives living in countrysides would cook meals with this type of fire. This fire could emblazon firewood and dry grasses, but couldn’t be used for smelting ores, not to mention burning the world and breaking the space. Ji Hao could easily release a stream of essence sun fire by simply raising his arm, and that stream would be tens of thousands of times more powerful than Suiren’s fire.

This small flame on Suiren’s finger was truly not so harmful, but what about Ji Hao’s essence sun fire? It could even vaporize metals instantly!

However, once Ji Hao saw this small flame, he sensed an indescribable warmth instantly fill up his entire body. The small weak flame warmed up his soul and every cell of his body, and made him feel energetic.

The small flame reminded Ji Hao of his childhood. When he was little, sometimes in the morning, he would open his eyes and see Qing Fu kneeling by the bonfire, gently grilling beast meat and sweet potatoes. The bonfire was not dazzling at all, but along with the aroma of grilling foods, Ji Hao could always sense a thriving

life-force from it.

All of a sudden, Ji Hao got the meaning of the so-called ‘true intent’. It was just like the spirit of a weapon or a tool, just like the soul of a human being. Without a spirit, a weapon or a tool could only be lifeless, and without a soul, a human being would become a walking dead. Without the ‘true intent’, no matter how great a power was, it couldn’t be released entirely.

"The ‘true intent’ of the old ice worm’s cold power was his withered, cold, isolated heart, and the ‘true intent’ of my fire is the endless hope, the inexhaustible life-force." Suiren flicked his finger and sent the flame to the iceberg. The flame drifted down and drilled into the iceberg along with a sizzling noise, diving down towards the city.

Even with the golden bridge, Ji Hao still felt it extremely difficult when penetrating the iceberg. But this weak and tiny flame of Suiren cut the iceberg broken, as easily as cutting a piece of tofu with a sharp knife.

Countless gray-white beams dazzled over from all directions towards the flame. The flame got smaller and smaller, but much brighter than before. At last, the flame reached to the deepest area of the iceberg and slightly touched a certain spot.

Puff! A thin stream of cold power and the small flame devoured each other. Next, the enormous iceberg quaked intensely. Afterward, clouds of steam puffed up from the iceberg, while the iceberg disappeared without a trace.

"Pure strength is not enough." Suiren looked at Ji Hao and said in a gentle yet serious tone, "You are almost as strong as me, but why do you need the strength? Marquis Yao, you have the strength, but you don’t have the heart. You still lack something."

In Ji Hao’s spirit space, the mysterious man complained, "Strength is strength...What do I need a heart for?" clicking his tongue, he continued, "But, this sounds reasonable though...Back

then, I..." He snorted and carried on, "I am getting criticized by a little kid, how shameful is this!"

Sighing slightly, Suiren said in a deeper voice, "However, personality, cultivation, experiences, in every way, you're definitely the best among your generation. We have a mission, do you dare to take it? We've been considering over and over again, and at the moment, you're the most suited person for it."

Without asking any question, Ji Hao said 'Yes'.

Chapter 1161: A Lecture Given By Suiren

The gate of the city was opened. Hao Tao, Tao Sha, and the other elders walked out together. People stood in ordered lines on both sides of the gate and bowed to Suiren. A few of these people were Suiren's offspring, and their clans were originated from Suiren Family; they politely kneeled on the ground.

"Get up. No need to stand on ceremony...These things are indeed important, but too much would be bad." Suiren waved his hand and said. Hearing him, people straightened their bodies one after another. Suiren looked at all surrounding people with mild and warm eyes, and his eyes stopped for a few seconds on Man Man, Shaosi, Taisi, and Yu Mu.

Guided by Ji Hao, Suiren and the others came to the headquarters tent. Seeing the Pan Gu bell and the Pan Gu Defense magic formation, Suiren stopped, pointed at the bell, smiled faintly and said, "Marquis Yao, you're a good commander."

Ji Hao grinned embarrassedly. Suiren's words sounded like a praise, yet Ji Hao didn't feel being praised at all. On the contrary, he felt like being blamed slightly.

"You're wonderful, almost like their parents." continued Suiren.

Shaking his head, Suiren turned around and glanced at the group of warrior commanders, then said in a deep voice, "You're brave warriors. You are fighters of the human beings. You are strong men. You wear armors, hold weapons; you fight wild beasts, fight the non-humankind; you protect your own kind. You're like the eagles fighting in the sky, instead of chickens hiding in your nests and shaking in fear."

Pointing at the Pan Gu bell, Suiren carried on in that deep yet strong voice, "This bell is very strong, and this great magic formation is strong as well. This city is safe under the storm and the hurricane, and is very comfortable to live in. Have you been

hiding in this city all the time?"

As he chuckled, Suiren walked to Yi Di, pulled out a few arrows from his quiver, nodded and said, "Hmm, these arrows are really not bad...These are at least ten times more powerful than the ones made by those top-grade master arrow crafters in the Eastern Wasteland, am I right? Where did you get these?"

Yi Di's face turned dark. He squeezed a smile out of his face and responded, "Marquis Yao gave us these!"

Suiren nodded and asked, "Can you make these powerful arrows yourself?"

Yi Di and the other archers even had their faces turned green by now. They turned to Ji Hao together — What a joke! Even Eastern Wasteland masters couldn't make these spell symbol arrows, not to mention these archers

Suiren turned to Ji Hao. Before he asked any question, Ji Hao hurriedly raised both hands and said, "I disassembled the spell symbols in a 'hurricane' arrow, a 'volcano collapse' arrow and a 'wolf tooth' arrow with a pre-world supreme treasure. The treasure upgraded those spell symbols groups and automatically made these spell symbol arrows."

Suiren nodded again, and responded with that deep voice, "Which means, Marquis Yao, you can't make these arrows yourself either, right?"

Ji Hao remained silent. Compared with that five-colored cauldron inside his body, his own handcraft was a total mess. Perhaps, the arrows made by Po could be even more powerful than these spell symbols arrows. But Po was not like the cauldron, and he could never produce millions of super-grade spell symbols arrows at a time.

"If that treasure of yours disappeared, can you still fulfill these boys' needs?" Suiren glanced at Ji Hao, turned back to Yi Di, and

continued, "If one day, Marquis Yao is not by your side, and you don’t have these super-grade arrows anymore, can you still fight?"

The faces of Yi Di and the other Eastern Wasteland commanders around him suddenly turned deathly pale; even their legs began shaking. None of them could say a word.

Suiren then walked to Tao Sha and the other few Taotie Clan elders. Poking those Taotie tooth chains tied around these elders’ waists, he said with a bland tone, "I think only one Taotie tooth is possessed by Taotie Clan, as the greatest treasure. How many do you have now?"

Man Man raised her own Taotie tooth chain with both hands and responded, "Three-Hundred and one, including this one of mine!"

Suiren smilingly glanced at Man Man and said, "You make one or two for the little girl as toys, fine. But you are elders of your clan, and these fake Taotie tooth...Alright, alright, not too many powerful treasures like this existed in the world, and It’s not a bad thing for you to prepare some of these. But look at your armors, your weapons, and everything you are wearing now!"

People lowered their heads and looked at their armors and weapons.

The armors and weapons using by all warriors in this city were productions of Ji Hao’s five-colored cauldron. Those gears were all ungraded and remolded by Ji Hao, and were much better than productions of the other human clans.

"Strong armors can make it easier for you to survive on battlefields; good weapons can allow you to kill more enemies." said Suiren, "This is good...The only problem is... did you make these armors and weapons with your own hands?"

"Did those blacksmiths in your clans hammer these armors and weapons over and over again? The spell symbols on these armors and weapons, did those Maguspriests in your clan carve those

personally?" Suiren continued in a louder voice.

"Once you are used to these good armors and weapons gained from Marquis Yao with no effort, once you have lost the passion to create better forging techniques and stronger spell symbols, once you think nothing but getting better armors and weapons from Marquis Yao...If one day, Marquis Yao is not here for you anymore, what would you do?"

Suiren walked to Ji Hao, shook his head, and grabbed Ji Hao's wrist.

"I was going to say more to you, but I had a chance to rethink. I don't need to say too much to you, and you shall think about it yourselves. Think about what should you do for the future."

Pointing at the north, Suiren continued, "In the north, those water-kind creatures are heading south again. Stop them, buy some time for the flood-control troops in Pu Ban City, this is what you should be doing. Staying in this city like chickens, or rushing out, fighting those water-kind things, maybe showering in blood... You choose!"

"I only want you to remember one thing. In all ages, facing all enemies, human warriors never won a single battle by hiding behind a tall and strong wall! The territories we have today, the homelands we are living in, those were all earned by generations of warriors with their swords and blades and hot blood!"

"Are you all cowards now? Are you all afraid of death now?"

Suiren's words sounded heavy. The faces of all present elders, commanders and warriors blushed instantly.

"Hao Tao, from now on, this army is under your command. I will give you no requirement. I only want you to try your best!" Suiren pointed at Hao Tao, then waved his hand. Following his move, the Pan Gu bell silently and quickly flew to Ji Hao.

Ji Hao took back the Pan Gu bell. Following Suiren's words, he

gathered Man Man, Shaosi, Taisi, Feng Xing and Yu Mu. Other than them, all the others were left in the city, under Hao Tao's command, even including Yemo Shayi. Afterward, Suiren waved his broad sleeve and sent up a dazzling fiery light, then disappeared with Ji Hao and his friends.

Chapter 1162: The Water Eye in Huai Water

A bright fiery light darted south. Ji Hao surprisingly fond out that Suiren's flying speed was only slightly slower than the highest speed of the golden bridge under his control. In mere terms of flying speed, Suiren was faster than Xiang Liu and Wuzhi Qi.

What surprised Ji Hao more was that Suiren brought Man Man, Shaosi, Feng Xing Taisi and Yu Mu, but at the same time, he had also conveniently brought Yuan Li along with the others. By now, this water ape with long silver fur was huddled in the fiery light, and had been slapping his own head hard. No one knew what kind of complicated question he was struggling with.

Man Man, Shaosi, and all the others had been looking at Suiren with extra respect and admiration. Suiren was an ancient human emperor, a saint who led the humankind from ignorance to civilization. Before, Suiren only existed in legends, but now, he showed up right in front of them, as a living being. Man Man and the others were surely thrilled by his appearance.

However, because of Suiren's great fame, none of them dared to say anything to him.

Flying for a while, Suiren finally started talking, "Marquis Yao, do you understand?"

Ji Hao grinned and nodded. He understood Suiren's words, and the reason why Suiren said that. But, Ji Hao had his own reasons to do what he had been doing. They shared an ultimate purpose, as they both wanted to humankind to survive, grow and develop; they just thought in different ways.

But of course, Suiren was an ancient human emperor, while Ji Hao had his previous life memory. Based on their backgrounds, if would be ridiculous if they had the same way of thinking.

"You will be a territory owner; you can take care of a clan quite

well. Even on battlefields, you will be a good commander, who cares about his warriors. But, you will not be a good commander in chief, and you can never become a good leader." said Suiren slowly, "In this regard, Si Wen Ming is bigger than you and all the other competitors."

"Uncle Wen Ming is indeed good." Ji Hao agreed.

"What I'm trying to say is, he is more hard-hearted than all of you. He is willing to let human beings bleed and sacrifice. For the future of the humankind, he can bear to let our warriors shed blood." Turning around, Suiren looked at Ji Hao and continued, "And you...You protect your warriors too well. This is truly not good."

Ji Hao remained silent. He didn't know what to say, and he could only give a hollow smile.

"If we want the humankind to grow stronger and to thrive, we have to go through difficulties." said Suiren slowly, "Human beings have to understand that everything we have, food, armors, weapons and all kinds of magic treasures, talismans, we have to make those with our own hands. We have to know how to produce those things we need, and knowledge, is our true wealth."

"What you've been doing can indeed allow a small number of people to grow stronger ahead of the others, but on the whole, this can only weaken the natural, inexhaustible learning abilities and creativity of human beings." Suiren patted Ji Hao's shoulder and continued, "I know you meant well, but you did it in the wrong way."

"Si Wen Ming has been doing well. He knew you're a diamond in the rough. Therefore, he dared to give you pressure, and he dared to let you, such a young man, lead a great-scale, elite force to the north."

"What you are going to face is not only those non-humankind armies; you will also face the Yu Dynasty, which was built by the

non-humankind. You will encounter countless challenges and life-risking fights. You might die, but if you survive, you will serve as a core member of our humankind for many years to come."

"Not only you, this is also a test, and an opportunity, for all people around you."

"Once upon a time, Emperor Fuxi said that human beings are strange. If human beings live too comfortably and safely, the humankind would quickly corrode and fall. But, if human beings live under pressure, the humankind would never die, no matter how strong the pressure was. Therefore, Emperor Fuxi said that disasters will make the humankind thrive; the more disasters come, the stronger our can humankind be."

"This flood had indeed caused us severe damage, but as long as we can get through this, a brighter day will be expecting us." said Suiren seriously, "This is a severe trial, facing which, countless heroes will rise among us. But you protected them as if they were a group of fragile chicks."

Ji Hao spread his hands, not knowing what to say.

Emperor Fuxi and Emperor Suiren chose to cultivate and strengthen the humankind with the pure law of the jungle, while Ji Hao...

Smiling embarrassedly once again, Ji Hao said, "I may be too softhearted...I don’t want people around me to die one after another."

Suiren looked at Ji Hao seriously and responded with a strangely heavy tone, "Marquis Yao, believe me, we’ve witnessed death a million times more than you did...And every one of us has died many times. Those warriors refused to surrender and died to the last man, but their sacrifices saved many more people. With their deaths, they earned the rise of the entire humankind. So, who cannot sacrifice?"

He pointed at Ji Hao’s heart and continued, "Perhaps, one day, we will both die. Who can truly be immortal? At least, I don’t believe in immortality. Can this world exist forever?"

"If we want to survive, many of us have to fight, to kill and to die. Only when many brave ones among us are happy to die for the future of the humankind can we grow and develop, can be strong and never collapse. A society without heroes and the brave ones will not have a future."

"Aren’t you ruining their future by overprotecting them?" sighed Suiren, "I have a mission here, but I don’t have the time to do it myself. So, I can only leave it to you."

Patting again on Ji Hao’s shoulder, Suiren carried on, "Try your best to accomplish the mission, and think about what I said. In the future, we have many more important things for you to do."

At last, he said to Ji Hao, "Remember one thing, as long as the sacrifice is meaningful, as long as we can afford it and we’re not wasting lives on purpose, no matter how great the sacrifice might be, we should not dread."

The fiery light flashed across the sky. Ji Hao carefully pondered upon Suiren’s words. Recalling what he had done in the recent years, Ji Hao felt that he had indeed been overprotecting people around him.

A while later, the fiery light dimmed. In front of Ji Hao still was the vast water. However, on the boundless water surface was a ten-thousand-miles-wide dark whirlpool, roaring and spinning.

"This is a core area of the Huai Water. This whirlpool, we call it the ‘water eye’." said Suiren, "After we received your message, Emperor Shun has sent out quite a few strong warriors to try to dive in, but they have all disappeared."

"We want to find out what exactly is hiding in this water eye, and the other water eyes in the rest few large rivers."

Chapter 1163: Yuan Sheng

Earlier, Wuzhi Qi sneakily visited Ji Hao and sought cooperation for the safety of himself and his offsprings. He even gifted Ji Hao the nine dragons chariot and the divine seal of the East Emperor to show his sincerity.

Some top secrets were hiding in the water eyes of the few great rivers; this information was also leaked to Ji Hao by Wuzhi Qi. However, Ji Hao didn't know that Emperor Shun had already taken action once he received the message from Ji Hao. Strong warriors were sent out by Emperor Shun to dive into the water eye in the Huai Water, and to see what was in there. But according to Suiren, all those people had vanished.

"These things should be handled by old folks like us." Looking at Ji Hao, Suiren helplessly spread his hands and said, "But we are all busy, and can't make the time to deal with these detailed things."

"And..." Suiren frowned and continued, also helplessly, "I don't have a physical body. What you are looking at is a clone, with the bones made from a trace of my soul and the natural reward power, and the skin made from the power of fire. Therefore, we are strong indeed, but we are also weak. Many things in this world can easily harm us."

"First, we can't make the time ourselves; second, we cannot go to dangerous places ourselves. For the above reasons, we can't do it ourselves. Marquis Yao, you are the most suited person we found for this mission." Suiren seriously cupped his hands and slightly bowed to Ji Hao, glancing at Yuan Li in the meanwhile.

"I get it!" Ji Hao looked at Suiren and responded. 'A clone made with the natural reward power? No wonder he looks like a human being, yet not exactly like a human being. Are they all busy? What are they busy at?' Wondered Ji Hao silently. But of course, Ji Hao was not silly enough to ask Suiren that question.

"Leave it to me. If I find out anything useful, I will..."

Suiren took out a five-colored, square-shaped jade tablet and handed it to Ji Hao. The jade tablet was embossed with dragons and phoenixes on the edges, a picture of farming on the right side, and a picture of fishing on the backside. "Go straight to Pu Ban City and report to Emperor Shun, or directly contact me with this in case of an emergency...Hmm, this is my identification token as a former human emperor. It can also serve as a life-saving treasure."

Ji Hao trembled slightly while taking over the tablet with both his hands.

A pure warmth surged out of the tablet and slowly flew into Ji Hao's body. Suddenly. Ji Hao heard the shouts of countless human beings. He sensed the happiness, the anger, the sadness, and the joy of all those people.

Seeing Ji Hao's changing facial expressions, Suiren smiled and continued mildly, "Another thing... Elder Destiny, the leader of those Pan Xi world people, who chose to follow your lead, we need to borrow him. I think Emperor Shun has already sent people to pick him up from your place."

Ji Hao paused for a second, then hurriedly said 'sure'. Suiren left him a few words, then transformed into a fiery light and flew southeast in a rush. From a long distance away, a beautiful bird song could be heard. Following that, Ji Hao saw a rosefinch descend from the air, coiled in fire. Suiren stood on the bird's back, and soon disappeared.

"Eh? Are we going down there?" Seeing Suiren leave, Man Man looked at the giant whirlpool in front of her, with her pink face turning dark. She was an offspring of Zhu Rong, and she hated oceans, lakes, rivers and streams the most.

"Yes, but don't be afraid. Someone will be guiding us." Ji Hao dragged Yuan Li up from the ground. By now, Yuan Li had still been murmuring to himself.

"Still worrying about Snow?" asked Ji Hao in a deep voice. "Something must have happened to the Flood Dragon King, but... Help me diving into this water eye. In the future, I may beg Emperor Shun to ask the Flood Dragon King to marry his daughter to you. What do you think?"

Yuan Li popped out his eyes instantly. Instead of struggling in his own vague memories, he grabbed Ji Hao's shoulders, grinned and said, "You said that yourself, and you're my big brother. You can't lie to m...I'm afraid some bad thing has truly happened to the Flood Dragon King. If he refuses to marry Snow to me, you have to help me!"

Ji Hao patted Yuan Li's shoulder, then turned to the water eye with a serious look.

Before the flood came, the Huai Water was one of the largest rivers in Midland, covering a broad area with over a million branches. Countless human beings lived by the Huai Water. During peaceful days, even as a great river, the widest area of Huai Water was only around a thousand miles wide. But now, the river was flooding, and the world had almost turned into an ocean, while the Huai Water became completely boundless.

The dark whirlpool was enormous, spinning rapidly. A strong dark hurricane had been blowing out from the whirlpool, almost tangible, roaring thunderously. Occasionally, exhausted large birds flying across the sky would be dragged into the whirlpool and shredded immediately, if they accidentally got too close to it.

If Suiren didn't guide him, Ji Hao would never believe that this giant whirlpool was actually the entrance of one of those water eyes that Wuzhi Qi mentioned to him.

"How do we get in?" Ji Hao looked at Yuan Li and asked.

"I can easily get in. I grew up in here." Looking at the giant whirlpool, Yuan Li seemed to be shocked a little bit as well. "The problem is, I can even bring a few water-kind creatures in, but for

human beings..."

Ji Hao pondered for a while, then raised his arms. Heng Xing flew out from his sleeve. Ji Hao pointed at Heng Xing, and following his moves, he stretched his body and transformed back into a Henggong fish, happily jumping into the water.

"Man Man, you and the others wait outside, while I follow Yuan Li in! Remember, whatever happens, you are not allowed to make a single step near that whirlpool!"

Ji Hao took out a large number of magic formation tools and powerful magic thunder bombs and fire bombs, handed them to Shaosi and said, "Heng Xing will serve as your mount. You go set up a few defensive and attacking magic formations in this area to cover us, and put all these thunder bombs and fire bombs in your magic formations."

Ji Hao told Man Man to look after Mr. Crow and the pair of fire snakes. Then, he once again warned the others to not come near that whirlpool. After that, he flashed across the air, transformed his body into a thin stream of extremely negative power, and spread on Yuan Li's fur.

In shock, Yuan Li looked at his own long silver fur, which was now covered under the thin layer of extremely negative power transformed from Ji Hao's body. He murmured to complain, "You are a master of the great Dao of sun, fine, but you're also a master of the 'extremely negative power invisibility'... What can I say?"

While complaining, Yuan Li turned around, quickly waved to Man Man and Shaosi, then jumped into the water.

As a water ape, Yuan Li gave a joyful shout once he dove into the water, then swiftly moved downwards like a silver beam.

Yuan Li split the water and created a path for himself, while speedily diving down. Every time when water-kind spirit creatures showed up to try to stop him, he would release his power and slap

them away. The society of spirit creatures was based on strict hierarchy. Sensing Yuan Li's power, those smaller shaped water-kind spirit creatures all stepped away. Therefore, without much of difficulty, Yuan Li reached the bottom of the whirlpool.

A building, which was entirely built with cold jade, stood on the bottom of the water, beside a dark hole. Tens of miles away from the building, a fierce undercurrent came to Yuan Li. It transformed into a giant fist, and struck to Yuan Li from hundreds of meters away.

"Yuan Li, what are you doing in here?"

A rude voice could be heard. Following the voice, a fifteen-meter tall, ferocious-looking water ape with blue fur suddenly leaped out from the building.

"Yuan Sheng? Why are you here?" Yuan Li shouted out while dodging hurriedly.

Chapter 1164: Easily Get In

Hiding in Yuan Li's furs, Ji Hao sneakily glanced at Yuan Sheng.

A fierce and violent power vibration came straight at Ji Hao's face. In Ji Hao's eyes, Yuan Sheng's entire body was burning with a dark fire, and that deep blue spirit power of his coiled around his body, rolled in dense streams, and wrapped his muscular body. A strong power seemed to be contained in his body, that made him seem like a volcano which could erupt at any time.

The enormous fist transformed from that stream almost landed on Yuan Li's body before he screamed out. Two bright silver beams darted out from Yuan Li's body and instantly reached hundreds of miles away, leaving a faint silhouette of Yuan Li facing that fist. Followed by a muffled bang, the faint silhouette was shattered, and in the next moment, a strong force reached straight to Yuan Li's face.

Yuan Sheng moved as fast as a bolt of lightning. He failed to see through the magic Yuan Li cast just now, and he didn't know which one of those silver beam was the real Yuan Li. However, this did not keep Yuan Sheng from darting to one of those silver beams and shattering it, then swishing to the real Yuan Li. He grabbed Yuan Li's neck with both hands and carried him up.

Yuan Li was only around seven feet tall, while Yuan Sheng was fifteen meters tall. He grabbed Yuan Li's neck, shaking him hard like a bear torturing a rabbit.

Yuan Sheng snorted and put his large head near Yuan Li's face, opened his thin lips and showed his tusks. Staring at Yuan Li in the eyes, with a pair of eyes that looked like two blue colored burning coal pieces, Yuan Sheng shouted, "Yuan Li, what are you doing in here? You should now be...Let me think about it... You were sent out by Abba eight-hundred years ago. So you should now be..."

Yuan Sheng didn't finish his talk. Instead, he roared loudly and

threw a heavy punch on Yuan Li's belly,

Yuan Li howled in pain, then spat at Yuan Sheng and shouted to respond, "You bloody b*stard! I should be in the army returning from Pan He world! And I should be heading north to attack the humankind's flood-control troops!"

With glowing red eyes, Yuan Li stared at Yuan Sheng and continued shouting, "Haven't you heard it? The humankind released viruses at our armies! Many have died! Xiang Liu Junior is chopped! I'm not stupid enough to die with them!"

"Viruses?" Yuan Sheng's look turned quite weird. He looked at Yuan Li from head to toe, then loosened his hands and threw Yuan Li to the soft sands on the bottom of the river. Then, he held his hands behind his body like a middle-aged human being. Yuan Sheng laughed, as if he were happy to hear such news. Then, he said to Yuan Li, "So, you came back as a deserter? You're a deserter! Haha! A son of Wuzhi Qi chose to be a coward! He fled back!!"

Yuan Li blushed as he said in a dry voice, "I didn't flee, I just temporarily retreated! When those viruses are dealt with, I will..."

Yuan Sheng laughed out loud. Shaking his head quickly, he continued yelling, "Don't explain, I get it! Yuan Li, the stubborn, silly kid who dared to fight me, his big brother, is now a deserter! Hehe, where are those warriors Abba gave you? They're not all dead, are they?"

Yuan Sheng lowered his head with a strong expectation, put his face near Yuan Li's, and laughed, "Tell me, tell me, are they still alive? Hehe, they're all trusted ones trained by Abba himself. If you get them all killed...You will be dead!"

"They stayed in Pan He world!" said Yuan Li with a dark face, "I was worrying about...So I came back alone ahead of the others!"

"You were worrying about...Ah, ah, ah I remember her!" said

Yuan Sheng with a creepy tone, "I remember her. Many years ago, every time you were beaten up by me, a little girl would always be crying beside you! That girl, she has grown up too, hasn't she?"

Yuan Li vigilantly looked at Yuan Sheng and said, "What're you gonna do? I am warning you... If you dare to hurt Snow..."

Yuan Sheng grabbed Yuan Li up and dragged him to that bottomless dark hole, which was around five-hundred-meters in radius. While walking, he laughed, "What am I gonna do? Hehe, she's the Flood Dragon King's daughter, isn't she? Back then, after you were sent away by Abba, I inquired about her."

"Not bad! The Flood Dragon King is one of the eight senior ministers under Gong Gong's command too. She is the Flood Dragon King's only daughter, while I am the oldest son, also the strongest son of Wuzhi Qi. I think we will make a lovely couple!" Yuan Sheng bragged, "My Shifu is an amazingly powerful being, and I totally deserve her! So I'm gonna marry her, and let her carry my children!"

Yuan Li paused instantly. "Snow will never like you...When did you have a Shifu?" asked Yuan Li while staring at Yuan Sheng in shock.

"This is none of your business!" Yuan Sheng proudly raised his head and laughed loudly, "My Shifu is terrific. I'm afraid even Abba is much weaker than my Shifu. It's just that I'm not allowed to tell anyone his name, so...But you have to know, my Shifu is one of the few most powerful beings in this world!"

Carrying Yuan Li with one hand, Yuan Sheng drummed his own chest with another hand and laughed, "Don't you feel strange? Back then, when Abba sent you away, you were almost stronger than me. But now, I can easily defeat you!"

"I admit, as Abba said, you're more talented than I am. After all, your Amma is a human being, and human beings are always smarter. Sadly, my Amma is a silly devil ape, who can not even use

human language!" Standing by the dark hole, Yuan Sheng said. The dark hole was the true face of the water eye in Huai Water. From the hole, rapid water streams swished out, and the dark whirlpool almost brushed against Yuan Sheng's face.

"But now, you've come back, and I can easily defeat you! Do you know why? Because I have a great Shifu, while you are still a wild monkey!" Yuan Sheng gave a big grin, proudly pointed at the whirlpool, and said, "Abba knows that I've been improving largely these years, so he promoted me. I'm a general now, and I'm responsible for guarding this water eye!"

"I don't know what's in there, but no one who dares to go in will end will!" Yuan Sheng laughed wickedly and said, "Lord Gong Gong has given his order that whoever dares to set foot in there will be beheaded! So, go to hell, Yuan Li!"

Yuan Sheng raised Yuan Li high with both arms, then threw him into the rapid whirl.

"That little girl you mentioned, she's mine now! Haha!" Yuan Sheng rested his hands on his hips, then turned around and grinned to a group of water-kind spirit creatures, who came to see what was happening. He yelled, "You all saw it. Yuan Li is my sweet little brother, I treated him with the best food and wine I had. Yet, he sneaked into that forbidden zone while I wasn't noticing!"

Laughing wildly, Yuan Sheng growled, "Keep an eye on this area! If Yuan Li comes back out, chop him immediately! If he never comes out again...That would be the best!"

Yuan Sheng glanced at the water eye in a complicated way, then murmured to himself, "Master Hua said that the thing in this watery eye is interesting, and I have to guard it well...Hmm, what is it? A treasure?"

In the dark water eye, Yuan Li steadied his body and sank down into the whirlpool.

Chapter 1165: Dragon Coffins

Surprisingly, beyond the water eye, a hundred-thousand-miles-wide whirlpool was rapidly spinning, but the water pressure inside the water eye wasn't that great. Staying on Yuan Li's furs, the water pressure Ji Hao sensed was even smaller than the water pressure in the White Dragon River.

The water in the bottom of the White Dragon River was extremely great, that it could even compress the essence water power into pre-world six Ren threads. But unexpectedly, nothing special existed in this water eye, except a dark swirl that went through the entire water eye.

Another thing to be mentioned was that the swirl created a strong suction force. With Yuan Li's current power, he could not free himself from this suction force, and could only helplessly let it drag him all the way down.

The swishing noises caused by rapid water currents could be heard without an end. Ji Hao observed those dark currents, chuckled and said, "Is Yuan Sheng your brother? He is bad-tempered, isn't he? Your father, Wuzhi Qi, doesn't he care?"

"He's my brother, the oldest one, with the worst temper among all my brothers and sisters." murmured Yuan Li, "I had many brothers and sisters who were much older than him, but they all died long ago. My Abba...He gave us lives, but he never raised us. So..."

"His much stronger than you." said Ji Hao with a low voice, "Who's his Shifu?"

Yuan Li opened his mouth. A silver beam of light flashed across Yuan Li's eyes as he wielded his fist towards the swirl and generated a white sharp water stream. "When I was little, he bullied me almost everyday...Later on, he couldn't beat me for a long period. But this time, he improved way too fast. It has only

been eight-hundred years. How can he be so much stronger than me already?"

Yuan Li sounded especially angry and unhappy. Therefore, Ji Hao could only nicely comfort him, "Don’t worry, your Shifu has given you a great scripture to learn from. As long as you work hard, you will certainly be more powerful than Yuan Sheng."

Narrowing his eyes, Ji Hao thought of the ‘fine tradition’ followed by many of Yu Yu’s disciples. With a mean smirk, Ji Hao continued, "Besides, we have many powerful brothers and sisters in our sect. Next time when Yuan Sheng bullies you, we can find a large group of brothers and sisters to teach him a lesson!"

Yuan Li blinked his eyes and shook his long silver furs, then laughed out loud. Monkeys had changeable moods, and so did water apes. Comforted by Ji Hao, Yuan Li quickly forgot about all his unhappiness, then took out a human-head-sized juicy peach from an unknown source and started biting.

Before he finished the peach, he saw a faint light from the bottom of the swirl. Yuan Li threw the peach, which was half-eaten, then straightened his body, diving down towards the bottom of the swirl along with the flow of the water.

The loud water-clattering noise disappeared abruptly, while Yuan Li felt that his body was suddenly lightened. He came to an enormous water cave. The cave was hundred-miles in radius, tens of thousands of meters deep. The rock around the cave was dark and cold, yet this dark and smooth rock had been glowing with a bright light, illuminating the entire water cave.

"Be careful, be extra careful." Ji Hao told Yuan Li to stay calm and not act rashly.

The entrance of the water eye was only guarded by Yuan Sheng and a group of water-kind spirit creatures. Yuan Sheng was indeed strong, but Ji Hao believed that people sent here by Emperor Shun were also top-grade ones. Undoubtedly, Yuan Sheng was able to

discover those people, but if one said that Yuan Sheng was powerful enough to kill every last one of them, Ji Hao wouldn't believe it. Therefore, this ordinary-looking water cave must be seriously dangerous. Again, Ji Hao told Yuan Li to stay careful and cautious, and not fall into any traps. Ji Hao had read countless secret records in the Magi Palace, from where, he learned that many magic spells created by human Maguspreists were brutal and evil, and could perish a living soul instantaneously.

Ji Hao didn't want anything to happen to Yuan Li in this place.

Carefully, Ji Hao let out the Pan Gu bell. He dared not to fully activate it, as he didn't want to disturb anyone who could be in the cave right now. Therefore, he could only shrink the bell into the size of his thumb, then hung it above Yuan Li's head like a tiny wine cup. The bell released faint streams of Chaos power and wrapped Yuan Li up.

Yuan Li did not dare to underestimate this place either. He held his breath and let his eyes sparkle with a misty silver light, shining on the surrounding area. The silver light landed on the dark rock wall around him, which instantly emitted a dark light. The dark light hid deeply inside the rock wall, restrained, containing countless faintly sparkling silhouettes of dragons, serpents, giant carps and other water-kind creatures. The power vibration that came from every silhouette was terrifyingly great.

"This is..." Except for the scripture Yu Yu gave him, Yuan Li gained all of his powers through self-guided cultivation. Honestly, he was a foundationless, free-styled cultivator. The power vibrations that came from those water-kind creature silhouettes in the dark rock wall was scary, but he could tell what it was.

"Dark divine killing magic... Indeed cruel and fierce. These water-kind creature silhouettes in the wall, they were living beings, as powerful as Divine Magi. But they were killed by someone, and their souls were pulled out and sealed in the wall with the dark divine killing magic, nourished by the inexhaustible

cold power and being tortured forever. They can never reincarnate and live again. Therefore, their souls get twisted gradually, and turn into extremely dark ghosts. They can destroy your soul from ten-thousand miles away, and kill you before you even notice."

"Their power will linger in the bodies of any living being it touches, until the soul of that living being is extracted from the body. I get it. I know how Emperor Shun's people died. They were hunted by the dark divine killing power and couldn't cast it away. Even if they could escape from this water eye, even if they could run a million miles away, once they failed to suppress the dark divine killing power inside their bodies, their souls would be dragged back here, becoming the food of these evil souls."

Yuan Li's face twisted badly. Tremblingly, he asked, "So dangerous? What should we do then?"

Ji Hao snorted and responded blandly, "No ordinary powers and magic treasures can suppress this dark divine killing magic. However, the extremely positive power and the extremely negative power can end it. With the extremely negative power, you can absorb all these evil souls, which will be very nourishing. With the violent extremely positive power, you can burn all of them out, and destroy them for good."

Yuan Li sighed in relief and laughed relaxedly, "That means we don't have to be afraid them!"

Ji Hao stayed silent. He carefully reached his spirit power to the deeper area of this water cave, then paused.

The enormous water cave was almost empty, with nothing else but a round-shaped, dark jade altar, with three black coffins placed in the middle. The three coffins were made from cold wind bronze, and were covered in embossments of a dragon.

The things kept in this water eye were three dragon coffins.

Chapter 1166: Coffin Keeper

The rock wall was dark, with dark evil souls hiding in it, well-prepared for killing. The water was clear, tens of thousands of meters deep. At the bottom of this water was a dark altar, with three black bronze dragon coffins on it, releasing a strong, cold power. The atmosphere in this quiet water eye was evil and strange.

Yuan Li saw the three coffins as well. He floated in the water like a hard rock, while his long silver fur stood straight up like iron needles.

A pressure started spreading from the three coffins. To Ji Hao, this pressure was faintly sensible, like the scent of blood that came from a drop of blood in an ocean. But to Yuan Li, this pressure was overwhelming. Under this pressure, Yuan Li felt that the sea was roaring under his feet and the sky was collapsing above his head, while ten-thousand raging dragons were roaring inside his soul.

Suddenly, Yuan Li's knees were softened, that almost made him kneel down.

That was fear, a fear that came deeply from his bloodline, as if he were born with that fear. Because of the bloodline level pressure, a shrimp would be as frightened as Yuan Li was now, when it encountered a true dragon.

"Things in those coffins...are not human beings!" With difficulty, Yuan Li murmured.

As Yu Yu's disciple, Yuan Li had been cultivating himself severely these days. The power he gained through the scripture Yu Yu gave him automatically activated. Inside Yuan Li's body, a prehistorical, wild, and fierce power surged up. His eyes suddenly turned glowing red, and a fire of anger began burning his body uncontrollably. As his muscles swelled, he slowly straightened his body.

"Brother, whatever is inside those coffins, those are definitely not human beings," said Yuan Li with a firm tone.

Ji Hao frowned. Just now, he clearly sensed the change happen to Yuan Li's body. Both Yuan Li's power and spirit withered for a short moment, then a great anger burst from his body, stimulated his spirit power and physical strength, and washed off that fear and weakness he had just now.

Yuan Li's soul was oppressed somehow, yet Ji Hao felt nothing.

On Yuan Li's furs, Ji Hao released his strong spirit power. Faintly visible golden and silver glows emerged around Yuan Li's body. Ji Hao fully activated his spirit power, scanning across the surrounding area.

At last, Ji Hao sensed an extremely weak spirit pressure, which was too weak to be noticed. Did this weak spirit creature almost crush Yuan Li? If what Yuan Li learned from Yu Yu didn't stimulate his anger and his will to fight, Yuan Li could even fall unconscious under this weak spirit pressure.

"This is a bit strange... Be careful!" said Ji Hao, "Hm, don't move."

Ji Hao silently activated the Taiji Universe mirror and sent a stream of spirit power into it. A dim silver light darted out from the mirror and covered Yuan Li's body. Yuan Li cast the extremely negative power invisibility. With the help of the silver light that came from the mirror, he disappeared suddenly, without leaving a trace.

Ji Hao rummaged in his bangle for quite a while. He had been through a few wars these years, and had collected countless strange things.

A quarter of an hour later, Ji Hao took out a small wooden puppet. This was a spirit puppet made by a green-kind ancestor soul from Pan Xi world, and was rather functional. The puppet

itself was powerful enough to fight a newly promoted Divine Magus.

Ji Hao put a top-grade green magic crystal from Pan Xi world into the spirit puppet, then incanted a spell and threw it out. After that, he spent another while in his bangle, then took out a series of small things. He filled those things up with magic crystals and threw them out one after another.

Once the puppet was thrown out, it glowed with a beautiful green light. Flashing across the water, the tiny puppet instantly expanded to eight-feet tall. The puppet looked just like a living human being, except for its light-green skin, hair and eyes. The puppet sank into the deeper area of the water cave, leaving a large series of bubbles behind.

This water cave was tens of thousands of meters deep, and the puppet hadn't been sinking quickly. Around an hour later, the puppet approached the three coffins. It stopped twenty miles away from the altar, then lowered its head and observed the three coffins.

Ji Hao locked his fingers together and incanted a spell. Following his hand motion and voice, the puppet locked its fingers together as well, then the water around it began rippling intensely. A thin bolt of lightning sparkled inside the puppet's body, and soon, following a deep, rumbling noise, a water-tank-sized sphere of lightning bolt emerged on the puppet's hands.

"Green...Evil-breaking thunder!" The puppet slightly opened its mouth and said a few words with a very dry voice. The green evil-breaking thunder, for green-kind people in Pan Xi world, was the most commonly used thunder magic in battles. If this magic were cast in a forest, the rich green power in the forest would be absorbed by it, and the caster could easily launch a strike that would be tens of thousands of times more powerful than it was supposed to be. This was a great thunder magic to use in any battle.

In the water, this thunder magic would surely be less efficient. But as the water power could naturally generate green power, a pure water power from the surrounding area had been merging with the lightning bolt sphere created by the puppet. Gradually, the purple lightning bolt sphere was added with a deep blue luster.

The pure green thunder magic was now upgraded by a pure after-world water power, and was softer, more restrained.

Following a sizzling noise, the puppet spread its arms. The lightning bolt sphere split the water and struck a dragon coffin. It moved swiftly, and within a blink of an eye, it reached less than ten meters away from the coffin.

A man-shaped silhouette abruptly appeared upon the dragon coffin and sent up strong streams of cold power while wielding his right hand, grasping the lightning bolt sphere.

"Wuzhi Qi’s offspring are getting weaker and weaker. Anything can get in now!" The silhouette smirked coldly with a hoarse voice, "Wuzhi Qi himself is not bad, but how can his offspring be so weak? Aren’t those water monkeys his children?"

As he laughed, the silhouette rubbed his hands and crushed that sphere of lightning, turning it into countless thin electric bolts that dissipated in the water. That was a man-shaped creature, in a dark cloak. He raised his head and showed a twisted, hideous-looking, pale face.

The skin of that face was nearly transparent; the face was thickly covered in tiny scales, forming strange patterns on it. That didn’t look like a human face; instead, it was more like a a mixture of a lizard and a toad. This creature had an awfully long mouth, almost ear to ear, and his lips were weirdly purple.

"Not a living being? A small puppet?" This man murmured to himself, sounding not like a sane person at all. "But facing my soul-hooking sands, no matter how far you hide, it’s useless, useless, truly useless!"

The man laughed with a hissing voice, then suddenly opened his mouth and sprayed a puff of sand towards the puppet.

The puppet was wrapped in the sand. In the following moment, it disintegrated into countless tiny wooden pieces.

Staying on Yuan Li’s furs, Ji Hao’s heart suddenly twitched. Somehow, he sensed a great danger.

Chapter 1167: Yu Ancestor

From the top of the water cave, waves of silver light spread out and descended like a rain of light. Within the cold silver light, puffs of purple-red sands drifted down, along with a faint mist. At the moment, the silver light and the purple-red light swirled down together like countless cherry blossom petals, looking extremely beautiful.

This beautiful scene was dangerous though. Ji Hao came down from Yuan Li's furs, holding the Taiji Universe mirror, which released large streams of cold glow, twisting and expanding. Meanwhile, those purple-red sands emerged from the water, tracing the connection between Ji Hao and the puppet, coming swiftly towards Ji Hao.

The cold glow sparkled. Those purple-red sands bumped into the cold glow, stirred up ripples and caused popping noises. As the cold glow twisted from time to time, that purple-red sand were dispersing out, but more and more sand came down and landed on the cold glow.

"This old thing is...Yu Ancestor...Didn't he die long ago? Didn't the family of Yu die out?"

Yuan Li stood right behind Ji Hao. In a panic, he looked at those roaring streams of purple-red sand surrounding him, daring not to leave the mirror's protection.

Ji Hao's heart missed a beat. He lowered his head and looked at that man with a black cloak.

The Yu were prehistorical creatures. No one knew what they looked like, as they liked to hide in darkness and attack the shadows of the others by spurting sands out of their mouths.

If a living creature's shadow were hit by a Yu's sand, it would fall ill. At first, the poor creature would have a fever, start shaking,

then vomiting, suffering diarrhea, and at last, it would struggle in miserable pain. Even worse, the creature would die of a serious illness, and even its soul would be devoured by the poisonous sand.

Magus poison masters from the Magi Palace had been very curious about the family of ‘Yu’. They often complained that the Magi Palace could not provide a few living Yu for them to study the legendary poisonous sand. However, according to the secret record keeping in the Magi Palace, the last Yu in the world was eaten by a Taotie. From then on, no one had ever seen a living Yu again. Therefore, those masters from the Magi Palace had nothing to study.

Ji Hao never thought that he would encounter the ancestor of the family of Yu in this Huai Water water eye. He was the first Yu in the world, called Yu Ancestor by the world. Since Yu Ancestor was still alive, the family of Yu would never die out!

"I am alive, how can I be dead?" Yu Ancestor giggled, opened his mouth and let out another wave of poisonous sand. The most terrible thing about this poisonous sand was that it didn’t need to touch one’s body. By simply attacking one’s soul or something that belonged to oneself, it could poison the victim. The poisonous sand of Yu was a bit like some magic curses created by human Maguspriests, those could kill the targets from distances. But, the poisonous sand was more mysterious and unpredictable than most of those magic curses.

Just now, Ji Hao attacked a dragon coffin with a wooden puppet. A trace of Ji Hao’s power was brought away by the puppet. Therefore, the Yu Ancestor attacked the puppet with his sand, which traced Ji Hao’s power and came straight to Ji Hao after the puppet was destroyed.

If Ji Hao wasn’t protected by the Taiji Universe mirror, and if the silver light released by the mirror didn’t cover his entire body, Ji Hao would have been killed by Yu Ancestor already.

At the moment, Ji Hao and Yuan Li had already exposed themselves under Yu Ancestor's eyes. Yu Ancestor had been spraying out waves of poisonous sand, and soon, purple-red sand and a red mist surrounded Ji Hao and Yuan Li, fiercely striking on the silver light.

"Yu Ancestor, since you're not dead, your family didn't die out either. Why are you hiding in this water eye?" Looking at the Yu Ancestor, who had been letting out strong waves of poisonous sand, Ji Hao asked coldly.

"Why should I tell you that?" Yu Ancestor's face was even twisting in excitement. He waved his hands and laughed, "I've been stuck in here for thousands of years, and I am very bored by these coffins! Hehe, if you want answers from me...Kneel and beg!"

Flashing across the water, Yu Ancestor darted to Yuan Li and Ji Hao instantly, made a face to Ji Hao, then laughed with a hissing voice and said, "Or, you let go of these treasures, let me spray my sand on your face. As long as you can stay alive for the first three days, I'll give you any answer you want!"

Ji Hao knitted his eyebrows. He wasn't interested in trying that poisonous sand at all. Yu Ancestor was a mysterious ancient creature who lived since the prehistorical era. Who knew what kind of strange power he had? Ji Hao didn't want to suffer for nothing.

Seeing Ji Hao remain silent, Yu Ancestor instantly laughed out loud with a glowing face, as if something terrific had just happened to him. "You dare not to do it! You dare not to try my sand! Haha! You know my name, you know how powerful I am!"

Yu Ancestor crazily danced around Ji Hao and Yuan Li for a while, then suddenly dropped his face and stared at Yuan Li from head to toe.

Yuan Li instantly pulled out the dragon staff Yu Yu gave him and pointed at Yu Ancestor, then shouted, "Why are you staring at

me?"

Yu Ancestor reached out his slim, sticky and long fingers, which were like the tentacles of some poisonous insects, slightly poked Yuan Li's arm and said, "Hm, little thing, you're Wuzhi Qi's son, aren't you? You have such a strong monkey stink, I can just smell it!"

Yuan Li flicked his wrist and swung the staff upwards, sneered and responded, "Indeed, I'm Wuzhi Qi's son. So what?"

Yu Ancestor tightened his face. Finally, he lost the control of it and laughed out hysterically, "So what? I will sue you! Ah haha! I will sue Wuzhi Qi's son...No, I will Sue Wuzhi Qi! I will tell Gong Gong that he betrayed the Gong Gong Family. He colluded with the humankind! I'll make that old monkey suffer!"

Yu Ancestor popped out his eyes in an extreme excitement, viciously glaring at Yuan Li, then growled, "We're all the same, then why can he be the Huai Water God, having all kinds of nice things out there? He is worshipped by countless human beings; he eats all the delicious foods and has all the fun! What about me? I have to hide in this bloody hole, with three lifeless, stupid coffins! Why?"

"Bullsh*t poisons in the heaven! What ' the most important tasks'? What 'the first-class credit'? What 'great rewards'...I am locked in this bloody hole...Ah, what's the difference between the life in here and the life in prison?" screamed the Yu Ancestor, "Even if I have to be punished by the human emperor and be locked in the prison before the Town Hall, I can at least have people to chat with, and I can still see living beings. But in here..."

Howling shrilly, Yu Ancestors' eyes bulged from his eye sockets as he opened his mouths widely and let out a purple-red stream of light which struck violently on the silver-white light released from the Taiji Universe mirror.

Two hazy silhouettes suddenly dashed out from behind Yu

Ancestor. Those two silhouettes were condensed from water ripples, and were a pair of spirit puppets made by a water-kind ancestor soul from Pan Xi world. From both sides, the two puppets darted to Yu Ancestor and detonated the fist-sized golden thunder-flame bombs held in their hands, generating a thunderous buzzing voice.

A three-thousand-meters-wide golden light sphere wrapped Yu Ancestor up. Waves of destructive thunderbolts dazzled within the golden light, and faintly, Yu Ancestor’s shrill screams could be heard without an end.

Chapter 1168: Transplant

The two thunder-flame bombs were given by Priest Xuan Du, crafted by Priest Dachi himself with the fire generated from the ‘gold killing thunderbolts’ he collected from above the sky.

A thunder-flame bomb like this could easily kill a Divine Magus, beyond which, Priest Dachi restrained the explosion range of each bomb within three-thousand-meters-radius. Without being restrained, the explosion of each bomb could affect the area with a radius of over a thousand miles, but such a great explosion force was forcibly restrained within three-thousand-meters; one could easily imagine how destructive those thunderbolts could be within this highly concentrated explosion range. A bomb like this could even destroy a world.

The golden light sphere had a smooth and splendidly glowing surface. The sphere had a perfectly round shape, like a purely golden ball. On its surface, faint spell symbols flashed across from time to time. A mysterious sense of power had been releasing from these spell symbols. These spell symbols represented the original Dao of this world, and a highly lethal power.

Within a single moment, tens of thousands of fierce thunderbolts struck on Yu Ancestor’s body. Neither Ji Hao nor Yuan Li could see the Yu Ancestor’s face through the golden sphere at the moment, but judging from his shrill screams, things must be not so good in there.

"Young human beings...You are as evil as your ancestors...But, how can you get me so easily? Today, I’ll let you pay for your own mistakes!" Yu Ancestor’s thunderous roar suddenly came out from the golden sphere.

Ji Hao’s face twitched suddenly. His heart drummed, and the velocity of his blood flow raised for an unknown reason. He grasped a strong sense of danger. Subconsciously, Ji Hao tightened

his body and boosted up his strength, letting his blood surge inside his body like raging dragons.

Following a series of bone creaking noise, Ji Hao grew to fifteen meters tall, with his muscles swelling and squirming like serpents coiling on his body. His Chaos blood flushed his veins, and generated a muffled rumbling noises that sounded like flooding rivers.

Countless golden thunder-flame spheres suddenly blasted inside Ji Hao's body. For an unknown reason, these thunder-flames emerged in Ji Hao's body. These were the gold killing thunder-flames Ji Hao attacked Yu Ancestor with, swift and violent. Thunder-flames exploded inside Ji Hao's body, striking his internal organs and causing resounding noises, that sounded like the rings of a large bronze bell.

A stream of blood spurted out of Ji Hao's mouth. Ji Hao roared like a beast, while the power vibration released from his body grew even stronger. He squeezed out the last bit of strength from his marrow. Once again, he suddenly grew taller. Along with the thudding noises caused by his swelling muscles, Ji Hao grew to around eighteen meters tall. He didn't reach this height even when he fought Yemo Shayi with all his powers that day!

Chaos power streams burst from Ji Hao's skin, coiling like dragons and then surging back into his body. Faintly visible golden and silver light spots had been sparkling quickly within the Chaos power streams, hovering in the water, seeming to draw a complicated stellar map around Ji Hao.

Yuan Li had been vigilantly looking around. A Chaos power stream that came from Ji Hao's body bumped into Yuan Li, sending him to tens of miles away like a shooting star. He howled in pain while vomiting blood, and almost had his head slam into the dark wall.

Yuan Li stared at Ji Hao in shock and disbelief. Thousands of

strong Chaos streams had been releasing from Ji Hao's body; one single stream made Yuan Li vomit blood and sent him flying away, almost breaking all his bones. Then, what if all these Chaos power streams struck him together...?

Quivering in fear, Yuan Li shouted out hoarsely, "This is only the power you released from your body...Brother, Marquis Yao, eh, Master Ji Hao! Your strength...your power...your cultivation... You, you monster! Compared with me, you're the monster!"

Thunder-flames exploded inside Ji Hao's body one after another, while Chaos power streams surged through his body, inside his blood and between his internal organs. No matter how intense the explosions were, Ji Hao stayed perfectly unmoved. On the contrary, strengthened by the gold killing thunder-flame, the power vibration releasing from Ji Hao's body grew stronger and stronger. Meanwhile, a magical, colorless glow was added to his internal organs.

"Yu Ancestor, impressive!" Ji Hao widely opened his mouth, gasping for air. He hadn't been suffering much pain, but as those thunder-flames were continuously blasting inside his body, sending the strong thunder to every corner of his body, Ji Hao felt like someone had poured tons of Sichuan pepper into his stomach. It made his entire body limp and numb, extremely uncomfortable.

"I am under the protection of a supreme treasure. How did you send the thunder power back to me?" Ji Hao let a golden electric bolt out of his mouth and growled out.

"Beg me, then I'll tell you...Or let me spray my sand on your face, then I'll tell you!" Inside the golden light sphere, Yu Ancestor screamed in a cracking voice. "Ah, gold killing thunder! Cruel gold killing thunder! Fortunately, I know how to 'transplant' attacks. Otherwise, I would have suffered today!"

"More than gold killing thunder!" Ji Hao popped out his eyes and laughed out wildly, "You wait and see, not only gold killing

thunder!"

Earlier, Ji Hao threw out a series of small things. The pair of water spirit puppets had already detonated their bombs, but within a blink of an eye, over ten spirit puppets made by Pan Xi world ancestor souls suddenly showed up and dashed into the golden sphere, each having a large bomb holding in their arms.

Gold, water, green, fire, earth, five types of magic bombs exploded simultaneously. Tens of dazzling light spheres blasted in a row, immediately turning the golden light sphere into a multicolored one. The giant multicolored light sphere sparkled dazzlingly, with different colored light streams flashing across, bright enough to blind anyone.

Ji Hao strained every nerve of his and let his spirit blood boil in his veins. His physical strength was boosted up to an extreme point, and the cultivation with nine turns was activated as well. Around his body, fierce streams of Chaos power hovered like mad dragons, shaking the water cave ceaselessly.

Thunderbolts with five different colors blasted inside Ji Hao’s body, making Ji Hao’s eyeballs bulge from his eye sockets, and causing him to roar in pain. His tears had even spurted out from his eyes because of the pain.

Ji Hao quickly locked his fingers together and incanted a life-saving spell which was secretly taught by Yu Yu. That was a thunder-proofing spell, created especially for thunder attacks and natural thunder trials. More and more thunderbolts emerged inside Ji Hao’s body, seeming to never end. A part of the thunder power was absorbed by Ji Hao’s strong body, while the rest was suppressed and neutralized by the power of the spell.

The thunder-blast continued for ten whole minutes, before it finally started to slow down. Ji Hao was soaked in sweat. He slowly gasped and silently restrained his power, then shrunk his body to the normal size.

The multicolored, dazzling light sphere had faded as well. Yu Ancestor had his entire body ragged, as if he had just suffered three-thousand fierce hacks. In many areas of his body, his bones and internal organs were exposed. While screaming shrilly in pain, Yu Ancestor rushed out.

In this miserable shape, Yu Ancestor confusedly glanced at Ji Hao, who did not have even a tiny wound on his body. Instantly, his eyeballs heaved from his eye sockets in shock by around an inch.

"It’s impossible! I was born with a special ability that allows me to ‘transplant’ any attack…Anyone, anyone who hurts me will take fifty percent of his own attack! This is my gift, and no pre-world or after-world treasure can defend you from this!"

"This ability of ‘transplanting’ attack, I killed countless strong enemies with it…You…How did you…You…Aren’t you harmed?"

Ji Hao stretched his neck, suddenly pulled out the Taiji divine sword, and silently darted to Yu Ancestor with the Big Dipper step.

Chapter 1169: Countless Clones

Yu Ancestor tilted his head and stared at Ji Hao with a demented look. He widely opened his eyes, as much as he could, trying to figure out why Ji Hao wasn't unharmed at all, while his own life-force was seventy to eighty percent consumed!

Ji Hao didn't give Yu Ancestor any extra time to think. With the basic Big Dipper step he learned from Yu Yu, Ji Hao flashed across the air and dashed straight to Yu Ancestor, wielding the sword fiercely. The Taiji divine sword airily brushed across Yu Ancestor's body, leaving a cold beam of light in the air.

When the sword light dazzled, Yu Ancestor attempted to dodge. But, when he saw the movement of the sword, he laughed out loud, proudly raised his head and let the sword swish across his shoulder.

This sword move was weird. The sword edge sliced off a thin layer of skin from Yu Ancestor's shoulder and cut down a few fine hairs. Other than that, the sword didn't do any actual harm to Yu Ancestor. Yu Ancestor looked at Ji Hao and laughed viciously, "Little human kid, you didn't exhaust yourself on the bed of some girl last night, did you? Look at you, you can't even raise that sword high, can you?"

While the sword edge swept across Yu Ancestor's shoulder, Ji Hao's shoulder slightly tickled. He took off the Taiji cloak and exposed a half of his left shoulder. The skin on Yu Ancestor's left shoulder was slightly red, and so was the skin on Ji Hao's left shoulder. With his strong and sensitive spirit power, Ji Hao clearly sensed that an extremely thin layer of skin was sliced off from his left shoulder, about one thousandth as thick as a cicada's wings.

"I see... You can share the harm with everyone who attacks you..."

Ji Hao was going to tell Yu Ancestor about his discovery, but

Yuan Li sneakily popped out from behind Yu Ancestor. Just now, Yuan Li was sent away by a Chaos power stream released from Ji Hao's body, and by now, he still had blood on his mouth corners. Rushing up from behind, Yuan Li raised his dragon staff high and bashed the back of Yu Ancestor's head violently.

One had to admit that almost all monkeys and apes naturally knew how to use sticks, staffs or clubs; they were born with some great skills. This bash launched by Yuan Li was smooth, swift and perfect. From the beginning to the end, it was impeccable, and managed to faultlessly deliver all of Yuan Li's power.

"No!" Shouted Ji Hao.

Shreds of hazy and differently colored light sparkled in the water, as the dragon staff smashed heavily on the back of Yu Ancestor's head. Along with a muffled boom, blood spurted out from Yu Ancestor's mouth, eyes, nose, and ears. His skull was crushed, that made him scream in pain with his head buried in his arms. Suddenly, his eyes were filled with blood streaks.

Yuan Li burst with a great howl as well. While crying in pain, he threw away the dragon staff, held his head with both hands and leaped around. His head was even dented. About fifty percent of the power delivered by his attack had directly come back to him through an unknown connection between Yu Ancestor and himself.

Fortunately, as a spirit creature, Yuan Li had a strong body, that his bones were much harder than gold-steel. Besides, he had only taken a half of the attack. Therefore, nothing too bad happened, except for his halfway dented head. If Yuan Li were a human being, with his great strength and the dragon staff given by Yu Yu, a half of this violent bash would be more than enough to crush a half of his body, and even destroy his soul completely.

"Yu Ancestor, because of your so-called 'transplant' gift, your enemies have to suffer about a half of their own attacks, while you

are hurt by their attacks... I see." Ji Hao swiftly moved to behind Yu Ancestor, who still had blood spurting out from all over his body. He grabbed Yuan Li, stepped back for over ten miles, then took out a magic pill and threw into Yuan Li's mouth.

Yuan Li's wounds healed quickly. He gasped quickly for air, then shouted hoarsely, "What a strange power! Does it mean that no one as powerful as him, or even slightly more powerful than him, can ever defeat him?"

For any man as powerful as Yu Ancestor, no matter how severely he could injure him, he would have to suffer exactly the same injuries. In this case, during the fight between this man and Yu Ancestor, this man would not only be facing the attacks launched by Yu Ancestor, he would also have to deal with a half of his own attacks.

As Yuan Li said, based on this situation, even the ones slightly more powerful than Yu Ancestor could not defeat him!

"You're smart!" Yu Ancestor laughed with a creepy voice, "This is my greatest bulwark of safety, ever since the prehistorical era. With my poisonous sand and this 'transplant' gift, I once forced back two divine emperors!"

Speaking this, Yu Ancestor's face blushed in excitement and pride. He raised his head, straightened his waist and two fingers, and said, "Two divine emperors, hehe, two highest emperors in the ancient heaven... All living beings, devils and ghosts were afraid of them, but I forced back both of them, all by myself!"

Ji Hao put his fingers on the hilt of the Taiji divine sword, looking at Yu Ancestor from head to tow with an unfriendly face. The Taiji divine sword was undoubtedly powerful. Yu Ancestor seemed to be just average, except for his two special gifts. Seeing his ragged body, one could easily tell that physically, he was far weaker than Ji Hao. In terms of physical strength, Ji Hao could crush him with one single hand.

If Ji Hao beheaded Yu Ancestor with a quick sword move...

Sensing that slight sting coming from his shoulder, Ji Hao touched his neck, then had his face darkened badly. Even if Ji Hao was powerful enough to behead Yu Ancestor with a single sword move, he dared not to do it! Because of this bloody ‘transplant’ gift of Yu Ancestor, Ji Hao would have to take fifty percent of the harm after he beheaded the Yu Ancestor!

The Taiji divine sword was way too powerful, and so was the sword art created by Yu Yu. Ji Hao wasn’t sure if he could survive a hack launched with the Taiji divine sword.

"Yu Ancestor...You are shameless!" Ji Hao stared at Yu Ancestor, without knowing what to do. He had a supreme-level sharp sword in his hand, yet he dared not to attack. For the very first time, Ji Hao had encountered such a troublesome enemy!

Should he torture Yu Ancestor to death with magic bombs?

Yu Ancestor’s body was covered in wounds now. Looking at Yu Ancestor, Ji Hao silently took out hundreds of magic bombs and let them float before his face.

Yu Ancestor’s facial expression suddenly changed. He took a few steps back and yelled, "This kind of magic bomb, you have so many?! Kid, you, you, you’re the shameless one! You wanna kill me slowly? You, you, can you survive all these yourself?"

Ji Hao slapped his own chest and responded with a deep voice, "I’m young and strong. I have thriving life-force and spirit blood. I am willing to compete with you, and I’d like to know which one of us can survive at last!"

Yu Ancestors’s eyeballs rolled in his eye sockets, then he laughed out loud abruptly, "Compete...Haha, a competition of life? Then I shall not keep concealing my power. Today, I will show you my third gift!"

Yu Ancestor roared with a strange voice, following which,

hundreds of dark silhouettes suddenly showed up in the water cave.

Yu Ancestor flashed across the water while pointing at one of those dark silhouettes. In the following moment, all wounds on Yu Ancestor’s body disappeared, while that dark silhouette exploded.

Yu Ancestor gave a big grin, squeezed his eyes into a pair of curved line, then pointed at Ji Hao and shouted, "I have countless bodies, each body providing a life. A competition of life? Do you think you have a chance to win?"

Yuan Li and Ji Hao were both dumbfounded.

Chapter 1170: Break In

Looking closer, Ji Hao found tens of dark holes on the rock wall, in the deepest area of this water cave. All these dark silhouettes came from those holes. Earlier, Ji Hao had focused his attention on Yu Ancestor, and didn't notice those creatures who suddenly showed up. By now, Ji Hao and a chance to carefully look at them. While looking at those creatures, Ji Hao even showed his teeth in shock — Those creatures were awfully ugly.

They looked like toads, but scaled; they also looked like lizards, but short and fat. Each of them had three feet, with each foot having five fingers. Those transparent, sticky fingers looked like tentacles of some insects. They were as big as large bulls. Their bodies were only twice as big as their heads, and on the hideous head of each of these creatures was a giant mouth, which was especially eye-catching. Occasionally, they would slightly open their mouths and let out water-like streams of purple-red sand.

"Are these...Yu?" Ji Hao looked at Yu Ancestor.

"They are my offsprings!" Yu Ancestor didn't seem to lie to Ji Hao. On the contrary, he was rather proud, as he continued, "Every offspring of mine is also a body of mine, and a life of mine!"

Turning around, he made a sharp whistle, following which, the largest Yu dashed over.

Intimately patting this Yu's head, Yu Ancestor smiled and said to Yuan Li and Ji Hao, "No matter how severely I am injured, as long as one Yu is still alive in this world, and I am willing to sacrifice it, I can recover in no time."

Pausing slightly, he blinked his eyes and boasted grinningly, "This kid is Wuzhi Qi's son, and Wuzhi Qi knows about my powers. Therefore, I am going to let you know that as long as one Yu is still alive, no matter how far away it is from me, I can immediately switch with it, when my life is threatened by severe injuries."

Ji Hao popped out his eyes as he stared at Yu Ancestor. This old thing's gifts even made him jealous.

Yuan Li directly shouted out in shock. "Old thing, are you saying that, if you have a child in the north ice sea right now, you can still..."

Yu Ancestor proudly raised his head, smiled and responded, "Indeed, if I have a child in the north ice sea, with a single thought of mine, I can switch positions with it. After that, it will be in here, while I will be in the north ice sea."

Ji Hao stayed silent, while Yuan Li largely opened his mouth, unable to say a word.

Northern Wasteland and Midland were parted by an extremely long distance. Back then, when Ji Hao followed Si Wen Ming to Midland from Southern Wasteland, he spent over a year in the journey. Northern Wasteland was even further away than Southern Wasteland, and the north ice sea was located in the northernmost area of Northern Wasteland, which was even further from Midland.

From Huai Water in Midland to the north ice sea, the distance between these two places would take a Divine Magus two to three months; even Supreme-level powerful beings had to spend a considerable span of time to cover this distance.

Nevertheless, Yu Ancestor could switch himself from Huai Water to the north ice sea with a single thought, in no time. This was much faster and more efficient than any supreme treasures in the world. This was indeed shocking. With this power, as long as Yu Ancestor wanted to leave, who could ever chase up with him?

"I have billions of offsprings." Yu Ancestor narrowed his eyes and said. Those eyes were sparkling with a weird dim light as he continued slowly to Ji Hao, "I just hid them away because of some certain things that happened back then. But in my heart, I can feel each of them clearly."

"My offsprings are living in Midland, all four wastelands, and even on stars in the sky." said Yu Ancestor, "Therefore, little human kid, don't you even think about it. You can never kill me."

Ji Hao pondered for a while, then nodded in agreement.

This old creature could harm people with his poisonous sand, by attacking shadows of his targets. He could also 'transplant' the enemies' attacks, and sacrifice his offsprings to save his own life. Apart from all this, he could switch positions with his offsprings instantly.

What an old monster! How was Ji Hao supposed to fight him?"

Firstly, Ji Hao dared not to launch lethal attacks at this old creature. Secondly, even with lethal attacks, he might still fail to kill Yu Ancestor. Ji Hao pondered for another while, but still didn't know what to do to Yu Ancestor. Therefore, he shook his head and pointed at the Pan Gu bell. The bell immediately expanded to three-meters and released strong streams of Chaos power which covered Ji Hao and Yuan Li up. After this, Ji Hao and Yuan Li dove down straight to the three coffins.

Seeing Ji Hao ignore him and going straight to the three dark dragon coffins, Yu Ancestor paused, then popped out his eyes and yelled out loud, "Little human kid, where are you going? What are you doing? You, you, you...You are so rude..."

Ji Hao paid no attention to the Yu Ancestor. He dove down fast, covering over three-hundred-miles within a couple of breaths. By now, he was only around seven-hundred miles away from the three coffins.

Yu Ancestor swiftly moved across the water, blocked Ji Hao's way, and continued yelling, "Little human kid, didn't your parents teach you anything? This tomb belongs to some other people's ancestors, and you shouldn't disturb the souls of these ancestors. You're not their offspring, so you cannot come to where they rest in peace. Do you want to become an enemy of their family?"

Ji Hao still paid no attention to Yu Ancestor. Relying on the Pan Gu bell's unreasonably strong defensive power, Ji Hao darted straight to the three coffins while sneering, "The tomb of some other people's ancestors? Your ancestors are not resting in peace in here, are they? Do you even have parents?"

Yu Ancestor stared at Ji Hao with a sulky face. He was one of the first batch of living creatures in this world, how could he have parents?

"Oi stop, kid, stop!" Yu Ancestor spread his arms and tried to stop Ji Hao. But with the Pan Gu bell floating above his head, Ji Hao bumped straight into Yu Ancestor violently. Chaos power streams struck on Yu Ancestor's body, creating a great pressure that forced him to go down towards the three coffins along with Ji Hao and Yuan Li.

"Oi! Oi! Oi!" Yu Ancestor sounded anxious. He gritted his teeth and attempted to stop Ji Hao once again. He indeed had great gifts, that even brought Ji Hao a serious headache. However, he was never good at physical combat. Yu Ancestor had impressive magical powers, yet his physical strength was not so great.

He tried his best, but he failed to stop Ji Hao!

With the Pan Gu bell floating above his head, Ji Hao dashed like a rampant fighting bull, while Yu Ancestor was like a little frog, with slim and weak limbs. How could a little frog ever stop a mad bull?

Following Yu Ancestor's yells and shouts, he was forced above the dark jade altar, less than three-hundred-meters away from it. He roared in anger and opened his mouth, releasing waves of purple-red sand that fiercely struck on the Pan Gu bell.

The Chaos power streams released from the bell remained perfectly motionless. That poisonous sand was indeed dangerous, but without being able to touch his body and shadow, it was powerless. Even a stone thrown out by Ji Hao could deliver better effects than this sand now.

"Little kid, don’t push me!" Yu Ancestor was getting desperate. He screamed shrilly, and following his voice, hundreds of different sized Yu circled Ji Hao and Yuan Li up.

Chapter 1171: The Man In the Coffin

Hundreds of large and strong Yu surrounded Ji Hao and Yuan Li, who was wrapped in pure Chaos power streams. Those Yu screamed and showed their teeth, pushing and bumping Ji Hao and Yuan Li as they tried to send them away from those dragon coffins.

Chaos power streams released from the bell remained perfectly unmoved, while Ji Hao and Yuan Li walked to the three coffins with firm steps. Yu Ancestor was not a physically strong one, not to mention his offsprings, who were completely neglected by Ji Hao.

Hundreds of Yu crowded around Ji Hao and Yuan Li and roared anxiously. But no matter how hard they tried, they could not stop Ji Hao from approaching the three coffins. Yu Ancestor paused for a short while, then suddenly burst with a raging roar, "Useless things! What do I need you for?! You're real useless things! Whoever kills this human kid will be awarded with a drop of spirit blood of mine!"

The group of Yu were agitated instantly. They opened their mouths together, released arrow-shaped, sharp streams of purple-red sand, landing loudly on those Chaos power streams released from the Pan Gu bell. Those sand arrows blasted one after another, turning into dense purple-red mist that enveloped Ji Hao and Yuan Li. The Pan Gu bell still remained unmoved. Yuan Li and Ji Hao stood under the bell, and that dense, vividly colored mist could not touch even a hair of theirs.

Following a raging roar, the strongest Yu kicked its three thick legs and bumped straight into the bell, leaving a rapid water current behind. Crack! This Yu broke its own neck against a stream of Chaos power, then fell on the altar and died immediately.

"Haha! Hahaha!" Yuan Li laughed out loud, even bending his body and covering his belly with both hands. This was the first time for him to see an idiot living creature using its own body as a weapon to attack its enemies, but bumping itself to death instead!

Ji Hao smilingly shook his head. "You see, your offsprings cannot stop me. Clear the way, I don’t want to kill anyone today. Don’t push me!" said Ji Hao to Yu Ancestor, whose face was especially dark.

Hearing Ji Hao, Yu Ancestor leaped up in anger and cursed out, "Yo don’t want to kill anyone today? Do you dare to kill these offsprings of mine? Do you dare to kill me? These kids of mine are indeed weak and useless, but more or less, they inherited my powers! Do you dare to attack them?"

Ji Hao spread his arms, smiled and responded seriously, "See, you said yourself, these kids of yours all inherited some of your powers. Do you think I’m stupid? Why would I attack them?"

Yu Ancestor paused slightly, then glanced at those offsprings of his, who could do nothing to the Pan Gu bell. Abruptly, he gave a resonant shout, following which, the group of Yu swiftly darted back to those dark holes in the rock wall and hid while screaming.

"Little human kid, you have made me so angry that I even forgot something important!" Yu Ancestor laughed proudly, then pointed at Ji Hao and said, "I can’t stop you, but I have countless dark souls in here. Soon, I will peel you, pull out your souls, and torture your souls with my sand forever and ever!"

While laughing, Yu Ancestor swung both his arms. A triangle-shaped large flag appeared in his hands. He raised the flag and waved. Instantly, a bone-piercing cold wind rolled up, and dark spell symbols on the jade altar sparkled dimly. All of a sudden, shrill ghost screams came out from the surrounding rock wall.

Visibly, streams of cold wind blew out from the rock wall, and the water temperature in this water cave dropped rapidly. Soon,

the rock wall was covered in a meters thick layer of ice. Nevertheless, the water in this water cave was still flowing slowly.

Millions of dark silhouettes drilled out of the rock wall, along with those cold gusts of wind. Their lower bodies were still stuck in the rock wall, while their upper bodies leaned out. Dragons, flood dragons, crocodiles, serpents, turtles, fishes, lobsters, the dark silhouettes of all kinds of water-kind creatures leaned their upper bodies out from the rock wall, staring at Ji Hao and Yuan Li greedily with their hollowed eye sockets, which had nothing but a greenish dark fire burning in them.

"Go! Tear them into a thousand bits!" Yu Ancestor leaped around in excitement, looking like a psychopath. He had been guarding those three coffins in this water cave for countless years, which was no different from being imprisoned for so many years. Obviously, something was already wrong with his head.

"Their blood and flesh are yours, and their souls are mine! Whoever dares to eat a slight trace of their souls, I will tear you and feed you to your own kind!" Yu Ancestor laughed crazily while spurting out waves of sand.

The water wave was darkened suddenly. Countless dark souls screamed with ear-piercing voices as they madly pounced on Ji Hao and Yuan Li.

Buzz! The Pan Gu bell rang. Hundreds of thousands of dark souls bumped on the bell layer by layer, almost simultaneously. Struck by a strong force, the bell made a resounding, powerful sound.

Those dark souls disappeared suddenly. They were shredded by the Chaos power burst along with the bell ring. An enormous, dense stream of black mist was swallowed up by the bell, then transformed into strands of extremely negative power which were sent into Ji Hao’s body.

Even without the help of the five-colored cauldron, Ji Hao’s body quickly absorbed this extra pure extremely negative power. A faint

silver glow emerged from Ji Hao's skin, judging from which, the extremely negative power contained in his body was growing fast.

"Eh!" Yu Ancestor was stunned. He stared at the bell, seeming to be badly confused.

"What kind of a treasure is this? How can you...Those dark souls are shapeless. They come along the wind and drill into your body through your heart. No more than five magic treasures in the world can stop them!" Yu Ancestor barked. He seemed to be driven completely crazy.

Ji Hao remained silent. He raised the Taiji divine sword and released a water-like, clear and cold beam of light that swept across the water cave. Touched by this beam of light, all dark souls howled shrilly out, then melted like a piece of meat in strong acid. They instantly transformed into wisps of dark mist and were absorbed by the Pan Gu bell.

This water cave was enormous, with hundreds of millions of dark souls sealed In it. However facing Ji Hao and the Pan Gu bell, these dark souls were all destroyed and devoured, without delivering any effect.

Ji Hao's body now glowed with a bright silver light. In his spiritual space, inside the red sun primordial spirit, the silver silhouette turned much clearer than before. Ji Hao nodded in satisfaction, cast a sideway glance at Yu Ancestor, who was shouting and yelling, then slapped away the lid of the nearest coffin.

"You're in hell of a trouble now!" Yu Ancestor squinted at Ji Hao with a weird and vicious look while murmuring in a low voice.

Together, Ji Hao and Yuan Li fixed their eyes on the man laid in the large coffin. Lying in the heavy, thick and frigid dragon coffin was a tall and sturdy man, wearing a long black robe. He silently lied there, completely lifeless. A purple-red Yu coiled on his chest, releasing a purple-red stream of mist which split into seven

smaller streams and flew into the man's eyes, nostrils, mouth and ears.

This man had a square face, with a long beard extending from his chin to his lower abdomen. On his forehead was a tiny pair of dragon horn.

Ji Hao felt this man's face was somehow familiar, as if he had seen this man somewhere before.

Chapter 1172: Nine Spirits Back into One

"Who’s this?" The coffin was huge. Without the six-foot-thick lid, it was still over fifteen meters tall.

Treading on a rapid water current, Ji Hao almost reached his upper body into the coffin to get a closer look at the man lying in there. He also noticed that under this man’s body, on the bottom of the coffin, was a beautiful hydrographical map of Midland, inlayed with a large number of thumb-sized blue beads.

Watery mist streams had been flowing around in the hydrographical map. Looking at those watery mist streams, Ji Hao felt like he was actually looking at all those great rivers surging in Midland.

The man quietly laid in the coffin. Except for the purple-red mist releasing from the Yu on his chest, the faint watery mist flowing in the hydrographical map on the bottom of the coffin, had also been ceaselessly permeating into his body.

This man seemed to be completely lifeless, but Ji Hao clearly sensed a power from inside this man’s body, great, tempestuous, and unstoppable. It was like an ocean with rolling waves, that would bring people fear from a long distance away.

Yu Ancestor stood hundreds of meters away, looking at Ji Hao. His wrinkled face twitched from time to time.

Hearing Ji Hao’s question, Yu Ancestor responded with a dry voice, "No one...This is just a tomb of someone’s ancestors...Little human kid, you shouldn’t do this. These ancestors are resting in peace, but you interrupted them. You will pay for it!"

Ji Hao reached his hands into the coffin to grab the man’s dragon horns. He turned around, sneered to Yu Ancestor, and said, "I’ve never seen a tomb that is guarded so strictly. Are they worrying that someone might steal these old corpses?"

Before Yu Ancestor said anything, Ji Hao continued with a deep voice, "And if three dragon coffins are guarded in each of the nine water eyes in the four great rivers..."

Yu Ancestor's face twisted, turning darker and darker. He tilted his head and stared at Ji Hao as he asked coldly, "You knew about the nine water eyes, didn't you? You came down here on purpose, right?"

Ji Hao nodded, while pressing his hand on a tiny horn of the man in the coffin. Loudly slapping the hard and cold horn, Ji Hao gave Yu Ancestor a fake smile and said, "What do you think will happen if I launch a hack on his head right now?"

Yu Ancestor gasped deeply. He narrowed his eyes, stared at Ji Hao, and said with a heavy tone, "Little kid, you asked for this! Eh, which b*stard sold this secret to you?"

On Yu Ancestor's forehead, a purple-red light sparkled, then the skin on his forehead split up, letting a thumb-sized purple-red crystal rise gradually. Yu Ancestor's face turned red while strange waves of power vibration spread out from his body.

Loud water-clattering noises could be heard while eight strong Yu rushed out from eight dark holes in the rock wall, came to Yu Ancestor, roared hoarsely towards the sky.

Next, the foreheads of all eight Yu split, and a purple-red crystal sprouted from the forehead of each of them. They trembled intensively, screaming in pain. Gradually, they straightened their bodies. In the meanwhile, large waves of sand and sticky mist spurted out from their mouths.

Within a couple of breaths, these eight Yu turned into human shapes, looking exactly like Yu Ancestor himself, and stood side by side with Yu Ancestor.

The same black cloaks, the same faces; even the power vibrations released from their bodies were exactly the same.

Ji Hao took his hand back and turned around to look at Yu Ancestor with a serious face, asked, "Nine Yu Ancestors? Which means, the tomb in each of the nine water eyes is guarded by a Yu Ancestor, am I right?"

The eight new Yu Ancestors looked at Ji Hao, gasping quickly. They pressed their hands on the original Yu Ancestor together, then the purple-red crystals sparkled on their foreheads. "Little human kid...Do you know how much I have to suffer every time when I merge my nine spirits back together?" Cursed the eight new Yu Ancestors in chorus.

The original Yu Ancestor looked at Ji Hao and said murmuringly, "Little kid, you are smart. There are nine of me. In each of the nine water eyes, a Yu Ancestor is guarding these dragon coffins with my offsprings. Kid, you are too hard to deal with. Therefore, I have to merge my nine spirits into one, and take care of you with all my power."

Quivering slightly, all nine Yu Ancestors continued in chorus, "This is the greatest gift of mine. If my body is split into two, with enough time, the world will have two of me, with the same power and shared minds."

Ji Hao paused briefly, "Just like earthworms! If you cut an earthworm into two, it would form into two earthworms!" said Ji Hao.

The nine Yu Ancestors knitted their eyebrows, looking at Ji Hao while remaining silent for a short while. Then, he responded coldly, "How can you compare me with those low-grade creatures? All in all, I am gifted. So, I’ve split myself into nine."

"Each one of me is independent, yet we can also merge back together. Once we remerge, my power will not simply rise by nine times. Instead, my power will rise by eighty-one times!" The nine Yu Ancestor maliciously glared at Ji Hao and shouted in hoarse voices, "But after I kill you, I have to split myself up again into nine

Yu Ancestors…That'll hurt! Do you how know painful that'll be?"

Ji Hao spread his hands, not knowing what to say. He wasn't stupid enough to split himself into two with the Taiji divine sword. How would he know the pain?

However, he was seriously astonished by Yu Ancestor's great, amazing gifts. Harming people by attacking their shadows, fine; 'transplanting' attracts, fine; sacrificing his offsprings to save his own life, impressive… But in addition to all this, he could also split his body and create more of himself.

What shocked Ji Hao even more was that although each of the other Yu Ancestors was independent, hey did have shared minds, and they could remerge into one!

Pan Gu world was a great world, and nothing in this world could be too strange. These ancient creatures, who lived since the prehistorical era, one just couldn't underestimate any of them.

The nine Yu Ancestors stood side by side, with their bodies shaking intensely, releasing strong waves of spirit creature power. Purple-red mist puffed out from their bodies, then quickly merged together. They screamed shrilly, as their bodies quickly squeezed together. They crushed each other, devoured each other, and generated a series of noise of cracking bones and splitting muscles.

The terrifying wave of screams lasted for about ten minutes, before the nine Yu Ancestors merged back into one.

A dreadfully strong spirit creature power rose from his body. In this enormous water cave, the clear water suddenly turned dark purple, while the sand swishing out from Yu Ancestor's mouth became pure deep purple. They looked dark and mysterious, containing an evil power. Yuan Li cast a glance at the deep purple sand and trembled instantly, almost falling to the ground.

"It's painful, but worthy…Even though I have to suffer it once again after I have killed you, little b*stard!" Yu Ancestor breathed

loudly and deeply, laughing with a hissing voice, "Such a great power! I think no one in the world can defeat me now."

Slowly straightening his body, Yu Ancestor looked at the three coffins and continued proudly, "Don’t you want to know who this man in there is?"

"I will give you the answer before you die.....He is Gong Gong! They are all Gong Gong! The clones of twenty-seven generations of Gong Gong are lying in the nine water eyes!"

Chapter 1173: The Date of Return?

"Gong Gong? They're all Gong Gong?" Ji Hao carefully observed the man lying in the coffin. This man looked indeed sixty to seventy percent similar to the current Gong Gong, who had met Ji Hao a couple of times.

Ji Hao discovered an evilness and darkness from this man's face, that seemed to be carved in his bones. The current Gong Gong had left exactly the same impression on Ji Hao.

The clones of twenty-seven generations of Gong Gong in the nine water eyes? Ji Hao was shocked and also confused. Where were their real bodies? Why were their clones hiding in these water eyes? Or, what had the Gong Gong Family been planning?

Yuan Li looked at the man in the coffin, stunned. Subconsciously, he murmured to himself, "Only twenty-seven? I heard that ever since the ancient heaven emerged, the Gong Gong Family had been existing for nearly a hundred generations."

Hearing him, Yu Ancestor laughed grimly and said, "Only twenty-seven? It's already not easy to have twenty-seven of them." Around his body, the purple sand rippled instantly, while Yu Ancestor abruptly pointed at Yuan Li and asked, "Little monkey, you're Wuzhi Qi's son, aren't you? What's your name? Next time I see Wuzhi Qi, I will let him pay for what you've done."

Yuan Li was a little absentminded because of the identity of the man lying in the coffin. Hearing Yu Ancestor's question, he unthinkingly responded, "Yuan Li."

Ji Hao raised his eyebrows as a disturbing feeling came straight from his heart. He immediately pointed at the Taiji Universe mirror. The mirror release a bright stream of light that covered Yuan Li's body. Meanwhile, Ji Hao locked his fingers together and cast the mind-settling magic taught by Yu Yu, generating a cyan-colored glowing lotus that wrapped Yuan Li up.

"Yan Li..." Yu Ancestor was informed with Yuan Li's name. He immediately popped out his eyes and screamed out loud with an ear-piercing voice. His scream was long, sharp, and not so pleasant to hear. It sounded just like a heart-breaking howl of a severely wounded old ape in a jungle. Hearing this scream, Ji Hao felt that his entire body was numbed; he even had goosebumps.

The scream didn't affect Ji Hao too much. He sensed nothing more than a strange energy wave sweeping across. Unlike Ji Hao, Yuan Li had his face turned pale. His sparkling eyes dimmed down, and his body softened, that made him sit straight down on the altar.

Hearing the shrill scream of Yu Ancestor, Yuan Li's soul almost flew out from his pores. Fortunately, Ji Hao reacted timely. He knew about many evil magic curses created by Magi Palace masters, including one called 'soul-calling'. Therefore, he hurriedly protected Yuan Li with the secret magic he learned from Yu Yu. Otherwise, Yuan Li would suffer pretty badly this time.

Even though Ji Hao had helped him, Yuan Li still felt that his entire body was aching and limp, and his soul was shaking agitatedly inside his body. His power surged through his body like boiled water, but his body was all soft, that he couldn't even raise his hands easily.

"Old b*stard!" Yuan Li nearly lost his soul. He stared at Yu Ancestor in fury and yelled through gritted teeth, "I will smash your head! Why do you keep so many corpses in this place?"

With a malicious look, Yu Ancestor cast a sideway glance at Yuan Li, then glimpsed at Ji Hao in a complicated way as he responded, "Ah, you have nice treasures, and a great power. Little human kid, you...Hm, hmm, I know your name. One of me guarding in another water eye in Huai Water has heard your name."

"Marquis Yao Ji Hao, you! Back then, Prince Wuyou grasped an opportunity and raised an army to flatten your Yao Mountain

territory. One of his warrior commanders was a grandson of mine...My grandson died, having his body smashed to pieces. But your name, I know your name now!"

Yu Ancestor just wouldn't stop talking. Ji Hao looked at him, looking at his dimly dazzling eyes. Ji Hao clearly understood that this old creature definitely had tons of evil plans brewing in his mind. Therefore, no matter how loud Yu Ancestor talked, Ji Hao didn't want to say a word to respond.

He touched the head of that Gong Gong lying on the opened coffin, then smiled to Yuan Li and said, "Yuan Li, here, give a hand. Let's bring this Gong Gong back to Emperor Shun."

Yu Ancestor's look changed immediately, but before he said anything, Ji Hao continued, "The ones in the other two coffins are also Gong Gong's clones, so we should bring them back together. Whatever the Gong Gong Family is planning, we finally know what is hiding in these water eyes."

Yu Ancestor's face twisted in a hysterical way. Those tiny scales on his face suddenly stood up, that made his face seem a lot bigger than before.

"Ji Hao..." Yu Ancestor almost yelled his lungs out. Meanwhile, a long purple streamer appeared in his hands. As he shouted Ji Hao's name, the streamer began fluttering intensely.

Nothing happened before he shouted, but once he did that, Ji Hao rang the Pan Gu bell immediately. Normally, the Pan Gu bell would only protect Ji Hao from all kinds of physical attacks, but wouldn't have any reaction to magic curses, sound wave attacks, and soul attacks.

The Pan Gu bell was powerful, and almost invincible. It sure didn't have any large weakness, but it did have its own 'personality'. Normally, it would automatically protect Ji Hao, but only from physical attacks. As for the other types of attack, the Pan Gu bell could easily neutralize them all, yet it was 'scornful'

towards those types of attack.

Once Yu Ancestor shouted out, Ji Hao rang the bell to defend. Following the thunderous buzzing bell ring, Yu Ancestor's scream bumped straight at the bell.

A shrill howl was generated. Yu Ancestor took tens of steps backward, with blood spurting out from his eyes, ears, nose, and mouth. He fell to the ground, then rolled back for over ten times. At the same time, his special gift worked; he 'transplanted' a half of the injury he suffered to the one attacked him, through a mysterious connection between himself and...The Pan Gu bell, which caused him the harm!

The bell remained perfectly unmoved and quiet, while Yu Ancestor was seriously harmed. He 'transplanted' a half of the harm to the bell, yet it was like throwing a stone into an ocean. Not even a ripple was stirred up.

"I knew it. This 'transplant' thing of yours has to have a weakness!" Ji Hao gently patted on the bell as he looked at Yu Ancestor, sneered and said, "I'm not gonna tell you the story of this bell of mine. Yu Ancestor, you're one of the first batch of creatures in this world, that means you will be suppressed by the power of this bell. If you don't attack, we will be at peace. But, once you attack, you will only hurt yourself."

Ji Hao realized that not only the Yu Ancestor, even Kun Peng, Xiang Liu, Wuzhi Qi, and the other ancient powerful beings, as long as they were creatures of this world, they could do no harm to him only if he used the Pan Gu bell well!

Those powerful beings were born in Pan Gu world, and their powers were all from the great Dao of nature of this world. The Pan Gu bell was made from Pan Gu's spine, which had served for countless centuries as the Sky Pillar, to balance the great Dao of Pan Gu world. Facing all prehistorical, powerful creatures, whose powers were limited by the great Dao of Pan Gu world, Ji Hao

would be unbreakable under the protection of the Pan Gu bell.

"Let’s work, Yuan Li. Can you carry three corpses alone?" Ji Hao directed Yuan Li to open the rest two coffins and take out the bodies in it, without taking another glance at Yu Ancestor.

"Ji Hao! You, you, how dare you?" Yu Ancestor lied on the ground, vomiting blood while screaming with a cracking voice, "How dare you? The date these Gong Gong return to Pan Gu world is the date your entire family dies!"

Ji Hao gave a cold sneer, while Yuan Li paused in shock.

Chapter 1174: A Shocking Plan

"Ahyaya, I’m so scared!"

Ji Hao had already lifted another coffin lid, and was going to throw the lid on the altar. Hearing Yu Ancestor, he realized something. Pausing with an evil smile, he walked to Yu Ancestor step by step.

"Do you think I grew up as a scared little boy? How do you think I became Marquis Yao? I earned this title by chopping countless enemies with my own hands on true battles!"

Yu Ancestor stood back up from the ground and drew back step by step to keep a distance from Ji Hao. Seeing Ji Hao approach step by step, Yu Ancestor gritted his teeth, laughed coldly and said, "You’re not a scared little boy, and you earned your title with military credits. So what?"

Pointing his finger up, he bared his teeth and continued, "When all Gong Gong return to Pan Gu world, human beings and non-human beings, you will all bow to be slaves, or...die! The future world will belong to our water kind!"

Ji Hao raised his hand, took the Pan Gu bell down from above his head, and shrank it to around six-feet-tall. He held it with both his hands, seeming to smash Yu Ancestor with it.

Yu Ancestor screamed in fear. All of a sudden, he disappeared, and the one who took his place was a confused Yu. That poor Yu stood in front of Ji Hao and had his head thudded heavily by Ji Hao with the Pan Gu bell, then fainted.

Yu Ancestor walked out from a hole on the rock wall and said to Ji Hao with a frigid tone through his gritted teeth, "Ji Hao, little human kid, don’t think that you’re invincible because you have a good treasure. Don’t force me to fight you with my true power. Otherwise, even if I have to waste fifty-thousand years of my

severe cultivation, I will drag you down to hell!"

Ji Hao remained silent for a while, then kicked that fainted Yu away.

"These clones of Gong Gong are important, aren't they? If I bring them away, you will have a trouble, won't you?" Smilingly looking at Yu Ancestor, Ji Hao said, "Come over here and tell me what you know. If I am satisfied with your answers, I may not do it."

Yu Ancestor blinked his eyes, staring at Ji Hao suspiciously.

Ji Hao turned around, pointed at the three dragon coffins, and continued coldly, "Or, should I destroy these now?"

The Taiji divine sword gave a sharp buzzing noise while automatically flying out from Ji Hao's body, hovering around him. Gradually, the sword merged with the water and covered Ji Hao's body in the shape of a cold light. The strong sword intent made Yu Ancestor knit his eyebrows, and involuntarily take a series of steps back.

Facing such a strong sword intent, Yu Ancestor's face twitched intensely. The sword intent of the Taiji divine sword seemed to even shred the world. Under this sword intent, even Yu Ancestor felt that he was nothing but a little ant, and he could be crushed by the sword at any time.

It was merely the sword intent, yet it was already so dreadful. What if Ji Hao truly hacked down with that sword...

Gnashing his teeth, Yu Ancestor glanced at those three coffins, pondered for a while, then said coldly, "What if I tell you the truth but you still insist on destroying these clones? If these clones are destroyed, my 'Yu' Family would be facing a destructive danger."

"You can bet on my moral quality," said Ji Hao coldly while staring at Yu Ancestor.

Remained silent for another while, Yu Ancestor responded with a dry voice, "Moral Quality? That is a term of human beings. You're

so powerful, are you even a human being? Not to mention any ‘moral quality’. However, I can tell you that if you truly destroy these clones, I will risk everything I have. I will march out with all my offsprings and kill every human being I see…Imagine that."

Ji Hao’s face dropped instantly.

Human beings were already struggling. With Yu Ancestor’s great gifts, if he really marched out with all his offsprings, the humankind would suffer even greater damage. Yu Ancestor was different from Xiang Liu, Wuzhi Qi, Kun Peng and the others, who had only been watching the show so far, instead of getting truly involved in. If Yu Ancestor seriously decided to start a massacre in the human world, he would bring an immeasurable damage to the humankind.

Should Ji Hao risk the entire humankind for three clones?

He also pondered for a while, then responded with a deep voice, "Alright, give me some valuable information, then I will not touch them! But, I will certainly report this to Emperor Shun. As for what action Emperor Shun will take, that will have nothing to do with me."

Obviously, Yu Ancestor sighed in relief on hearing Ji Hao. He knew that his threat had worked. Glancing at Ji Hao with a complicated look, Yu Ancestor silently considered himself lucky. Fortunately, Ji Hao wasn’t that kind of a silly young human being, because he could still talk some sense into Ji Hao’s head. If the one who came down here were a brainless young human being, he or she might directly destroy these clones without asking a question. And if that happened, Yu Ancestor would have no choice but to march out with his offsprings, fighting with his precious life.

Yu Ancestor quickly organized his language, then started talking. Hearing him, the faces of Ji Hao and Yuan Li twisted more and more badly.

Actually, this wasn’t complicated at all. Ever since the non-

humankind invaded Pan Gu world, the Gong Gong Family had been lying to the public. Unlike what they told the others, Gong Gongs didn't die after they abdicated the throne. They were gods, how could they die of old age so easily? In fact, because of the order given by the last human emperor, they had to leave Pan Gu world for the vast Chaos, to search for a way to strengthen the humankind and defeat the non-humankind for good.

The Chaos was boundless and dangerous. Tens of Gong Gongs went into the Chaos one after another in the past countless years, and according to the feedback delivered by their clones left in Pan Gu world, many of them had fallen.

Many of Gong Gong Family people had dark hearts. They valued their own interests more than anything else. Suppressed by the human emperors, those Gong Gongs were forced to step into the Chaos. They would be willing to sacrifice if they were doing it for their own family, but they were actually doing it for the future of the humankind. The Gong Gong Family had always been angry about this. They even believed that the humankind did this on purpose to weaken the Gong Gong Family.

The anger and hatred had been accumulating. And by now, the current Gong Gong, his father, and grandfather, finally made a 'great' plan.

Yu Ancestor faked his own death. After that, he raised twenty-seven strong Yu with his own spirit blood to infect the clones of the twenty-seven Gong Gongs, who were still alive in the Chaos. Day after day, these strong Yu sent their power to those Gong Gongs in the Chaos, through their clones.

With the passage of time, those Gong Gongs had all absorbed some of the power that originated from Yu Ancestor. More or less, they had gained the same ability of 'switching positions'.

Once they successfully switched positions with their clones, they would return to Pan Gu world and throw their clones into the

Chaos, to live or die.

"They are way too far away... deep in the Chaos. The distances between them and Pan Gu world might be a hundred, thousand, even a million times greater than the total length of Pan Gu world." Looking at Ji Hao, Yu Ancestor said with a deep, grim voice, "With the power I gave them, those Gong Gongs can cover the length of the entire Midland at most, but can never return to Pan Gu world with that power."

"Therefore, we raised the flood to boost up the water power of this world."

Yu Ancestor stared at Ji Hao and continued, "We worked with the non-humankind because we want the twelve carefully selected water worlds to merge with Pan Gu world. At the moment when Pan Gu world devours all the twelve worlds together, the water power in this world will rise suddenly and sharply to an extreme point."

"With that overwhelming water power, the Gong Gongs can return."

Chapter 1175: Before and After

Ji Hao looked at Yu Ancestor with flaming eyes.

Not to mention the plan of the Gong Gong Family, Yu Ancestor's great gift allowed him to switch positions with any of his offsprings. Even if himself was deep in the north ice sea, as long as he had one offspring in Southern Wasteland, under Zhu Rong Mountain, he could immediately send himself to Southern Wasteland and throw that offspring into the north ice sea. This was Yu Ancestor's own life-saving power, but today, it became the greatest reliance of the Gong Gong Family for their great plan.

Yu Ancestors raised twenty-seven strong Yu with his spirit blood and put them on the bodies of the clones of Gong Gongs. By doing this, he gradually shared his power with those Gong Gongs, because there were always mysterious connections between clones and the real bodies.

One had to mention that the Yu Ancestor was best at grasping those kinds of mysterious connections. After all, he could harm a living being by simply attacking its shadow!

His poisonous sand didn't need to touch the bodies of his targets. Merely by touching the shadows or a trace of the power of his targets, the sand could cause direct harm to the targets. This was the reason why the power of the twenty-seven Yu could be absorbed by those Gong Gongs through that mysterious connection between their clones and their real bodies, and allow those Gong Gongs to learn to switch positions with their clones.

By casting the position-switching magic and sacrificing their clones, those old Gong Gongs, who were lost in the deep Chaos and could no longer find their home, would be able to return to Pan Gu world. How strong were those old Gong Gongs? At least, Supreme Magi could never rival them.

At that point in time, the Gong Gong Family would suddenly

have twenty-seven more members who were as powerful as, or even more powerful than Supreme Magi. As for what would happen after that, there was no need to guess. Neither the humankind nor the non-humankind would be able to defeat the Gong Gong Family. Even if the humankind and the non-humankind decided to join hands, they would still be suppressed by the Gong Gong Family until the end of the day!

Ji Hao looked at Yu Ancestor right in the eyes and said, "Good plan! What a great plan! Hehe, Yu Ancestor, if you're willing to..."

Yu Ancestor waved his hands, interrupted Ji Hao, and said in a heavy tone, "Don't even think about it. I will never throw myself into the lap of the human emperor."

Breathing deeply, Yu Ancestor continued, "Gong Gong has my life pinched in his hands. Otherwise, Ji Hao boy, why do you think the Gong Gong Family would put me in charge of such an important thing?"

Narrowing his eyes, Yu Ancestor remained silent for a while, then carried on, "Why don't I just tell you the truth? Once those old Gong Gongs return to Pan Gu world, no one in the world can ever defeat them. Ji Hao boy, you're talented. If you give me that bell of yours, I might say some good words for you to Gong Gong. In the future, you can probably get a good position in the Gong Gong Family."

Ji Hao smilingly shook his head. Follow Gong Gong?

How could that ever happen? Not to mention how much Ji Hao cared about the humankind, and how deep the hatred between the Gong Gong Family and himself was, if Ji Hao ever dared to betray the humankind and follow Gong Gong's lead, without a doubt, Yu Yu would set up his sword formation himself and hack him into a thousand pieces as a disappointing disciple of his.

Seeing Ji Hao's unswerving look, Yu Ancestor shook his head and continued his storytelling.

Ji Hao guessed right. Not only did the Gong Gongs fake their own deaths and go to the Chaos, in fact, human emperors and all the other legendary powerful human beings had gone into the boundless Chaos to search for a way to defeat the non-humankind for good, after they reached a certain level of their cultivation.

Just like Suiren, who had talked to Ji Hao a while ago, these powerful beings all left clones in Pan Gu world with two purposes, protecting the humankind and saving a small part of their souls in case they died in the Chaos. They split their souls, created clones with a part of their souls and powers, and left their clones in Pan Gu world.

However, those old Gong Gongs were the most selfish ones among all, as the clones they left in Pan Gu world only had one percent of their powers at most, while they left for the Chaos with over ninety-nine percent of themselves!

In the eyes of those old Gong Gong, taking their powers with them would be much safer. As for the lives of their offsprings, how much did that matter? They were immortal gods after all. It was already enough as they were forced to go into the Chaos by the humankind. How could they leave too much of their powers in this world to protect the humankind?

Unlike them, those legendary human beings valued the well-being of the humankind the most. Therefore, Emperor Fuxi, Emperor Suiren, Emperor Shennong, and Emperor Xuanyuan, as the most famous human emperors, all left at least forty percent of their powers in Pan Gu world with their clones.

"Therefore, first, I don’t have the time to raise more strong Yu like these. Secondly, even if I go over to the human emperor and get those old human emperors back from the Chaos...I don’t think those old human emperors would be able to defeat those old Gong Gongs." said Yu Ancestor while looking at Ji Hao honestly, "Not to mention the fact that my life is seriously pinched in Gong Gong’s hands. With a single thought of his, he might not be able to kill me

directly, but at least I will be half-dead."

"I don’t know who told you about this water eye, which made you come all the way down here to see what’s in here." Yu Ancestor’s face twitched slightly, then he continued seriously, "Before you, the other few who came down here were turned into ashes by me... Only you, Marquis Yao Ji Hao, I can’t kill you, but you can’t kill me either."

As he coughed, Yu Ancestor looked at Ji Hao and said, "You know the secret now, but what can you do? You can’t stop those old Gong Gongs from returning, just like you can’t stop the twelve water worlds from merging with Pan Gu world."

Ji Hao frowned and showed a serious look while staying silent.

Yu Ancestor looked at Ji Hao’s serious face and chuckled with a hissing voice, "Those non-humankind beings, many of them hate each other. That kid called Dishi Cha, back then, he came to Gong Gong and sought for cooperation. That was..."

Letting out a long breath, Yu Ancestor continued, "A large consumption is required to bring those old Gong Gongs back. I can never do it alone. But in order to grasp the greatest power of the non-humankind world, that Dishi Cha chose to work with us... Hehe, finding twelve new worlds and letting the water drown the entire Pan Gu world, that was all Gong Gong’s idea!"

"Bodies will belong to the non-humankind, and souls will belong to the Gong Gong Family!" Yu Ancestors grinned happily, narrowed his eyes into curved lines, and continued, "Those non-humankind beings thought their plan had worked, but our plan has not failed. Hehe, everyone is calculating sneakily. Let’s see who will win and who will lose!"

Shaking his head and sighing for a while, Yu Ancestor grinned and said to Ji Hao, "Join us, give me that bell of yours. Then, I will say something nice about you to Lord Gong Gong! Judging by the current situation, we will win. Those non-humankind beings have

planned for so many years, but eventually, we get to be the bigger winners!"

Looking at Yu Ancestor’s cunning face, then glancing at the three dragon coffins, Ji Hao remained silent for a while. Then, he took Yuan Li and darted up towards the entrance of this water cave.

Chapter 1176: Seeing Yuan Sheng Again

"Good, leave, just leave!"

Seeing Ji Hao leave, Yu Ancestor instantly sighed in relief. He conveniently stuck his long streamer in the ground, then rubbed his face with both hands.

Eyes sparkling dimly, Yu Ancestor hurriedly took out a jade talisman from his sleeve, opened his mouth, and sprayed a puff of sand on it. A beam of red light was released from the talisman while Yu Ancestor murmured to himself, "I shall leave this for Lord Gong Gong to decide! A man like him...I don't think there are only nine water eyes."

Above the water cave, the swirl spun rapidly above the water eye. With the Pan Gu bell floating above his head, Ji Hao went up against the current. The higher he reached, the greater pressure he felt, and the faster the swirl spun, causing a louder clattering noise.

Fortunately, the Pan Gu bell provided with a stunning defensive power. Added with Ji Hao's great strength, he easily came up. Unlike him, Yuan Li was almost disabled from breathing by the swirl; he nearly lost the control of his body and sank all the way back down.

Outside the water eye, in the cold jade building, Yuan Sheng sat in a large armchair with a struggling white water boa gripped in his left hand. Crack! He bit off the boa's head, munching.

Munching for a few times, Yuan Sheng picked up a large wine pot and poured some wine into his mouth, then proudly laughed to the group of water-kind spirit creatures in the room, "Kids, be careful these days. When Lord Gong Gong achieves his great goal, my father will become a divine emperor in the heaven...The position of Huai Water God, even the God of all rivers in Midland, will be mine!"

Slapping his own chest loudly, Yuan Sheng popped out his eyes and yelled at those water-kind spirit creatures, "Then, you can have as much delicious food and wine as you want, and countless beautiful girls! Our life will be ten-thousand times greater than now!"

The group of heavily armored Water-kind spirit creatures all raised large wine pots, cheered and gulped.

These water-kind spirit creatures didn't know how to cultivate crops, neither could they brew wine by themselves. Before the flood came, the alliance of human clans was strong. These water-kind spirit creatures dared not to loot human clans under the watch of the alliance. Therefore, they had never tasted those great wines made by the humankind.

But Gong Gong raised the flood and destroyed countless human clans, breaking countless human cities. Incalculable amounts of wine and liquor were plundered by the water-kind. Gulping these tasty wines and liquors that they could never try before, the brains of these water-kind spirit creatures were almost burned by alcohol. Soon, they began dancing and singing crazily in the building, making loud noises.

Yuan Sheng laughed out loud, slapping his lap loudly while chewing the body of that water boa which was still struggling in his hand. Taking a large bite of the boa, he roared resonantly towards the sky. This happy and free life was the life that truly belonged to him, Yuan Sheng!

"Abba has so many kids, and now, I'm the oldest one...Hehe, when Abba becomes a divine emperor, everything he leaves behind should be mine! Those little ones Abba liked, such as Yuan Li, I have to find a way to kill all of them!"

Yuan Sheng's mother was a devil ape, a pure beast with a brutish nature. Therefore, Yuan Sheng was also a creature of violence. Every thought of his was based on the law of the jungle. As for

things like brotherly affection...he had no clue!

Ji Hao tore apart the swirl and rushed out of the water eye with Yuan Li.

A group of water-kind warriors guarded by the gate of the cold jade building in ordered lines. Seeing Ji Hao and Yuan Li suddenly pop out, two large lobsters threw away their whale bone spears in panic and screamed out loud, "Yuan Li! Ah! Human! Ah! They're alive!"

These four to five feet tall water-kind warriors were weak, who lived at the bottom of the water-kind society. Some of them were even weaker than ordinary human beings. They had as much intelligence as a three years old human child did; they spoke the human language, but only a few simple words.

Yuan Sheng heard their screams. A tsunami-like overwhelming spirit power spread out from the building, generating two strong water currents that transformed into two giant fits, striking at Ji Hao and Yuan Li.

Compared with the last water-fist attack he launched at Yuan L, these two fists were stronger and harder; the water in the fists had almost become deep-blue ice, releasing a sharp cold power.

Last time, Yuan Li was defeated by Yuan Sheng with a single move, thinking of which, he cast a growl and attempted to rush up.

Ji Hao grabbed Yuan Li's neck, conveniently threw him backward, and said, "I, your senior brother, am here. You can just watch. Stay vigilant! If any stupid water-kind things dare to come up, smash them all!"

The Pan Gu bell released waves of misty glow. The two fists thudded on the Pan Gu bell, yet the bell didn't even ring, before the two fists were shattered. Strong undercurrents swished around the bell, whirling up those water-kind guards by the gate of the cold jade building, then threw them on the tall fence wall of the

building. It broke their heads and made them moan on the ground without being able to struggle back up.

"Yuan Li, if you see large and healthy turtles, get a few for me alive. My Amma said that old turtles can make the best Guiling jelly. We lived in Southern Wasteland before, so where could I ever find a turtle in Southern Wasteland?"

While Ji Hao was grinningly making a joke, for an unknown reason, Yuan Li suddenly howled shrilly out and fell to the ground, rolling in pain. Even his dragon staff was thrown away.

Yuan Sheng's raging growls came from the building, followed by a rumbling boom. Afterward, a torrent roared out from the gate of the building. Wearing a golden and shining armor, wielding a splendidly glowing large cudgel, he marched out with huge steps and released a fierce spirit creature power.

"Yuan Li, why don't you just listen to me and die? Eh? Don't you even listen to your big brother's words now? Your big brother told you to die, so how dare you not? You disrespected your big brother, you are un-fraternal! Un-fraternal people should die! So die!"

Yuan Sheng roared like thunder. Ji Hao was stunned by his words.

What he said was so ridiculous, yet Ji Hao could not disprove that! Yuan Sheng was Yuan Li's big brother. Therefore, according to the 'filial piety and fraternal duty' thing believed by intelligent creatures living in this era, Yuan Li should do whatever Yuan Sheng said. Yuan Sheng told Yuan Li to die, so Yuan Li should probably kill himself. But Yuan Li wasn't willing to die, which made him an un-fraternal one, and because he was un-fraternal, Yuan Sheng should just kill Yuan Li! How reasonable!

Yuan Li screamed furiously. He picked up the dragon staff and leaped up, attempting to punch Yuan Sheng right in the face.

But Ji Hao did that ahead of him. He dashed to Yuan Sheng with a sliding step, then threw a heavy punch to Yuan Sheng's face.

Yuan Sheng laughed wildly out. A water lotus flew out of his mouth, airily sending Ji Hao's fist away.

Chapter 1177: The Secret Dragon-slam Art

Ji Hao launched a simple punch, without activating his other powers. However, he was now much stronger than peak-level Divine Magi, that even a towering mountain could be flattened by a punch of his.

Ji Hao expected Yuan Sheng to launch a direct counter attack with that large shining cudgel in his hands, because that was what all spirit creatures might do. Nevertheless, Yuan Li released a water lotus from his mouthing and easily sent Ji Hao's fist away. The water around Ji Hao's fist vibrated intensely, then followed by a thunderous buzzing noise, a giant fist-shaped ripple roared out from Ji Hao's fist and struck the middle of the gate of Yuan Sheng's cold jade building directly.

"Damn it!" Yuan Sheng shouted. Following his voice, a massive crowd of water-kind spirit creatures rushed out of the gave, being hit by Ji Hao's heavy punch.

A muffled boom was generated, then strong waves of ripples spread out. Over a hundred well-cultivated large water-kind spirit creatures were crushed by this destructive strike. Their blood mixed with the water and spurted to far away. The luxurious gate, which was made from cold jade and coral, was shattered. The fist-ripple struck into the gate and created a two-miles-long ditch on the ground.

From the building, streams of water rapidly flew out, transforming into countless swirls that stopped the fist-ripple and wrapped it up. The fist-ripple and these swirls clashed against each other for three intense breaths, then finally were worn out.

"How dare you kill my people?!" Yuan Sheng yelled at Ji Hao.

"Were those people?" Ji Hao smirked and looked at Yuan Sheng. He abruptly gripped Yuan Sheng's golden shiny cudgel and attempted to carry Yuan Sheng up.

Yuan Sheng was Wuzhi Qi's son, and was indeed talented. Once Ji Hao put forth his strength through his fingers, Yuan Sheng nimbly loosened his hands and let Ji Hao take the cudgel. Next, his body shrunk and curled up, bumping straight into Ji Hao's stomach. Along with a shrill swishing noise, his elbows violently smashed into Ji Hao's chest and ribs.

"Monkeys are all martial masters indeed, especially with cudgels and sticks!" Ji Hao smiled and looked at Yuan Sheng, who had shrunk to less than six-feet tall. The Taiji cloak glowed with a clear light to protect Ji Hao. Facing that magical light, no matter how hard Yuan Sheng tried, he failed to touch even a hair of Ji Hao.

On the contrary, his violent attacks were all neutralized by the cloak, or simply given back to himself. After launched a mad series of attack, Yuan Sheng suddenly burst with a howl, then dashed hundreds of meters away, bared his teeth and swung his arms. Visibly, his arms had swollen pretty badly.

"Relying on treasures, you're not a man! If you're a real man, fight me face to face!" Yuan Sheng raised his head and yelled towards the sky. All of a sudden, the agitated power vibration that came from his body faded, and then a magical change happened.

Earlier, the power vibration released from Yuan Sheng's body was strong and intense, just like the rolling dark smoke coming from an erupting volcano, ferocious and uncontrollable. But as he gave a long and resounding roar, that power vibration suddenly calmed down and turned pure and stable, like a transparent, blue crystal.

A soft, light-blue layer of watery light surrounded Yuan Sheng. He didn't seem like a spirit creature anymore. Instead, he now looked elegant, dignified, decent, and serious. At the moment, Yuan Sheng looked nothing like a spirit water ape, and was more like the real Water God descending from the ancient heaven.

With the pure and positive sense of power spreading from his

body at this very moment, Yuan Sheng was more of a god than the current Gong Gong.

"Wow!" Yuan Li was astonished. Carrying his dragon staff, he stared at Yuan Sheng without knowing what had actually happened to him.

"Interesting." Ji Hao thought of the water lotus that came from Yuan Sheng's mouth just now. Which kind of secret magic did he cultivate himself with which allowed him to turn his wild and violent power into such a pure and clean one, and that too so suddenly yet smoothly?

Yuan Sheng snorted scornfully. Next, his body began expanding. Soon, he was again over ten meters tall. Covered in furs, his face glowed with a pearl-like luster, while his pair of eyes were shining brightly like two giant blue sapphires.

"Yuan Li, you know nothing!" Yuan Sheng sneered, pointed at Yuan Li, and yelled, "How old are you? Have you seen the world yet? You don't even know how big the world is! How can you understand all the miracles in this world? You little thing!"

Proudly raising his head, Yuan Sheng gave Ji Hao a cold grin, and said, "This is called 'secret dragon-slam art', created especially for our water-kind creatures. By mastering this secret art, even a tiny shrimp can easily defeat dragons, those idiots who call themselves the royals of the water-kind."

Throwing a sideway glance at Ji Hao, Yuan Sheng waved his hand. Following his move, the golden cudgel quaked intensely.

"Hehe," Ji Hao chuckled, shaking his head as he said to Yuan Sheng, "You're not getting your stick back until you tell me where you learned this 'secret art'."

The golden cudgel sparkled with a multicolored light as countless tiny spell symbols emerged on it. Along with a deep buzzing noise, a faintly visible dragon silhouette appeared inside the cudgel.

Every time the cudgel quaked, strong electric bolts would be sent to Ji Hao's fingers by this dragon silhouette.

"Then let's see if you have the ability to keep it!" said Yuan Sheng through his gritted, bared teeth, "This is a nature-crafted holy weapon, a raw piece. My Master Shifu remolded it with the best eight types of metals in the world, and also sealed a dragon soul in it as its spirit. This is my spirit weapon now, how can you hold it so easily?"

Ji Hao smilingly, slowly glanced at Yuan Sheng, then opened his mouth and let out the Taiji divine sword. He gripped the sword hilt with his right hand, holding the cudgel in his left hand. He raised the sword high and swung neatly down. By using the move of sky-opening, the Taiji divine sword easily cut into the weakest spot of the cudgel.

Crack! The cudgel was cut into two.

Yuan Sheng popped his eyes widely up, staring at the broken spirit weapon of his. Suddenly, a stream of blood spurted out from his mouth, reaching nearly a hundred meters away.

"You, you, how dare you destroy my precious spirit weapon?! That was a gift from my Master Shifu!" Yuan Sheng's face twitched as he screamed in fury, "Damn you! Damn you! You should die! You should die a thousand times!"

Ji Hao conveniently threw the broken cudgel away, held the Taiji divine sword with both hands and said with a cold and strong voice, "Cut the crap, let's begin! Secret dragon-slam art? Sounds like a good one! Let's me see what can you do with this 'secret art'."

Yuan Sheng took a deep breath. Raising his head, he roared resonantly, then his body began expanding again. Speedily, he became a three-hundred-meters-tall giant ape.

"Errr..." Yuan Sheng drummed his chest with both fists, maybe because he was so enraged, or he just simply wanted to show off

his strength. After the roar, he raised both his arms, and following his move, tens of lifelike water dragons roared out, pouncing on Ji Hao from all directions. Even the scales of those water dragons were clearly visible.

Ji Hao chuckled again. He wasn't really planning to fight with his own power. Instead, he activated the Pan Gu bell and let the bell release strong Chaos power streams that shielded his entire body. Afterward, he did nothing else but watch those water dragons coming rampantly at him.

Chapter 1178: A Familiar Feeling

Buzz!

The Pan Gu bell buzzed slightly, while the tens of enormous water dragons were crushed. Yuan Sheng suffered a counterforce that made his giant body take two steps backward. Yuan Sheng was getting more and more furious. Again, he roared thunderously towards the sky.

The light-blue watery light rotated around him. Yuan Sheng locked his fingers together and slapped on his chest. Next, two large lumps rose from both sides of his neck. Pop! Pop! Another two heads grew out from his neck.

"Wow!" Yuan Li exclaimed again. Two more heads?! This was unexpected!

Following behind the two heads were four large lumps on Yuan Sheng's shoulders. Following another series of popping noise, Yuan Sheng had four new arms. Raising his six muscular arms with clenched fists, Yuan Sheng vibrated the entire water eye area.

Countless water-kind spirit creatures were frightened by the terribly strong power vibration released from Yuan Sheng' body, and fled away at their highest speeds.

Snakes wriggled, fishes dashed, and turtles hurriedly pulled the water with their four short legs. Those shrimps, prawn, and lobsters fled the fastest, as they could easily cover tens of miles with one single bounce.

Despite the fact that these water-kind spirit creatures had been fleeing with considerably high speeds, an earthquake was started by Yuan Sheng within the area a thousand miles in radius. Strong water streams roared across, whirling countless water-kind creatures away, making them bump heavily against each other. Many of them had their heads broken, nearly dying.

"Three heads and six arms?" Ji Hao widely opened his eyes in surprise, looking at Yuan Sheng, who had still been trying to boost up his power. Witnessing Yuan Sheng's shapeshifting and magical abilities, Ji Hao silently dropped his sword and unlocked his fingers. He was preparing to launch an attack, but now, he changed his mind, because he wanted to see what else Yuan Sheng could do.

Gasping loudly, Yuan Sheng lowered his arms and grabbed his golden belt. Six weapons appeared in his hands along with a series of metal clang: two long blades, two swords, and two metal whips. These six brightly shining golden weapons fiercely swished to Ji Hao and Yuan Li together.

Ji Hao pointed his finger up. The Pan Gu bell expanded to tens of meters wide, stirring up waves of ripple and striking on the six weapons.

With that giant body, Yuan Li's physical strength had raised by over a hundred times. The six weapons violently hit on the bell, causing thunderous clangs. Within a blink of an eye, the bell had taken over ten-thousand heavy strikes. Dazzling fire sparkles were sent out from the vibrating bell, evaporating all the water within miles in radius.

Breathing again, Yuan Sheng took a large series of step backward. His six arms were vibrated intensely. Thick veins bulged from his fingers as his knuckles turned pale. The bell remained perfectly unmoved, while all six weapons of Yuan Sheng were all covered in cracks and breaches now. Those six weapons were not bad, yet they were destroyed already.

Looking down at his broken weapons, Yuan Sheng seemed to be quite embarrassed.

"This bloody bell...You!" Yuan Sheng dropped the six weapons. His palm skin had broken, with large streams of blood gushing out. He stared at the Pan Gu bell in shock. He looked closer, but still

failed to find even a scratch on the bell.

Ji Hao laughed coldly while looking at Yuan Sheng, "Go on. If you have run out of weapons, you can hit it with your head! Perhaps, you can break my bell with your head. Then you can...kill me?"

Yuan Sheng spat loudly towards the ground and yelled at Ji Hao, "Do you think I'm stupid?"

Standing behind Ji Hao, Yuan Li answered that question for Ji Hao. "Yuan Sheng, I always think that you're a breath away from stupid..You're very stupid, super stupid!"

Speaking of this, Yuan Li squatted and laughed out loud, holding his belly with both his hands. He just couldn't stop laughing, even lying directly on the ground and rolling. He squeezed tears out of his eye sockets while drumming the ground. No one knew what he had thought about that made him laugh so hard.

Yuan Sheng roared in rage. He stared at Ji Hao, bared his teeth for quite a while, then his six arms started moving simultaneously. He pulled off his fur, rubbed it into a large ball of fur, then thrust in his own mouth.

"Whoa..." Ji Hao shouted, expectantly looking at Yuan Sheng.

Yuan Sheng chewed his fur, then coughed out a puff of ground fur, along with a strong whirlwind. From that whirlwind, countless apes leaped out. These apes were of different sizes; some were as tiny as beans, while some were tens of meters tall. But they all looked exactly like Yuan Sheng. Countless apes screamed shrilly while marching to Ji Hao.

A series of muffled thuds was generated. These apes straightened their necks and bumped into the Pan Gu bell fearlessly.

Their heads were smashed, as brains splashed out, but the other apes kept rushing up, without showing a sign of fear. Thousands of apes cracked their heads against the bell, wave after wave. Soon,

ape corpses were everywhere, flowing along water currents.

"Hehe, I'd like to know if this bloody bell is truly that strong!" Yuan Sheng proudly raised his head, pointed at Ji Hao, and laughed evilly.

Ji Hao snorted coldly, then slightly patted his own head. A warming red light shone from his head, from which, the great red sun rose, with a clear black edge. Inside the sun, a golden silhouette and a silver silhouette emerged gradually. Ji Hao gave a bright shout. Following his voice, streaks of golden flame roared out and coiled around those apes.

Puff! All apes were burned into ashes instantly.

No matter how magical this trick played by Yuan Sheng was, these apes were transformed from his fur. Being buried by the essence sun fire, how could they not become ashes?

Yuan Sheng was startled. In his eyes, this magic he cast was greatly powerful, and with this magic, he even started to feel that he was actually more powerful than his father, Wuzhi Qi. However, Ji Hao easily broke his magic. Yuan Sheng was shocked deeply. He took a few steps backward. hurriedly

But before he made the fourth step back, Ji Hao had already rushed up to Yuan Sheng, raised the Taiji divine sword with his right arm and growled, "Any more tricks? No? Then...go the hell, Yuan Sheng!"

Along with Ji Hao's bright and resonant voice, the Taiji divine sword flashed across the sky. Puff! Puff! Puff! Yuan Sheng's three heads were cut off by Ji Hao, sent high into the sky.

In a distance away, Yuan Li gave a long sigh. Looking at the three heads on the ground, he shook his head. Yuan Sheng was annoying, but he was Yuan Li's brother after all. Seeing his brother being killed by Ji Hao just like this, Yuan Li felt a bit sad.

But all of a sudden, a raging growl came from Yuan Sheng's belly.

Three clear streams of mist puffed out from his broken necks, quickly forming three large buds.

Within a blink of an eye, the three lotus buds bloomed, and inside the three lotuses, three new heads grew out.

"Wanna kill me? How can it be so easy?" Yuan Sheng screamed at Ji Hao, then released a dazzling water thunder bomb.

Chapter 1179: Dragon-slam Priest

The water thunder bomb struck on the Pan Gu bell and caused an earth-shaking bang, generating dazzling lightning bolts. Under the Pan Gu bell, Ji Hao stayed perfectly unmoved, while a half of Yuan Sheng's cold jade building was shattered and sent flying up.

The building collapsed. Yuan Sheng glared at Ji Hao, showing his teeth. Once again, Ji Hao's sword flashed across the water and descended like a strong waterfall. Yuan Sheng screamed with a high-pitched voice when the sword cut him into two, from the middle of his body.

Ji Hao took two steps back, seriously looking at Yuan Li's cut body.

Clear mist streams drifted out from Yuan Sheng's body and transformed into an enormous lotus which wrapped him up. Following a barely audible spell-incanting sound, the two pieces of Yuan Sheng's body quickly merged back together.

Yuan Sheng popped out his six large eyes and threw a vicious glance at Ji Hao. He was indeed protected by the secret self-healing magic of his, but finally, Yuan Sheng realized a fact — He could never defeat Ji Hao. Ji Hao was shielded by powerful treasures, which meant he could never harm a hair of Ji Hao. Ji Hao's sword was sharp and fierce, that even a slight swing of that sword could cut his body into pieces.

When Yuan Sheng first learned the secret dragon-slam art, he thought he had become invincible. He ordered his warriors to attack him together, as a result of which, all kinds of weapons used by his warriors were broken, while he remained perfectly unharmed.

But now, he knew the truth. Those weapons broke because of low quality instead of his own great power. This realization instantly weakened Yuan Sheng's courage. He staggered back and yelled

with a dry voice, "Brother, brother, I can’t defeat this guy. Please, brother, release your power and vanquish this guy!"

A loud and clear spell-incanting sound could be heard, followed by a thunderous boom. From inside the half-collapsed building, a dense cloud of dust rose, while a rockery made from coral and seashells was blown up violently. What could be heard next was a dragon roar, along with rapid water streams that immediately flushed away all the dust.

A black dragon swished out from under the rockery. This dragon had glowing-red eyes and standing scales, with an extremely violent power vibration releasing from its body. The dragon roared resoundingly, darting as fast as a gust of wind. From a long distance away, the dragon opened its jaws and launched a series of thunderbolts towards Ji Hao.

A loud sizzling noise lingered in Ji Hao’s ears as strong thunderbolts landed on the Pan Gu bell one after another. The arm-thick thunderbolts disintegrated against the bell dazzlingly, and made the bell buzz deeply. Yet, it never showed a sign of breaking.

Seeing that no effect was delivered by its thunder attack, the black dragon was infuriated. It dashed to Ji Hao and slapped on the bell with its enormous pair of claw.

Buzz! The bell rang deeply. Thirty-meters around Ji Hao, the space collapsed into a small black hole, with sharp streams of Chaos power roaring in it like thousands of daggers, cutting each other in the black hole.

The dragon’s two claws exploded immediately. Its blood, skin and muscle pieces were swallowed by the black hole. Then, a strong suction force attacked from the black hole, seeming to drag the dragon entirely in.

This ferocious dragon finally realized that although Ji Hao looked young and weak, he was not a pushover. Instead, he was a

monster, far more terrifying than the dragon itself. In the dragon's eyes, the fierce red light dimmed down, as it roared in fear.

"Ji Hao, my friend, stop, please!" said a clear voice from behind the dragon's neck. Following a series of metal clangs, a golden chain swept down and coiled around the black hole, releasing streams of metal power. Countless thumb-sized golden spell symbols slowly emerged from the chain, transparent and glowing, even illuminating the black hole.

The Pan Gu bell cracked the space and created a black hole, but this effect was only maintained for a very short span of time. Sealed by the golden chain, the bell ring had already stopped, and naturally, the black hole had disappeared.

Ji Hao clearly understood that the bell ring was short, because the black dragon didn't slap the bell hard enough. The black hole faded along with the bell ring, but its disappearance had nothing to do with this suddenly emerging golden chain. If the black dragon had struck the bell a little bit harder, the bell ring would be longer and stronger, and the effective range of the bell ring would be larger. Perhaps, this golden chain would be shattered and devoured by the black hole as well

However, the man sent out the golden chain didn't think in the same way. In his eyes, he had sealed the black hole with his magical power and saved the black dragon.

"Ji Hao, my friend, how cruel you are. This black dragon followed me since the prehistorical era and made great contributions. Bu today, you took its claws. You are such a cruel man, but I will not allow you!"

Ji Hao showed the whites of his eyes, because he was speechless. The black dragon's giant head blocked the line of his eight. Therefore, he leaped up to around a hundred meters and finally saw the man standing on the dragon's neck.

With coarse clothes, bared arms and shanks, and golden bangles

on both wrists and ankles, this tall and slim man had deeply sunken eyes, along with heavy and straight, blade-like eyebrows. Same as the dragon treading under his feet, a fierce, aggressive power vibration had been releasing from his body.

A golden chain had been quickly hovering around this man like a nimble, poisonous serpent. The golden chain was covered in ancient styled spell symbols, emitting a heavy sense of power.

Ji Hao was a hard-working learner, and had always been improving amazingly fast. He recognized those spell symbols at first glance. Those were mostly sealing and suppressing spell symbols, which could restrain all kinds of natural powers and the powers of some dark and evil beings of this world.

If this chain coiled on the body of an ordinary human being, not to mention if this human being would still be able to move or not, even the soul of this human being would be sealed.

"Are you out of your mind?" Ji Hao glanced at this man coldly and yelled, "This stupid animal under your feet tried to kill me the moment it saw me. I made it suffer because it deserves it!"

"Without asking why, you assumed my fault for this stupid animal...Is there a close relationship between you two? Are you father and son or boyfriend and girlfriend?" The moment Ji Hao saw this man, he knew where this man came from. Therefore, he didn’t bother mincing his words.

The black dragon roared again, while this man’s face turned extremely sulky. He gritted his teeth and said word by word, "I am Priest Dragon-slam. Guided by my Shifu, I started my cultivation in the era of the first divine emperor. Lately, I heard that a disaster happened in the mortal world, so I left my place, came down to save living beings and accumulate merit."

"Eh, ‘save living beings and accumulate merit’. Do you mean gormandizing in that underwater building?" shouted Ji Hao. "Enough, you bunch of fake priests, you’re obviously working with

the water-kind! You’re destroying the world!"

Putting such an evil label on this man and his people, Ji Hao gave another resonant shout, then held the sword with both hands, made the Big Dipper step and combined the moves of sky-opening, earth-splitting, everything-grow and everything perish. A hundreds of meters long beam of sword light dazzled out from the Taiji divine sword, while it hacked straight down towards Dragon-slam Priest.

Chapter 1180: Dragon-Slam and Tiger-Blast

Followed a loud series of metal clangs, the golden chain hovering around Dragon-slam Priest flew to Ji Hao and started a golden swirl. Spell symbols on the chain glowed with a dazzling light. The chain spun swiftly and dragged over rapid currents from the water eye, while emitting a bright golden light that illuminated the whole area.

"Cut!"

Ji Hao didn't restrain his power for this strike at all. Instead, he boosted up his power as much as possible; even the cultivation method with nine turns was fully activated.

In his red sun primordial spirit, between the golden silhouette and the silver silhouette, the silhouette of a long sword shone suddenly and grew brighter and brighter, releasing a dreadful sword intent.

When Ji Hao raised the Taiji divine sword, the sword silhouette in the red sun flashed out and merged with the Taiji divine sword. The radiating sword instantly dimmed down. The eye-piercing sword light was restrained, yet the sword intent released from the sword was a hundred times stronger than before.

The Pan Gu bell buzzed deeply, releasing raging-dragon-like strong streams of Chaos power, hovering around Ji Hao's body. The Taiji cloak was activated by Ji Hao, which sent out beams of clear light that transformed into a giant lotus and wrapped Ji Hao in it.

Ji Hao opened his erect eye; all three eyes of his shone brightly, locking with Dragon-slam Priest.

Along with a muffled swooshing noise, the golden chain flew to Ji Hao and clanged against the Taiji divine sword. In the eyes of Yuan Sheng and Dragon-slam, the golden chain had perfectly

merged with the golden swirl, impeccable and flawless, as natural as the sun, the moon and the rivers in the world. It seemed like it could attack and defend, both in a perfect way.

However, in Ji Hao’s eyes, that golden swirl was full of weaknesses, and so were those spell symbol groups on the golden chain.

With the combined move, Ji Hao put forth all of his power and launch a full-strike. A wave of popping noise was generated, as the golden swirl collapsed quickly. As easily as cutting a piece of tofu with a sharp knife, the Taiji divine sword cut the coiling golden chain into pieces.

The sword flashed across the water and reached to Dragon-slam’s head. The indescribably strong sword intent even suffocated Dragon-slam. A faint layer of golden light around Dragon-slam was dispelled by the sword intent. His hair bun was torn apart, and so were the three ancient jade hairpins stuck in the bun. A long and deep slash was left on Dragon-slam’s scalp, with large streams of warm blood, which was sparkling with a faint-golden light, gushing out from it.

"Ah!" Dragon-slam’s face was covered in blood. He shouted hoarsely and incanted a spell. A hassock rose from his nearly split skull, coiled in a purple mist. A dense cloud of purple mist was released by the hassock that wrapped up Dragon-slam and the black dragon under his feet.

The purple mist spun, and instantly brought Dragon-slam and the black dragon over ten miles away.

Puff! They had run away indeed, but still, this full-strike launched by Ji Hao with all his strength and power managed to harm Dragon-slam severely through the distance.

The wound started from between Dragon-slam’s eyebrows and ended in his crotch, around an inch deep. Dragon-slam was almost torn into two. Blood spurted out from his body. Gradually, the

coarse long shirt worn by him fell off, exposing his skinny, yet glowing body.

"A nice sword, a nice sword spell! Destructive, unstoppable... This...Is this Yu Yu's sword art? Indeed, powerful, merciless, the best in the world!" Dragon-slam grinned in a twisted way, and even his eyes turned blood-red. "I, Dragon-slam, started my cultivation in the era of the first divine emperor. But you, a little kid who hasn't lived even your first century, wounded me!"

"Who's a little kid?" Ji Hao held the Taiji divine sword with his right hand and put his left hand on the sword edge, flicking the sword edge gently with his fingers and letting it tinkle brightly.

He focused on the sword. The sword intent reached every corner of his body and made his hair stand straight up, clanging each other and making slight yet sharp voices.

Even Ji Hao's voice turned sharp and ear-piercing. Every word his said sounded like a swishing sword, that brought Dragon-slam an ear-piercing pain.

"Who's a little kid?" shouted Ji Hao once again, "You a disciple of Priest Hua, or maybe Priest Mu, while I am Yu Yu's disciple. Speaking of seniority, we're just the same!"

"We are both cultivators from the same generation. Who's a little kid?"

"You started your cultivation back in the era of the first divine emperor, so what? A pig inspired by the power of the great Dao when the world was created would still be a pig! And a man, even if he hasn't lived through his first century yet, he could surely be a much greater cultivator than a pig!"

Hearing Ji Hao, Dragon-slam's face blushed in anger, yet he couldn't find a word to contradict Ji Hao.

He was Priest Hua's disciple, and had lived for countless centuries. However, he was nearly killed by Ji Hao with a single

sword attack today, and his best magic treasure, the ‘dragon-slam chain’, was cut into pieces...Normally, he was good at talking, but right now, he couldn’t find any excuse to disprove what Ji Hao said.

Yuan Li gripped the dragon staff with both hands. "Brother Ji Hao is the best!" Seeing Ji Hao nearly hack Dragon-slam directly to death, Yuan Li raised his staff and shouted excitedly.

Yuan Sheng’s extra two heads and four arms had disappeared, as he carefully drew back for quite a long distance. He clearly knew that even with all his powers, strength and abilities, he could never survive three strikes from Dragon-slam. Nevertheless, Dragon-slam, such a powerful, mysterious man, was wounded severely by Ji Hao with a single sword move...In the lingering fear, Yuan Sheng threw an angry and vicious glance at Yuan Li — Where did this little monkey find such a strong backer?

"My friend, you’re truly impressive!" A long shout came from the half-collapsed building. Following a deep tiger roar, a white giant dragon flew swiftly towards Ji Hao. The dragon had a pair of wings on its back and a horn on its forehead.

Standing on the tiger’s back was a muscular Priest, wearing coarse clothes, with long, loosened hair. He was around three-meters-tall, with broad shoulders and long, strong arms. Worn on his head was a golden head hoop; carried on his back, was a long blade, releasing a faint intent of killing.

The white tiger landed beside the black dragon after a few rises and falls, then provokingly roared towards the dragon.

The dragon turned around gloomily and gave a few deep and sulky roars to the tiger. Then the dragon and the tiger turned around together, staring at Ji Hao with a strongly malicious look. Their facial expressions were rather humanlike.

"I am Tiger-blast. Nice to meet you, Marquis Yao Ji Hao." This priest coldly glanced at Ji Hao, then said coldly, "Ji Hao, we’re all

cultivators. No matter what, we’re still friends. You sneakily launched a lethal attack and injured my brother so badly, you need to explain!"

"Sneakily?" Ji Hao looked at Tiger-blast in confusion, "I was..."

"You sneakily attacked my brother with such an evil magic. I saw it with my own eyes!" Tiger-blast swung his arm back, gripped the hilt of his long blade, then slowly pulled out a purely dark, lusterless blade.

"If you can’t explain that to us, I will explain it to you!"

Following Tiger-Blast’s move, Dragon-slam snorted coldly, then slowly pulled out a long silver sword from his sleeve.

Chapter 1181: Slay Yuan Sheng

Sands and dust rose from the water eye, which made the water extremely turbid.

Among those drifting sands and dust, a tiny Yu floated in the water, fixing its narrowed eyes on Ji Hao and the others. That Yu was a thousand times tinier than a grain of sand. Yu Ancestor's dry voice had been coming out from this tiny Yu's mouthpart.

"Good for you, you b*stards have all found your backers. Dragon-slam Priest and Tiger-Blast Priest, I had heard about them back then. Good, very good."

"Fight, just fight, fight till death. Your backers are way too strong. I can never bear offend them. Unless those old Gong Gongs successfully return to Pan Gu world, the Gong Gong Family can't bear to offend them either. Fight, fight to death. Two or three of you should die right on the spot, that'll make a great show!"

Dragon-slam Priest was mounted on the black dragon, holding a white sword, while Tiger-blast Priest was mounted on a white tiger, holding a black blade. A purple hassock floated above each of their heads, releasing a purple light and transforming into swiftly spinning swirls, shielding their entire bodies. Slight traces of black and white natural reward power had been sparkling in the purple swirl; obviously, these two had relieved the miseries of many living beings in this world.

"Brother, be careful. His sword was strangely sharp!" Dragon-slam cautiously glanced at the Taiji divine sword, then took out a faintly glowing linden leaf from his sleeve and flicked slightly. The leaf immediately transformed into a magic talisman, then landed on Dragon-slam's sword very carefully.

Hearing Dragon-slam, Tiger-blast did the same thing. He took out a linden leaf from his sleeve, turned it into a magic talisman and placed it on his long blade.

Instantly, the white sword and black blade were both added with a beautiful multicolored glow. Ji Hao found the sword and the blade were similar to the multicolored branch that belonged to Priest Mu. Thinking of Priest Mu's multicolored branch, Ji Hao's face darkened.

"Marquis Yao Ji Hao, you sneakily attacked my brother and destroyed his dragon-slam chain. My brother made that chain himself with great efforts when he made the first achievement of his cultivation! It was an after-world spirit treasure!" Tiger-blast glared at Ji Hao and yelled, "For that chain, my brother killed three-hundred evil dragons, who had harmed innocent creatures in the world!"

While gasping, Tiger-blast continued with a cold voice, "My brother put all natural reward power he attained into the dragon-slam chain, then finally made himself a nice spirit weapon. But you, you destroyed it!"

Dragon-slam sighed slightly and said slowly, "It's alright, that is the chain's fate...But Marquis Yao Ji Hao, you wounded me and broke my cultivation. You have to pay for that!"

"Pay for that"

Ji Hao watched them continue that ridiculous conversation, assuming him for attacking sneakily. Abruptly, Ji Hao gave a cold laugh and said, "Pay for that? Then why are you still talking like little girls? Kill!"

As he growled, Ji Hao dashed to Dragon-slam with the Big Dipper step, leaving shreds of afterimages behind. The Taiji divine sword lunged straight to his chest, starting a sharp beam of sword light. He used Yu Yu's sword art in this attack, without the four moves he learned from the mysterious man.

"Good!" Dragon-slam also growled out. The white sword of his drew a bright arc in the water, coming straight at the Taiji divine sword.

Buzz! Following a muffled noise, two swords clanged against together. But no loud and resounding metal clang was generated. Instead, Ji Hao felt like his sword had hacked on a soft yet strong balloon, and failed to break anything.

Dragon-slam's white sword sparkled with a dim multicolored light. As Ji Hao paused briefly in shock, he swung his sword and lunged towards Ji Hao's heart, creating a dazzling beam of light. Dragon-slam moved swiftly and smoothly; every move of his was completely relentless.

In the meanwhile, mounted on the white tiger, Tiger-blast pounced on Ji Hao as well. A stream of metal power was released from his mouth, which transformed into thousands of sharp weapons, swishing to Ji Hao. Tiger-blast hid in the white and misty metal power streams as he swung his black blade down towards Ji Hao's head, leaving a black, water-fall-like stream of light in the water.

Almost simultaneously, the white sword and the black blade struck on the Chaos power streams released from the Pan Gu bell. Ji Hao exclaimed out — The Chaos power stream layer released by the bell had always been invincible. But now, both the sword and the blade managed to cut a foot and six inches into it!

The sword tip and the blade edge were both glowing with a multicolored light. The light was faint yet powerful; it split the Chaos power streams and forcibly pierced in for a foot and six inches deep, causing a creaky ear-piercing noise.

The Chaos power layer around Ji Hao was only around three-feet-thick. With the unreasonably strong defensive power of the Pan Gu bell, Ji Hao had fought quite a few top-grade powerful beings so far, yet none of them managed to break the Chaos power layer, not even by a single inch. Nevertheless, at this very moment, the Chaos power layer was broken by Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast, and Ji Hao was startled.

However, Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast also had their faces twitching. Obviously, they were shocked as well. "What a powerful treasure...Even our Shifu's linden spirit talismans failed to break this bell!" exclaimed Tiger-blast with a hoarse voice. Greediness emerged on both of their faces. They raised their heads and glanced at Ji Hao together, then suddenly boosted their powers up.

Over a hundred dragon silhouettes flew out from the white sword, hovering around it; meanwhile, tiger roars came from the black blade. The glow of the sword and the blade instantly grew brighter. Following their roars, the sword and the blade drilled into the Chaos stream layer inch by inch, reaching Ji Hao's body.

"Priest Mu's linden spirit talismans? No wonder!" With a darkened face, Ji Hao looked at the sword and blade approaching inch by inch. He took a deep breath, then his red sun primordial spirit abruptly shone with a dazzling light. He roared like a beast, put forth all of his strength, and punched on the Pan Gu bell.

In an instant, all of his power was drained by the bell. His body was empty now, like a building visited by a thousand thieves. The red sun primordial spirit dimmed down instantly, and the red sun almost turned black.

The bell buzzed strongly. Waves of vibration instantly covered the area with a radius of thirty meters.

Within this small area, the world collapsed; all natural powers had disappeared, and the Chaos had been replayed.

Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast screamed together. Their sword and blade quaked, buzzing shrilly; those linden spirit talismans on the sword and the blade dazzled with a multicolored light, barely fighting against the overwhelming torrents of Chaos power coming from every direction. But visibly, the two linden spirit talismans were dimming down.

The purple light released from the two purple hassock was crushed, section by section. These two hassocks were also powerful

spirit treasures, and they lasted for three breaths without breaking under those Chaos torrents. Nevertheless, the time span of three breaths was the limitation of these two hassocks already. Ji Hao even heard the two hassocks cracking.

The faces of Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast twisted immediately. They shouted, then drew back hurriedly, also remembering to drag their mounts back together.

They fled at lightning speed, and were protected by the two linden spirit talismans. But still, their clothes were all shattered by the buzz of the Pan Gu bell. The black dragon and the white tiger lost all their scales and fur as well.

Before Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast could check their own bodies, Ji Hao suddenly leaped up and dashed to Yuan Sheng with his sword raised high. Swiftly and heavily, he swung that sword with all his strength.

Yuan Sheng hadn’t been casting any defensive magic at the moment. He could do nothing but howl heartbreakingly, before he was cut into two by Ji Hao, once again.

The Chaos torrents created by the Pan Gu had not yet faded. The misty and turbid Chaos power whirled over, and Yuan Sheng had no time to do anything to save his own life, before he was shredded into nothingness.

Chapter 1182: Strange Silhouettes

"Ji Hao! How dare you?"

Yuan Sheng didn't survive. He was slaughtered by Ji Hao so suddenly that even his soul was crushed with the Pan Gu bell. Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast were shocked and infuriated; they almost exploded in anger. Together, they marched towards Ji Hao with their long hair fluttering in the sky.

To be honest, Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast didn't care about Yuan Sheng's life so much. Specifically, Yuan Sheng was nothing more than a not so important chess piece of Priest Hua. He might or might not be useful in the future, and that would be depending on Yuan Sheng's luck.

Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast were Priest Mu's disciples. They had followed Priest Mu for centuries, and were trusted by Priest Mu. As a new disciple who luckily joined the sect, Yuan Sheng could never compare with them! Yuan Sheng was worthless, but this didn't mean that they could bear watching Ji Hao kill Yuan Sheng just like that!

In other times, other places, not to mention Yuan Sheng, even if Ji Hao slaughtered a thousand chess pieces like Yuan Sheng, Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast might query Ji Hao for that if they were in a good mood. But if they weren't in a good mood, what did the lives of those worthless things matter?

However, Ji Hao killed Yuan Sheng right before their faces, and this, was a different thing.

Ji Hao knew who Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast were. He knew where they came from and who their Shifu was. But still, he killed their 'little brother' right before their faces. Ji Hao was disgracing Priest Mu himself. By killing Yuan Sheng right in front of Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast, Ji Hao had almost thrown a heavy slap on the faces of Priest Mu and all his disciples!

Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast were totally enraged. They roared deeply while rushing at Ji Hao. The golden bangles on Dragon-slam's wrists and ankles glowed with a multicolored light, swiftly coiling towards Ji Hao along with rumbling thunders. The hair hoop on Tiger-blast's head rose, letting out resonant tiger roars and stirring up strong waves of ripples as it struck at Ji Hao.

Dragon-slam's golden bangles bumped heavily on the Pan Gu bell. No matter how hard those bangles struck, the bell remained motionless. These bangles had a strong sealing power, but it would work only when these bangles touched the target. At the moment, these bangles could not even touch Ji Hao's body, and surely, they could do no harm to him at all.

Resounding tiger roars had been coming out from Tiger-blast's hair hoop. Fierce sound waves suddenly attacked Ji Hao. Hearing the roar, Ji Hao felt like tens of sharp awl had pierced into this head, bringing him a sharp pain, as if his brain was boiled.

What a powerful weapon! Fortunately, Ji Hao had a strong primordial spirit. The sun power and the extremely negative power were taking turns, ceaselessly nourishing his red sun primordial spirit. Compared to the primordial spirits of ordinary cultivators, Ji Hao's primordials spirit was a thousand times stronger. Although Ji Hao suffered a great pain delivered by the series of tiger roar, no actual harm was done to him. After all, this was the first time for Ji Hao to take a sound attack.

Pressing his hand on the Pan Gu bell, Ji Hao shouted a word, 'Ji'. Following his voice, the bell glowed with a warm light, then the overwhelming sound waves coming from the outside instantly turned softer. The sound waves bumped on the bell and caused muffled thuds, being neutralized by the bell. Additionally, bell rings were generated, striking back to Tiger-blast' hair hoop through those sound waves.

The Pan Gu bell rang for three times before seven to eight cracks appeared on the golden hair hoop.

A stream of blood was squeezed out of Tiger-blast's mouth, spurting to tens of meters away. This golden hair hoop was also an after-world spirit treasure made by himself with solid efforts. For this hair hoop, he had to sweep across countless earth meridians in Western Wasteland to collect rare natural materials.

The hair hoop was cracked by the Pan Gu bell now. Those cracks seemed to be tiny, yet it would require at least tens of years of severe work for Tiger-blast to fix it, not to mention how much precious natural materials that would cost.

"Ji...Ji Hao!" Tiger-blast tremblingly pointed at Ji Hao. His eyes had even turned green in anger.

"How dare you kill our brother?" Seeing his golden bangles were completely ineffective, Dragon-slam could only point at Ji Hao and shout hysterically.

Ji Hao smiled and didn't respond. That was no one important but Yuan Sheng. He killed Yuan Sheng because he wanted to, what was the big deal? Unless Priest Hua or Priest Mu came to take revenge for Yuan Sheng themselves, even if ten more priests like Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast showed up, Ji Hao wouldn't feel any dread. No one could hurt him, as long as the Pan Gu bell was not broken.

Besides, days ago, he even killed the eight priests of the 'eight-wind formation' under Priest Hua's command, so killing Yuan Sheng was not even worth mentioning.

From high up, rapid water-clattering noises could suddenly be heard. A terrifying spirit creature power descended, putting a tremendous pressure on the Pan Gu bell, which made the bell buzz loud. Along with an even louder buzz, the sand ground treading under Ji Hao's feet was pressed down, sinking for nearly three-hundred-meter deep.

"Who is this? How dare you!" growled Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast together.

A hazy golden light shone from their heads simultaneously and transformed into a golden cloud, shielding them against the spirit creature power.

Ji Hao saw that on each golden cloud, three golden lotuses bloomed, and in each golden lotus, a dim human-shaped silhouette sat with crossed legs. What surprised Ji Hao was that those silhouettes were a bit strange. Some of them had three heads and six arms, some had four heads and eight arms...On the middle lotus on Dragon-slam's golden cloud, that hazy silhouette only had one head, but with eighteen arms!

These silhouettes were different from all shapes of primordial spirits that could be generated by what Ji Hao learned from Yu Yu, Priest Qing Wei and Priest Dachi. Ji Hao nodded silently. It seemed that Priest Hua and Priest Mu had indeed created a new way of cultivation.

Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast were startled by the great spirit creature power. Instinctively, they released their primordial spirits, facing the potential enemy with their strongest powers. However, once they let out their golden clouds, they turned to Ji Hao together.

They saw Ji Hao staring at their primordial spirits with three popped out eyes...The faces of Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast twitched, then they each gave a resonant shout and released cyan-colored streams of mist from their bodies. Splendid glows were emitted from their primordial spirits, and soon, those strange silhouettes turned normal, becoming priests with one type of shirt, looking exactly like Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast.

Not only that, the golden light that shone from their heads turned into the color of cyan, while the golden clouds became multicolored glowing clouds, as if the golden clouds and those strange silhouettes had never existed.

"Hehe, trying to hide something?" Ji Hao smiled. He crossed his

arms over his chest, looking at Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast coldly.

"Who killed my son?!" Wuzhi Qi's shrill voice came from above. Blue waves of water pressed down, making Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast's multicolored clouds shake slightly; even their primordial spirits were covered in ripples.

Hearing Wuzhi Qi, Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast went wild with joy.

Chapter 1183: Pretend

The swirl rooted in the water eye was suddenly broken, while a nine-meter-long Yu abruptly dashed out. Before the Yu opened its wide mouth, large streams of purple-red sand drifted out from its mouth corners.

Raising its head, the Yu looked at those strong blue waves and shouted out loud, "Wuzhi Qi, you're too late. I've already sent a message to Lord Gong Gong. If you could be slightly faster, you would have been able to save your son!"

Yu Ancestor's dry voice came from that Yu's large mouth, "Eh, this kid with a large bell on its head killed your son...Marquis Yao Ji Hao, a little human kid. Can you kill him? Do you need my help?"

Ji Hao stood still and made no move, while Yuan Li gripped his dragon staff with both hands, looking up with a strangely serious face. If one gave a closer look at Yuan Li, one would find that his eyes were filled with nervousness and fear. Apparently, Wuzhi Qi was a great figure in his heart.

Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast glanced at each other. "Are you Wuzhi Qi? Do you remember us? We're your old friends. Back in Tongrong Mountain, we explored the dark cave together, and I found a heart-purifying fruit in there." Dragon-slam began talking slowly.

A cold beam of light suddenly flashed down, then Wuzhi Qi leaped out from it. He was thirty-meters tall, with his nearly three-meters-long silver fur fluttering in the water, that made him look like a large flag. He was completely naked, not even wearing an underwear. Floating above the heads of Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast, he stared at them with a fierce pair of eyes.

"What bullsh*t old friends? Old friends, old friends, old friends are dead friends!" Wuzhi Qi threw a threatening glance at Dragon-

slam and yelled, "You're alive, what kind of old friend are you? As for that heart-purifying fruit!"

The fierceness in Wuzhi Qi's eyes grew stronger and stronger as he glowered at Dragon-slam and roared, "That was mine! You bloody thief! You took my treasure, and now you're bragging about it! Haha, I've forgotten what happened in Tongrong Mountain, yet you made me remember everything! Taste my cudgel!"

Wuzhi Qi clenched his fingers towards the water eye and started a rumbling noise, that sounded like the collapse of the sky. A deep-blue light shone from the water-eye, then a torrent of after-world essence water power was released from it, being grasped in Wuzhi Qi's hand.

Slightly twisting his wrist, Wuzhi Qi made the water eye quake slightly, then a blue ice cudgel appeared in his hands. He gripped the cudgel with both hands and gave a thunderous roar, smashing straight down towards Dragon-slam's head.

Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast cursed out together and raised their sword and blade.

Ji Hao clapped his hands and laughed out loud, "Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast, you're gonna suffer! Haha!"

As he said, Wuzhi Qi's cudgel smashed down and clanged against Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast's sword and blade, generating a loud bang. Then the sword and the blade were sent flying away together. The palms of Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast were blasted, with blood spraying out. Mounted on their dragon and tiger, they hurriedly drew back.

Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast were indeed powerful, but they were good at all kinds of magics. Close combat against Wuzhi Qi? That would be like hitting a rock with an egg. How could they ever rival Wuzhi Qi?

"Wuzhi Qi, your son, Yuan Sheng, he was one of us! We had the

same Shifu" shouted Tiger-blast, "We're family!"

"Who is your family? Yuan Sheng, that silly kid, wasn't being my son enough for him? Why did he get a Shifu? Didn't he want to be my son anymore?" Wuzhi Qi wasn't prepared to listen at all. He popped out his eyes in anger and yelled at Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast, "How dare you take my son away from me?! Die!"

Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast glanced at each other again. Seeing Wuzhi Qi already raise that giant cudgel, they squeezed their eyes at each other, then glanced back at Ji Hao, who seemed to attack again. After that, they silently dashed away. Their purple hassocks released two purple whirlwinds which wrapped them up. When a refreshing aroma spread in the water, they had already disappeared without a trace.

"Good brothers, you might not take revenge for Yuan Sheng, but at least, you should collect his body, shouldn't you?" said Ji Hao. Afterward, without even taking a glance at Wuzhi Qi, he turned around, grabbed Yuan Li, and laughed, "Yuan Li, say hi to your father, then let's go!"

Yuan Li was tremblingly slightly. Before he could say a word, Wuzhi Qi already fixed his eyes on Ji Hao. His eyes dazzled. Slowly, he wielded that giant ice cudgel, with his long fur glowing with a strong watery light.

A wild spirit creature power could be sensed from everywhere. Hundreds of large swirls appeared in the water, clashing against each other and causing thunder-like noises.

"Ji Hao, did you kill Yuan Sheng?" said Wuzhi Qi abruptly and coldly.

"Wuzhi Qi, don't let them go! Not only did this little human kid kill Yuan Sheng, he has also seen the things inside the water-eye. Hehe, kill him, before he delivered the message to the human emperor!"

Over ten-thousand Yu came out from the water eye one after another. Within a blink of an eye, Ji Hao and Wuzhi Qi were surrounded by Yu. At last, Yu Ancestor mounted on a large Yu and slowly rose from the water eye.

"Wuzhi Qi, be careful! This kid is not so powerful, yet those treasures of his are. Even I was injured by him!" Yu Ancestor narrowed his eyes and said grinningly, "If you can kill him, I want that bell only, and you can have everything else!"

Wuzhi Qi glanced at Yu Ancestor, then looked at Ji Hao. Silently, he rushed to Ji Hao, leaving shreds of afterimages in the water.

Ji Hao laughed out loud. The Pan Gu bell released strong streams of Chaos power that stirred up the dust and sand on the bottom of the river, making the water turbid. Wielding his Taiji divine sword, he rushed up to Wuzhi Qi as well. When Wuzhi Qi swung his cudgel down, Ji Hao rose the sword horizontally, gently pushing against the cudgel with the flat side of the sword.

Dong! Wuzhi Qi and Ji Hao quivered simultaneously.

"How strong you are!" Wuzhi Qi exclaimed, "Little human kid, we cannot let you live!"

The large cudgel created a deep-blue swirl that wrapped Ji Hao up. Meanwhile, Wuzhi Qi shouted out loud and madly bashed the swirl, stirring up clouds of sand. Neither Yu Ancestor nor Yuan Li could see what exactly happened over there.

Ji Hao controlled the Pan Gu bell, releasing streams of Chaos power that swept across the entire area. No one could ever see through these strong Chaos power streams, not even by using a spirit power.

"Why did you kill my son?" Wuzhi Qi roared deeply, then lowered his voice and asked in anger.

"I killed one, but I'll save a hundred. What do you think?" responded Ji Hao straightforwardly, "Besides, your son has

followed Priest Hua and Priest Mu. He was their disciple...Aren't you afraid that he might drag you into a trouble and get you killed?"

"Those two...Their reputation is never good. Back in the prehistorical era, countless people died because of them!" said Wuzhi Qi with a twitching dark face, "Kill one, save a hundred. Good, you can kill more!"

They glanced at each other quickly. All of a sudden, Ji Hao burst with a loud scream, then opened his mouth and let out a sharp stream of blood. After that, he turned around and rushed straightaway without saying a word.

Chapter 1184: A Group of Chaos Monsters Block the Way

When Ji Hao vomited blood and turned around, Wuzhi Qi reached out his long arm and brushed against the Taiji divine sword's sharp edge. Without making even the slightest noise, the sword easily cut open Wuzhi Qi's arm, almost splitting that arm into two. This looked like a total accident. Wuzhi Qi paused briefly, then burst into a thunder-like series of howl, while covering his arm with his other hand and leaping backward as fast as he could.

Reaching out his arm to the sword was something Wuzhi Qi did on purpose indeed, and acted like it was an accident. But the series of howl that rose later on, they were real, not fake at all.

It was painful, truly, heartbreakingly painful. That pain even made Wuzhi Qi want to kill Yu Ancestor. Why on earth didn't he tell Wuzhi Qi that the sword of Ji Hao was actually so sharp? Wuzhi Qi had a well-cultivated, stunningly strong body, and instead of being attacked, he reached out his arm to the sword himself. But still, he almost had his entire arm cut off!

He had already been carefully controlling his move, but he never thought that Ji Hao's sword could be so sharp. He did no more than slightly touching the sword tip, but before he felt anything, his arm was cut open, and his blood spurted out like a fountain.

Yu Ancestor was well-prepared to join the fight already. Once Ji Hao was suppressed by Wuzhi Qi, he would immediately launch a lethal attack on Ji Hao with all of his power. But now, seeing Wuzhi Qi's arm was wounded so badly and Wuzhi Qi drew back while howling in pain, Yu Ancestor instantly turned around and sank back down into the water eye with his offspring.

Yu Clan was clearly aware of a fact that although his powers were indeed magical and effective, in terms of physical strength, he was

far weaker than Wuzhi Qi. However, even Wuzhi Qi was injured seriously by Ji Hao with a single sword hack. Despite his ‘transplant’ power, Yu Ancestor dared not to look for trouble again.

Ji Hao easily dashed away with Yuan Li. Flashing across the water for a few times, they rushed out of the water and swiftly flew north. A couple of breath slater, Ji Hao came to the defensive formation set up by Man Man, Shaosi and the others by the river, and shouted, "Come out, follow me back to Pu Ban City. I have to meet Emperor Shun for something important!"

Man Man, Shaosi and the others flashed out from the magic formation. Ji Hao quickly said a few words to them, then activated the golden bridge and transformed into a faint-golden light, dazzling southward.

While flying south, Ji Hao took out the tablet gave by Suiren and activated it, hurriedly telling him about what he had seen and heard in the watery eye by using his spirit power.

Soon, a few raging voices came out from the tablet. "Wild ambition! How evil are they! This is outrageous! Gong Gong Family is never on our side!"

"Back then, we should have destroyed the Gong Gong Family like I said! Yet, you old folks just wouldn’t!" An even more furious voice rose with a strong intent of killing.

"A young boy is listening. How old are you, why are you still wrangling like this? Don’t bring shame on yourselves for no reason...Back then, we knew that Gong Gong Family people had the evilness rooted deep in their bloodline, and we knew they were never good. But for unifying the water-kind and the humankind, we could not destroy them. At that time, our humankind could never bear the stress." said a mild and strong voice.

Sighing slightly, this voice continued, "Marquis Yao Ji Hao? Well done. I never thought that the Gong Gong Family would have such

a big plan. You should go to Pu Ban City as soon as you can. Listen to Emperor Shun's orders."

The glow emitted by the tablet dimmed down gradually. After that, no more sound was released by it.

Ji Hao shook his head in confusion. What had these former human emperors been doing?

The Gong Gong Family had such a great plan. Once this plan worked and the twenty-seven old Gong Gongs returned to Pan Gu world, added with this rampant flood, the humankind would be facing a true disaster. At this moment, these powerful, legendary former human emperors should sweep across all water eyes together, and destroy them and those clones, shouldn't they? But, why didn't they sound as worried as Ji Hao thought? Did they have some other plan already?

Man Man heard what Ji Hao said to Suiren and the other former human emperors through the tablet. Her eyes had already strained with anger. Abruptly, she clapped her hands and yelled, "I never liked those things from the north! Every time, my Abba would say that Gong Gong has been wanting to take our place as the Great Libation."

Wielding her fist, Man Man shouted even louder, "If we knew they were so bad, we should have killed every last one of them!"

Shaosi patted on Man Man's head and said gently, "Before these things happened, the Gong Gong Family is as powerful as your family in the society of the humankind. A conflict between the fire and the water would cause bad influences. So, the humankind would never let that happen."

Ji Hao had been controlling the golden bridge to fly south at the highest speed. Hearing Man Man and Shaosi, he smiled, but didn't say anything.

A short while later, Ji Hao abruptly turned around and asked

Taisi, "Taisi, your Nailhead Seven Arrow Book, if you killed someone with it, can you take the counterforce? I mean, if someone had a gift that allows him to send a half of the attack he suffered back to whoever attacked him, would the Nailhead Seven Arrow Book harm you if you were killing this man with it?"

Taisi knitted his eyebrows, pondered for quite a long while, then slowly shook his head and responded, "If we were under the same ‘time’, this kind of gift would be very hard to deal with. I’m afraid that if I cursed him to death, I would be killed by the counterforce as well."

But then, Taiji gave a hazy and evil smile, and continued through gritted teeth, "However, even though I am talking to you face to face right now, I am not under the same ‘time’ with you. I am in the past, or in the future, but I will never be in the ‘present’, as you all are. Therefore...he can never hurt me!"

Ji Hao seriously nodded, then carefully took out a purple-red grain of sand from his sleeve. That was Yu Ancestor’s poisonous sand.

"You try with this first. Give a try with gentle magic spells. If his power truly cannot hurt you, you switch to lethal magic curses..."

Before Ji Hao finished talking, and once Taisi took over the sand, an enormous pair of wings descended from the dense dark clouds in the sky. Next, tens of pairs of similar wings came down from the sky and started a fierce hurricane, bumping into the golden bridge.

Ji Hao raised his head and saw Kun Peng in the air, surrounded by tens of his offsprings, who were slightly smaller than him. Tens of Kun Peng birds flapped their wings, as sharp, violent gales roared over from all directions. Strong streams of spirit creature power condensed into nearly tangible dark gales, which even vibrated the sky. The golden bridge started shaking slightly.

Crack! The space ten-thousand-mile-radius around the golden bridge was forcibly crushed by Kun Peng and his offsprings.

Kun Peng’s hoarse yet high-pitched voice came from a distance away, "Ji Hao, why did you go to the water eye in Huai Water? Who told you about it? You will die in here today, without a doubt!"

Following Kun Peng’s screams, the group of Chaos monsters, who attacked Si Xi under Feather Mountain, showed up one after another. Around them, tens of more enormous Chaos monsters showed up as well.

Chapter 1185: Candle Dragon Light

"Kun Peng...You again!" Ji Hao raised his sword and roared, then threw a few magic pills into his mouth to replenish his consumed energy.

Just now, Ji Hao had a short fight against Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast, which almost consumed up all his energy. Facing Kun Peng and his offsprings, he dared not to be careless. Taking the few magic pills made by Priest Dachi himself, he sensed a warmth flowing to every corner of his body, bringing him back to his peak state, and actually an even better one.

"Marquis Yao Ji Hao, you have to die today!" Kun Peng covered the sky with his enormous body as he stared at Ji Hao and roared. A cold light shone in the sky, his pair of eyes illuminating the entire area like two small suns.

"I cannot let you tell anyone about the things in the water eye!" Kun Peng screamed shrilly, then yelled at his offsprings and the tens of Chaos monsters, "What’re you waiting for? Go! Smash this human kid!"

Pausing slightly, he laughed viciously and continued, "Save his heart for me. I like the warm hearts of human heroes the most."

Tens of Chaos monsters roared out together, especially the few who once fought Ji Hao under Feather Mountain; they looked almost happy when pouncing on Ji Hao. Tens of Kun Peng birds screamed shrilly, then their bodies shrank quickly and transformed into men with grim faces. They were wearing all kinds of armors and holding all kinds of weapons, unhurriedly approaching Ji Hao behind those Chaos monsters.

Ji Hao snorted coldly and sent up the Pan Gu bell, which released Chaos power and covered the entire golden bridge.

A puffing noise could then be heard. While those Chaos monsters

were still in over ten miles away from the golden bridge, Feng Xing had already pulled open his longbow and released a storm of arrows.

A heavy rain had been falling, as hundreds of differently sized water streams poured down from the sky. The moment Feng Xing released his arrows, those water streams blasted all of a sudden and turned into millions of thumb-sized water drops, darting everywhere. All the raindrops exploded into a dense watery mist, spreading in the air.

Soon, the dense watery mist suffused the air. Feng Xing's arrows flew through the air, causing eye-piercing swishing noises, but no one could see those arrows. In the following moment, thunderous howls were generated along with a strong scent of blood, drifting out from the mist.

The arrows Feng Xing used were the specially made 'Wolf tooth' arrows produced by Ji Hao. Those arrows were a nightmare, added with Feng Xing's longbow, which was the greatest treasure of Ten Sun Country, the bow of the ancient divine god, Yi. With this longbow, Yu killed countless powerful evil spirit creatures. Arrows darted down like a metal rain, instantly causing severe damage to those Chaos monsters.

Ms. Green Toad was ahead of the others, and she suffered the most. Tens of arrows penetrated her body in a row, and every arrow left a fist-sized hole on her body, letting blood gushing out. Even worse, one of those arrows punctured her throat, opening up a giant hole on her neck.

"He...Help!" Ms. Green Toad asked the other few Chaos monsters behind her for help with a hoarse, weak voice.

The other Chaos monsters also had holes on their bodies. At the time, they were all staring at Feng Xing's bow in shock. Their fading memories suddenly came back. Feng Xing's bow reminded them of that powerful, famous ancient god, the one who traveled

across the world and hunted powerful evil Chaos monsters and spirit creatures.

"That is...Yi's bow!" Tusk Sandfly King tremblingly screamed out, "That is the bow Yi used..."

Back in the ancient times, countless strong spirit creatures and Chaos monsters went on a rampage once, causing unbearable damages to the humankind. The ancient god Yi traveled across the world with his bow and killed incalculable Chaos monsters and evil spirit creatures. Yi's bow was stained by the blood and tears of countless Chaos monsters. To Tusk Sandfly King and all the other surviving Chaos monsters in Pan Gu world, the fame of Yi was more than enough to make them terror-stricken.

"Un-huh!" Feng Xing pulled his bow open, which frightened tens of Chaos monsters and stopped them from approaching. However, Kun Pen's tens of offsprings roared hoarsely and kept pouncing on Ji Hao and the others.

Yu Mu snorted deeply. As he patted on his round chubby belly and made his fat shake intensely, the Disease God Streamer slowly rose from his head, releasing dense gray mist.

Buzz! Waves of locusts surged out from the streamer, darting to Kun Peng's offsprings, as if a hundred-million hornets' nests were stirred up simultaneously.

Kun Peng floated in the sky. Seeing the Disease God streamer, he widely opened his giant pair of eyes and howled shrilly, "That's the Disease God streamer! The evilest thing in the world...Kids, retreat!"

Once he said the word 'retreat', the world was suddenly darkened.

All lights dimmed suddenly, and even the golden emitted from the golden bridge disappeared at this moment; no one could see anything anymore, not even Ji Hao with his erect eye.

A terrifying, prehistorical sense of power came from the sky as an ancient being showed up. No one could see it, but everyone could feel it.

In the next moment, the light came back. Within a million miles radius, the world was illuminated by a strange glow, which was clear and bright, able to even shine directly into people' souls. This magical light allowed Ji Hao and his friends to see every tiny water drop in the air, every grain of dust, and every slight impurity in their own souls.

A tens of thousands of miles long dragon head slowly reached out from a dark hole in the air. On the middle of the skinny, wrinkled dragon head, an enormous candle was burning with a dim light. The candle was burning to the end. The old candle dragon slowly opened his eyes, sighed deeply, and said, "Eh, so noisy, always so noisy...Can't you just let me have a good sleep? I've only slept for eight-thousand years, but now you woke me up again...You kids, you just don't care about the olds. You should be punished!"

"Candle Jiuyin!" Kun Peng looked at that old candle dragon and screamed, "You should stay asleep...Why did you wake up?"

"To kill!" Candle Jiuyin responded straightforwardly, then slowly opened his mouth. Streams of flame were released from a dazzling essence fire in his mouth, and descended from the sky along with a strange swooshing noise. Then, it softly and nimbly coiled on the bodies of those Chaos monsters and Kun Peng's offsprings like living beings.

Shrill howls came from those Chaos monsters and Kun Peng's offsprings. Instantaneously, these thin flame streams set their bodies ablaze and burned them into giant torches, darting all over the sky.

Kun Peng roared in rage. He curled up his body and dashed to Candle Jiuyin, seeming about to put up a desperate fight against that old candle dragon. But Kun Peng didn't notice a six-foot-tall

man standing on Candle Jiuyin's head. Seeing Kun Peng rush up, that man conveniently threw out a stone dagger.

That cyan-colored, mottled, and simply crafted stone dagger hacked on Kun Peng's head heavily, generating a puffing noise. Blood splashed everywhere as a half of Kun Peng's head was chopped off.

Chapter 1186: The Power of People

Things happened too fast, and no one managed to make any reaction.

Candle Jiuyin, the first candle dragon in the world, the ancestor of all candle dragons, and the totem worshipped by the Candle Dragon Clan, was a member of the alliance of human clans.

After the world was created, before the sun and the stars emerged, Candle Jiuyin was generated by nature with an essence fire in his mouth, illuminating the world.

Therefore, when Candle Jiuyin let the fire out of his mouth and burned the tens of offsprings of Kun Peng and Chaos monsters nearly to death, Ji Hao wasn't surprised at all. Candle Jiuyin was an ancient, legendary being, and that pre-world essence fire in his mouth was tremulously powerful. In mere terms of temperature and destructive power, the pre-world essence fire in Candle Jiuyin's mouth was even more terrifying than Ji Hao's essence sun fire.

Back in the prehistorical era, Candle Jiuyin was definitely a dreadful being at the top of the food chain. Normally, he would spend a lot of time in sleep, but once he woke up, he would hunt all over the world; Chaos monsters, evil creatures, even ghosts were his foods.

Back in the ancient times, creatures like Kun Peng's offsprings and these famous Chaos monsters were nothing but an appetizer of Candle Jiuyin. The fire breathed out by Candle Jiuyin almost burned their lives away, which was totally reasonable.

What shocked Ji Hao was the man standing on Candle Jiuyin's head. With a simply crafted stone dagger, he hacked a half of Kun Peng's head off.

Poor Kun Peng, his body was a million miles in radius now,

floating in the air like an enormous dark cloud; he looked like both fish and bird, and only his head was over ten miles in radius.

The stone dagger thrown out by that man was only about a foot long, and was obviously carved out of an ordinary stone. The dagger was nowhere near a masterpiece, as it was covered in bumps and hollows and scratches. No one would bother to bend down and pick up a dagger like this even if it were lying on the street.

Nevertheless, in Ji Hao's eye of Dao, this stone dagger looked completely different. It looked like a splendid golden-purple sun descending from the sky, with inexhaustible natural reward power surging out from it. A hundred miles around the dagger, all natural laws were cast away by the strong natural reward power, and all natural powers were suppressed by it.

Even Ji Hao's red sun primordial spirit was suppressed by the strong natural reward power as well. At the moment, he couldn't activate his power, not even a little bit. His one million inner spirit stars were dimmed down like cooling coals in stove ashes, lifeless and powerless.

His heart was still beating. Except for his physical strength, Ji Hao had lost all of his powers, temporarily.

That roughly crafted dagger with an indescribably strong power contained in it descended from the air and slantingly cut through Kun Peng's body. Ji Hao saw clearly that Kun Peng didn't even manage to dodge. He couldn't even activate his defensive treasures before a half of his head was cut off like a piece of tofu.

Torrents of blood mixed with brain fell from the sky. Kun Peng's shrill howls echoed to the clouds. Sharps sound waves spread out, raising fierce gusts of wind and dense clouds. The dark clouds in the sky were even shattered by Kun Peng's thunder-like howls.

A half of his enormous head was cut off and fell down from the sky, leaving a seventy-thousand miles long, forty-thousand miles

wide wound.

Kun Peng was enormous. Ji Hao stood a long distance away and twisted his neck as hard as he could, but he couldn't see the ends of that tremendous wound. What a colossal wound! The entire sky was turned red by the blood kept spraying out from Kun Peng's body, as if the sky were cut open.

Followed by an earth-shaking boom, Kun Peng's half a head fell on the water surface. His spirit blood spread along with the turbid waves. Countless reckless water-kind creatures dashed over from all directions, crazily devouring Kun Peng's blood, muscles and skin.

"Ah...Ah...Ah...I am dying!"

Kun Peng widely opened the remaining half of his mouth and screamed. Only one eye was left on his head now. He popped out that eye, looking at those water-kind creatures who had been fighting each other over his blood and flesh. In both anger and shame, he roared thunderously and incanted a spell.

Pop! Following his voice, the bodies of all water-kind creatures exploded in an area ten-million miles in radius,.

Kun Peng moved his eyeball with difficulty and looked at the man standing on Candle Jiuyin's head. Glancing at the stone dagger which had cut off a half of his head, he screamed out loud again hysterically, "Shennong! You little kid...How can you ever hurt me?!"

As one of the first batch of living creatures in Pan Gu world, Kun Peng had always been proud.

He wasn't as powerful as Candle Jiuyin, but he was only slightly weaker than Candle Jiuyin. In the past countless centuries, he had been cultivating himself severely in the North Sea; he believed that he had achieved a great progress, and by now, he was already a top-grade being in the world.

Shennong was a former human emperor indeed, but compared to Kun Peng, he was truly a little kid!

How many years had Shennong been cultivating himself for? But how many years had Kun Peng been doing that? Besides, this Shennong was only a clone, while Kun Peng was right here with his true body! The cultivation history of Kun Peng was a hundred times, even a thousand times longer than Shennong's. However, a clone of Shennong injured Kun Peng severely and momentarily. Was this even real?

"This is injustice!" Kun Peng shouted. A half a head of his was cut off, without a doubt, his brain was damaged seriously. As a result, Kun Peng could barely think at this moment. He stared at Shennong for quite a long time and finally shouted out these three words.

"Injustice?" Standing on Candle Jiuyin's head, Shennong responded with a strong voice, "How dare you mention 'justice' in front of me?"

Shennong raised his hand and let the dagger flew back into his hand, then pointed at Kun Peng and continued, "For your private ends, you raised the flood and hurt countless living creatures! Not only human beings, look, how many living creatures died because of you?!"

"Justice? If you want to talk about justice, who can give that to those poor creatures drowned in the flood?"

"Justice? If you ask me about justice, who can bring justice to those human beings who are still struggling and crying in the flood?"

"See, have you seen it? This is a vast water! How many dead bodies of human beings floated on the water? Have you seen those?"

"Can you hear it? All over the Midland, countless human beings

are crying, are cursing in despair!"

"Have you felt it? The endless hatred in the world, the hatred that comes from countess human beings! Billions of human beings want you to die!" Shennong growled resonantly, "I gathered the faith power of all human beings; I cut you with this stone dagger that I dug herbs with back then. Under my dagger... is justice!"

‘Under my dagger is justice’!

Ji Hao almost applauded for this, but in the following moment, Shennong launched another fierce hack.

Chapter 1187: Take Kun Peng Down

Kun Peng screamed and tilted his enormous body. The blood rain falling from the sky grew even heavier.

A wing of his was cut off entirely, leaving another scary wound on his body. All his ribs on that side were cut through, exposing his squirming internal organs. Kun Peng's screams were indescribably unpleasant to hear, following which, his body squirmed and quickly transformed into his human shape.

A big half of his forehead was gone, and so were his right shoulder and right arm. A large slash was left on his right chest, through which, one could even see his heart, liver, and lungs.

A strong blood-red beam darted out of his body and transformed into a thick light screen, which wrapped him up. Along with a sizzling noise, Kun Peng cracked the space while howling and screaming, attempting to escape.

"You've hurt so many living beings, but you want to leave?" Shennong stared at Kun Peng, gripped the stone dagger with his right hand, and launched another fierce hack. "Kun Peng, today, I will destroy you and all of your kind! From this day on, no Kun Peng in Pan Gu world!"

In Ji Hao's eye of Dao, a golden-purple light curtain descended from the sky and split the world into two. Kun Peng was right below this light curtain. From the light curtain, the cries of countless human beings could be heard; the strong sound wave transformed into a gray-white sharp beam of light and landed on Kun Peng's body.

The blood-red light screen around Kun Peng was shattered immediately. Facing the grey-white light beam, that defensive blood-red light failed to deliver any effect. As Shennong said, every strike launched by him gathered the endless hatred of all human beings who died, were injured, fell ill, and lost their homes in the

flood. The hatred of billions and billions of human beings were gathered together, a power that could be well imagined.

Except for the ones protected by the strongest pre-world spirit power, or an immeasurably great natural reward power, who could possibly survive a strike like this?

Kun Peng's Hetu and Luoshu had run away from Kun Peng. For all Kun Peng's life, he had been doing all kinds of evil, instead of anything kind. Therefore, he had no natural reward power at all, but karma; the power of karma made this strike even stronger.

Under the gray-white light, Kun Peng's body fell apart. The golden-purple light generated by the natural reward power crushed on his body. Ji Hao heard a shrill series of screams, as Kun Peng's soul struggled in the air. It had transformed into a dark-cloud-like shadow, trembling and shrinking in the dazzling golden-purple light.

Kun Peng's soul was filled with all kinds of negative power, and was bone-piercingly cold, while the natural reward power was strong, splendid, and warm. It could naturally destroy all kinds of evil powers. In this respect, the natural reward power was even stronger than the essence sun fire.

Ji Hao watched dense clouds of black smoke rise from Kun Peng's body, and saw his soul shrinking speedily. After around ten breaths, that hundred thousand miles wide, dark-cloud-like soul of Kun Peng had shrunk to the size of a bowl, and had turned gray and translucent.

Afterward, a sigh came from a long distance away. "Shennong, Kun Peng is destined to be one of us. He has already been punished, so many of his offsprings have died. If you insist on perishing his soul, I'd say you're going too far!"

"Give his soul to me. I will guide him well, and he will never come out to do anything wrong ever again!"

A brightly glowing, multicolored lotus gradually emerged in the sky, right under Kun Peng's dying soul. A colorful light shone from the lotus, which softly wrapped around Kun Peng's soul.

An indescribably sad howl came out from Kun Peng's soul, then the gray and translucent soul suddenly turned multicolored, like a colored glaze. A strange spirit power was released from his soul, from which, Ji Hao sensed an extremely strong despair and fear.

Before Kun Peng could give another howl, his soul began growing speedily. Within a couple of breaths, Kun Peng's soul became as strong as a living human being. However, that soul was still filled with fear. The soul turned multicolored and transparent, glowing beautifully. It looked like a statue carved out of colored glaze.

"Priest Hua, why did you interfere in this internal affair of our humankind? Are you going to breach the agreement you signed with the others on top of the Sky Pillar back then?" said Shennong with a strong, rumbling voice.

Priest Hua slowly showed his figure in the midair. Smilingly, he pointed at Kun Peng and said gently, "Kun Peng is destined to be one of us...How can I ever interfere internal affairs of the humankind? I've been studying the great Dao, then I suddenly understood the meaning of 'mercy'. If Kun Peng Family is destroyed like this, it would be too 'cruel'. Out of compassion, I saved Kun Peng. I will restrain him in the future, and he will never be able to hurt anything anymore. This is a kind, merciful thing to do."

Shennong gripped the stone danger and stared at Priest Hua with sparkling eyes.

Priest Hua smiled, then nodded to Kun Peng and said, "Kun Peng, do you remember what I said to you back then in the North Sea? Sooner or later, you will understand the meaning of 'mercy', and then, you will willingly come under my guidance."

Kun Peng seemed to be suffering an inner struggle. He gritted his

teeth and glanced at Shennong and his dagger, then turned around and looked at Priest Hua for a while. At last, he sighed deeply, kneeled to Priest Hua, and said, "Dear Shifu, I am your disciple, Kun Peng. Sadly, my body is destroyed. I'm afraid that I won't be able to dedicate too much to you, dear Shifu."

"Your body is destroyed? I don't think so."

Priest Hua grinningly took out eighteen fist-sized, colorful lotus seeds from his sleeve, then waved his hand towards the water surface. Following his move, torrents of blood that belonged to Kun Peng rose into the sky.

The multicolored glow released by Priest Hua coiled around that blood, right after which, the slightly dark blood suddenly turned vividly and purely red. Next, those lotus seeds in Priest Hua's hands transformed into a multicolored, glowing mist, and merged with the blood. In the air, a thousand-miles-wide sphere of blood spun swiftly, slowly turning multicolored.

"Rise!" Priest Hua shouted resonantly while pointing at the blood sphere. Along with his voice, this enormous multicolored blood sphere shrank and turned into a human body that looked exactly like Kun Peng, releasing a strong sense of power.

"Merge!" Before Kun Peng said a word, Priest Hua raised his hands, and Kun Peng's soul merged with the new body.

Shennong tightened his grip on the dagger, seeming to attack again. However, he didn't do it at last.

Kun Peng slowly opened his eyes. Those eyes were dazzled with a dim light. Abruptly, he gave a thunderous roar and released an overwhelming power. Instantly, raging waves were raised a million miles radius around him, roaring into the sky like giant dragons.

Priest Hua smiled, then turned around and looked at Ji Hao in an unfriendly way.

"Marquis Yao Ji Hao, you killed eight of my disciples. How will you explain that?"

Chapter 1188: Force Back

"Not just the eight." Ji Hao looked at Priest Hua, calmly took two steps forwards, and said, "I've also killed Yuan Sheng, cast Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast away...Hmm, their weapons were also accidentally broken by me."

Priest Hua's face twitched. The smile on his face faded right away.

"You! Good for you!" Priest Hua took a deep breath and said blandly, "Not a single young person can give me such a headache. Ji Hao, if you're willing to follow my guidance..."

Ji Hao interrupted him and said with a faint fake smile, "Aren't you afraid that my Shifu might hack you into pieces?"

Priest Hua's facial expression changed slightly, as he looked at Ji Hao in a complicated way. He slowly nodded and said, "Good, Good, Good!"

After saying 'good' three times, Priest Hua slowly raised his right hand and swung down towards Ji Hao. An aroma spread out, along with a strong warmth. A strange light emerged in the air, and even dimmed the pre-world essence fire in Candle Jiuyin's mouth.

A hazy and golden handprint flew out from Priest Hua's hand, then instantly transformed into a three-hundred-meters-wide hand, descending on Ji Hao. Once the golden hand appeared, the air around Ji Hao was suddenly frozen, and even the time seemed to stop.

Ji Hao gave a bright growl and forcibly activated the golden bridge, releasing a clear light that wrapped up him and everyone behind him.They swiftly moved in the air, leaving a long beam of light in the sky. The space rippled, as the golden bridge broke layers of mysterious space seals, darting out of the striking range of the golden hand.

"The heaven and earth golden bridge, such a supreme treasure is in your hand... No wonder the eight wind motionless formation failed to stop you." said Priest Hua angrily, "But, you can't activate even one ten-thousandth of this golden bridge's power. Yet, Yu Yu still give this supreme treasure to you...This is..."

With fiercely glowing eyes, Priest Hua suddenly changed his hand motion, preparing to cast a stronger sealing spell to trap Ji Hao.

He saw it clearly. Ji Hao was indeed able to activate the power of the golden bridge, but he was way too weak at the stage. He could only activate some basic functions of the golden bridge, but could never fully release the power of the golden bridge. The golden bridge was a supreme treasure that came from the Chaos. Not to mention Ji Hao, even Priest Hua dared not to guarantee that he could release all the power of the golden bridge!

How could such a great treasure fall in Ji Hao's hands? It should belong to him, Priest Hua! Such a supreme treasure could even serve as the greatest treasure of a sect, protecting the fortune of the entire sect. But, how could Ji Hao swagger through the streets with it?

Gritting his teeth, Priest Hua changed his hand motion again. He had already launched a merciless, brutal strike.

The space around Ji Hao's body darkened suddenly. In the boundless darkness, nothing but a few dim stars were sparkling.

Those stars were white and misty, as pale as the eyeballs of a dead man, looking so creepy.

A strange atmosphere existed in the darkness, which made Ji Hao feel uncomfortable, as if his heart were broken. Many weird emotions came out from the deepest area of his soul, which made him weak and emotional. He felt that he needed to burst into a rage of tears to ease these bad feelings. At the moment, he even wanted to give up everything and sink into this strange

atmosphere forever.

Ji Hao slightly trembled. His red sun primordial spirit was darkened, almost falling apart.

Man Man's emotion was strong and straightforward. She suddenly grabbed Ji Hao's arm and cried out loud, letting two scorching hot streams of tears fly out of her eyes. "O...I feel so bad, I'm so sad...But why I'm I crying? My Abba said that I can never cry!"

Shaosi, Taisi, Feng Xing, Yu Mu, and Yuan Li all quivered slightly, while their saddest memories flashed across their minds. Their eyes all turned red, as they were choked up by tears, which almost spurted out of their eyes.

At the moment, except for Ji Hao, all the others felt softened and powerless. None of them could activate any of their powers anymore.

Before the golden bridge, raging fires and strong gales burst simultaneously. Priest Hua didn't only launch soul attacks at Ji Hao and his friends, he had also forcibly broken the space around the golden bridge and brought the Chaos to this area. Destructive powers came from all directions, which made the clear light released from the golden bridge shake ceaselessly, and slowed the golden bridge down.

As Priest Hua said, Ji Hao could never fully release the power of the golden bridge. If the one controlling the golden bridge right now was Po, Gui Ling, or other senior disciples of Yu Yu, with their powers, they could still flee with the golden bridge, even when facing Priest Hua's attacks.

If Yu Yu were controlling the golden bridge by himself, with the power of the golden bridge, he could easily go through Priest Hua's seals and even destroy all these seals.

But to Ji Hao, the surrounding pressure was way too strong, and

he could only remain undefeated in the raging fire and gale, but couldn't run away.

Seeing Ji Hao was about to lose to Priest Hua, a long sigh came from a distance away. "Priest Hua, how shameless you are! Bullying young human beings right in front of us? Don't blame me for teaching you a lesson today!"

It was Shennong who growled out while launching another strike.

A golden-purple light flashed across the stone dagger. All of a sudden, the coarse stone dagger turned splendidly glowing. Gripping the dagger, Shennong swung his arm down. Priest Hua's face was instantly tightened. He raised his head and yelled, "Shennong, do you think that I dare not to kill you?"

A colorful lotus rose from Priest Hua's had, trying to protect himself from this strike of Shennong. However, as the sharp beam of dagger light flashed across the sky, the colorful lotus was cut into two. The dagger light wasn't faded yet; it brushed against Priest Hua's head and broke his bun!

Before Priest Hua could say anything, a dazzling, stunning beam of sword light darted over from a long distance away. This sword hack was definitely amazing. It flashed across tens of millions of miles, and made the entire world dim and colorless.

Priest Hua gave a raging growl. He didn't have the time to seal Ji Hao anymore. Instead, he pointed his fingers forward. Following his moves, eighteen lotuses bloomed around him. When every lotus bloomed, hazy images of mountains and rivers would show faintly; every single lotus seemed to be a tiny independent world.

The sword light flashed over and crushed all eighteen lotuses, generating a series of cracking noise.

Priest Hua dodged and waved his broad sleeve. Pop! His sleeve was shattered by the sword light, turning into shreds of fluttering

rag.

Growling furiously with a grim face, Priest Hua grabbed Kun Peng and darted straightaway, instantaneously disappearing without a trace.

Chapter 1189: Destroy Thoroughly

Beyond the dark clouds, above the sky, the starlight illuminated the vast space.

Nine men stood in the air, each with a tall hat. Floating above their heads were nine enormous dense clouds of the natural reward power. Upon each cloud was a natural star. The nine stars were dazzlingly brightly, much brighter than the others stars in the sky.

Behind one of the nine men, a sword was faintly visible. Countless beams of sword light gathered into an enormous sharp sword, then split up into countless smaller sword silhouettes, hovering around that man. In the cloud above this man’s head, countless silhouettes of strong warriors had been sparkling, while faintly audible roars were coming from the cloud.

Among the nine men, the power vibration released from the one surrounded by sword silhouettes was the strongest and sharpest.

They lowered their heads, looking at Priest Hua fleeing away with Kun Peng, and sneered simultaneously.

"This Priest Hua was indeed cunning. He never took a beating himself! Just now, if he launched a counterattack against my sword power, I would surely have made him suffer. Even if I have to lose a half of my natural reward power, I would destroy him." said the man surrounded by sword silhouettes with a deep and angry voice.

"Never mind. Priest Hua is a powerful one. We are protected by the great natural reward power, so he surely dared not to risk losing his fortune to fight us face to face. But seriously, even if we join hands, we could only injure him, but could never truly kill him." said Suiren, who was surrounded by a faint flame. "For now, let him do whatever he wants. As long as young human beings work hard, more and more strong ones will naturally emerge

among them...In the future, once our humankind is powerful enough, we will surely destroy him and everyone related to him, flattening his sect." continued Suren with a bland tone.

The other eight men nodded. With a cold voice, the one surrounded by sword silhouettes said, "Alright...I just couldn't bear watching him bully young human beings. I understand, none of us can truly defeat him. Let's work."

Breathing deeply, this man slowly raised his right hand. Around him, countless sword silhouettes screamed shrilly, while beams of sword light merged together and gathered on his right arm. That arm of his suddenly transformed into a million-miles-long, enormous sword, releasing a terrifying sword power.

"Let's work!" said Suiren slowly, "We all have our own duties, and can't leave those places for long. We only have one chance to do this. If it's delayed...We shall leave it to Emperor Shun and the other kids!"

Dreadful streams of power were released from Suiren and the others. All of a sudden, the nine stars above their heads burst with dazzling lights, sending torrents of star power into their bodies like waterfalls, along with deafening, rumbling noises.

The nine men were around three-meters tall, but as the star power flowed into their bodies, their bodies began expanding. Within a blink of an eye, they became thousands of meters tall, coiled by dragon-like streams of starlight. Occasionally, starlight streams bumped into each other and quaked the space.

In the sky, three to four thousand stars were activated by their star powers. Gradually, those stars began glowing brighter and brighter. Within a twinkling of an eye, the lights emitted by those stars turned a hundred times brighter than ever.

Multicolored streams of starlight reached through the space, merging with the nine stars upon the nine clouds, above the heads of the nine men.

The nine stars rose, and instantly expanded to tens of thousands of miles in radius, from the size of a water tank. The nine enormous stars moved in the sky and gradually formed a spoon shape, exactly like the seven stars in the Big Dipper and the North Star; the ninth enormous star slowly hovered around the North Star, like its companion star.

Once the nine stars found their own positions, all natural stars in the north were agitated. Along with the first three to four thousand stars, countless more stars lighted up and poured streams of starlight into the nine stars. In the meanwhile, the bodies of the nine men expanded once again speedily. At last, they all reached around five-hundred-thousand meters in height.

Terrifying star power spread out wave by wave, which made the entire Midland shake slightly.

If the Sky Pillar still existed, no matter how much these natural stars changed, the Midland would stay unmoved. However, the Sky Pillar had collapsed. A small half of it was taken away by Priest Qing Wei, while the rest was taken by Ji Hao and made into the Pan Gu bell. Without the Sky Pillar, Midland was strongly affected by those stars. At first, the Midland had only been slightly quaking, but soon, an intense earthquake was started.

Ji Hao was standing on the golden bridge, surrounded by a clear light. He could indeed stand still, yet things around him suddenly turned grisly.

Sharp dark clouds swooshed across the sky like steel blades. Strong gusts of wind swept across the air, roaring like ghosts. Tens of thousands of meters tall waves were raised from the water. The natural powers were all agitated, generating countless thunderbolts; raindrops-like thunder-flames descended from the sky, blasting and filling the sky up with dazzling light and flames.

A terrifying sense of power could be sensed from the sky. That power was horrific, seeming to be great enough to control and

destroy everything. Under this power, Ji Hao felt his body was so heavy that he was nearly pressed down to the ground. He hurriedly activated the Pan Gu bell and released Chaos power streams to shield himself and people behind him. Afterward, he finally, barely kept his feet.

Sky-shaking rumbling noises came from the sky. Nine colorful starlight streams poured down from the highest sky, far away from each other, and fiercely pierced into nine areas in Midland.

Ji Hao clearly saw a ten-thousand-miles-wide torrent of starlight drill into the water eye in Huai Water!

Midland was quaking intensively, while the nine starlight streams violently struck into the nine water eyes in the four great rivers. A million miles in radius around each water eye, all living beings were turned into ashes, while the hundreds of miles deep water eye was destroyed by the starlight. Inside those water eyes, everything was immediately turned into nothingness, including those dark souls, the black jade altar in the deepest areas of each water eye, and those countless Yu,

Giant waves were raised, roaringly striking in all directions. Walls of white water pushed out for over a million miles before they finally, slowly quieted down.

At the moment, all living creatures in Midland were staring at the sky in a soul-deep shock, with the dazzling nine starlight streams lingering in their eyes for a long, long while.

All human being had been silently imagining what would happen if this strike landed on their own bodies.

Priest Hua had already fled to a long distance away with Kun Peng. With a fierce look, he looked where the nine starlight streams landed. He locked his hands together before his chest, then sneered and said, "Are you making a show of your power? Human beings...I know exactly how powerful you are...No one can stop my brother and me from pursuing our great Dao, no one! No

one can stop us!"

"Gong Gong! Do you think you'll be safe as long as you hide in the heaven forever? Taste my sword!" From high up in the sky, a strong growl suddenly burst.

A golden sword light swept across millions of miles, striking down towards the heaven, which was above the Midland.

Chapter 1190: The Sadness of Gong Gong

High up in the air, the nine enormous stars lighted up. Afterward, all stars dazzled.

Even the dark clouds in the sky could no longer stop the eternal light of these stars. The dense, dark clouds seemed to become transparent thin flakes, allowing the splendid starlight to shine on the earth. In that very moment, not even a single ripple existed on the vast water in Midland.

The sky and the earth shared the same color; the water surface was like a mirror, while that tremendous golden sword light struck down from the sky. Nine raging-dragon-like starlight streams followed closely after the golden light, after which were streams of starlight released by all the stars in the sky, falling like a storm of dazzling arrows.

In the air, the heaven emerged from glowing mists and clouds.

Muffled battle drums and bells resounded through the sky, while layers of seven-colored clouds flew out from the heaven, floating upon those palaces in the heaven. All human beings in Midland raised their heads, looking at the sky. Except for the few human leaders, this was the first time for all the others to see the legendary heaven.

Ji Hao gave a resonant roar. The golden bridge quaked slightly, then carried Ji Hao and his friends, dashing swiftly to the heaven. Did a former human emperor launch his move? Judging by this amazing sword power, it should be that legendary one, right?"

Ji Hao didn’t want to miss anything that was going to happen next. Therefore, he rushed up as fast as he could.

Candle Jiuyin and Shennong raised their heads as well. Candle Jiuyin murmured something, then shut his giant mouth. The essence fire in his mouth silently dimmed down, and the world

was darkened for a moment. When the light came back, Candle Jiuyin had already reached the gateway of the heaven with Shennong.

This legendary old creature was even faster than the golden bridge under Ji Hao's control. He was indeed a horrific being, who once illuminated the whole world with the pre-world essence sun fire in his mouth. His power was way beyond Ji Hao's imagination.

When Ji Hao was still on his way, the golden sword light struck straight on the heaven.

Thousands of layers of seven-colored cloud were shattered, and so was the sword light. The sword light turned into countless hundreds of meters long beams, dazzling all over the sky as it generated raging fires and thunderbolts. Jade bricks and golden roof tiles of those palaces in the haven were vibrated rumblingly. Some tall buildings were shaking violently, and had tiles falling off, shattering into sparkling jade pieces.

The nine fierce starlight streams came after the sword light. Simultaneously, the nine tens of thousands of miles wide starlight streams struck on the heaven, and caused an ear-piercing sizzling noise, as if millions of tons of melted iron were poured into ice. The massive explosion crushed the space above the heaven and disturbed all natural powers, seeming to even reverse time and bring the world back into the Chaos.

Before the nine starlight streams faded, waves of starlight fell down. Every single stream of starlight was as great as a strike launched by ten peak-level Divine Magus joint-handedly. Countless starlight streams landed on the heaven together, shaking the heaven violently. Even the enormous dense cloud which had been holding the entire heaven steadily was shaken, glowing with a dazzling light.

This strike seemed like a random attack launched by a former human emperor to vent his anger, but in fact, it had activated the

powers of all the stars in the north, under the control of the Big Dipper. Without star kings, those stars could not release all of their powers. However, the number of these stars was way too huge, and the strike launched with the powers of millions and millions of stars still brought a strong impact to the heaven.

Gasping quickly, Ji Hao rushed to the gateway of the heaven. He watched tens of thousands of starlight streams strike on the gate of the heaven, which was glowing with a multicolored light. Following a thunderous bang, the gateway was flattened, and even a small half of the gate of the heaven was torn down!

The gateway...And the gate of the heaven...were broken by those starlights?!

"Beautiful, spectacular!" Ji Hao sighed in shock. Behind him, the eyes of Man Man, Shaosi and the others almost flew out from their faces. Ever since the beginning of the world, the heaven was never harmed, not even by a little bit. But right now, its gate was broken!

Starlight faded, as dark clouds covered the sky once again.

Smoke above the heaven drifted away, exposing the heaven, which was now in a mess. Ji Hao clearly saw at least a thousand palaces in the heaven crushed by starlights; near some palaces occupied by water-kind spirit creatures, messy bloodstains could be seen.

The heaven was magnificent and glorious, but now, it was broken, damaged, like a weak girl who was trodden upon by a hundred wild beasts in turns. No matter how one looked at it, the heaven now looked sad and bleak.

"How miserable!" Ji Hao sighed again.

Candle Jiuyin had already transformed into his human shape, an elderly man in a black robe. With a humpback and badly wrinkled face, he stood beside Shennong. Hearing Ji Hao, he sighed as well, and slowly began talking.

"Indeed, how miserable. The heaven was the core of this world. Protected by the heaven and earth great formation, not even all the stars in the world together could ever hurt it."

"However, Buzhou Mountain, the Sky Pillar, the base of the heaven, was uprooted. The heaven is not steady anymore. Even worse, the Divine Pivot, the core of the heaven and earth great formation, was looted away. The Divine Pivot, that was the heart of the heaven and earth great formation. Without it, the great formation has become a soul-less dead thing, extremely inconvenient to control."

While smirking, Candle Jiuyin continued, "Does the heaven still have one percent of its power remaining?"

Ji Hao blinked his eyes and remained silent.

He thought of the last time when he sneaked into the heaven to steal the breathing earth. Priest Dachi cast a powerful magic and created three priests directly from the tower he lent to Po, then took the entire Divine Pivot away.

Back Then, Ji Hao was wondering why Priest Dachi would do that. But today, he had the answer. Without the Divine Pivot, the heaven and earth great formation was no longer working well, and it was not even one percent as powerful as before!

So easily, Priest Dachi set such a large trap for Gong Gong.

What could Ji Hao say? Priest Dachi was indeed a magically powerful being. Except for this, what else could Ji Hao say?

Facing Candle Jiuyin's weird gaze, Ji Hao calmly stood on the golden bridge. All of a sudden, he took a deep breath and burst with a great growl.

"Gong Gong! Your father, your father's father, and your father's father's father, and your over twenty generations of ancestors, were all crushed!"

"We killed your father, this is completely irreconcilable, but

we’ve also killed so many of your ancestors!"

"If you’re a man, come out and fight the few great men above your head!"

"You dare to do that, don’t you? You’re not a coward, are you? Are you still a man?"

A dark cloud rose from the heaven. Treading on two black dragons, Gong Gong glared at Ji Hao with a purely dark face. Suddenly, a stream of blood spurted out from Gong Gong’s mouth.

"Emperor Xuanyuan! I will kill you!"

Chapter 1191: Gong Gong Cowered

"Alright!"

A bright and strong voice came from the sky, while a man with a tall hat descended, coiled in sharp sword power streams and having his hands behind his back. Straight as a sword, this man stood right in front of Gong Gong.

A dense cloud floated upon this man's head, within which, the hazy faces of countless human warriors could be seen. Resonant, passionate, earth-quaking roars could be heard from them. The man with a tall hat did nothing but stand still, hands behind his back. Yet, a strong power vibration could already be sensed from everywhere, which made everyone who saw him feel hard to breathe.

"Fiercer and fiercer," said Shennong with a chuckle.

"Slay him!" Candle Jiuyin's voice sounded eviler and eviler, "I'm old, and I have poor sleep. Finally, I got a nice dream, but that lasted for only thousands of years before you kids woke me up... Cut him now, then I can go home. It's not too late to continue my sweet dream."

Ji Hao stood aside and remained silent, squinting at Candle Jiuyin.

'You have slept for thousands of years, yet you complain about your poor sleep? And you want to go home and continue that sleep of yours as soon as possible...How much do you love sleeping?' wondered Ji Hao.

"Gong Gong, you want to kill me, don't you? I'm here now!" Sword power streams rose from around Emperor Xuanyuan's body and transformed into tens of thousands of golden dragons, roaring all over the sky. Emperor Xuanyuan held his hands behind his back, while staring at Gong Gong with a pair of dagger-sharp eyes,

which were dazzling with a golden light as he said, "Come, kill me!"

"Woo-Ha!" Followed by thunderous roars, countless human warriors emerged behind Emperor Xuanyuan. The bodies of these warriors were transparent, all covered in a faint layer of purple-golden light of the natural reward. They were wearing heavy armors, holding long spears, and stood side by side, with their eyes wrathfully fixed on Gong Gong's face.

Around a hundred thousand translucent human warriors appeared behind Emperor Xuanyuan, but the intent of killing released from them was even stronger than the killing intent from an army of millions.

"These are?" Ji Hao took a few steps forward, stood beside Shennong, and asked carefully.

"Back then, Emperor Xuanyuan fought Chiyou. Millions and millions of warriors under his command fell on the battlefield. Most of those warriors reincarnated and started their new lives, but a hundred and eight thousand warriors stayed. They swore to follow Emperor Xuanyuan till the end of their souls. Therefore, these warriors became warrior spirits, following him forever." said Shennong slowly. "As long as Emperor Xuanyuan stays alive, these warrior spirits will never die. When Emperor Xuanyuan dies, these warrior spirits will perish. Among all mentionable human beings, only Emperor Xuanyuan can create a fabulous legend."

Ji Hao's eye corners twitched. 'Which means, Emperor Xuanyuan has an army that will never die?' thought Ji Hao.

Subconsciously, Ji Hao reached his spirit power to those warrior spirits behind Emperor Xuanyuan. In surprise, Ji Hao found out that even the weakest one among them was at the level of peak Divine Magus, while the most powerful few were definitely beyond the level of Divine Magi.

What a terrifying army!

But of course, they existed in the world as spirits, without blood and flesh. This meant they could only release a half of their powers at most. However, even half of their powers made them seriously terrifying — Because they were indestructible!

Ji Hao stared at those warrior spirits behind Emperor Xuanyuan.

Obviously, Emperor Xuanyuan wasn’t good at forging weapons for spirits. The armors worn by these warrior spirits and the long spears held in their hands were all generated by their own powers, instead of real tangible pieces. Therefore, those armors and spears had limited powers. Ji Hao remembered that Po had taught him some weapon-forging skills, especially for spirits. If these warrior spirits could have armors customized especially for them, and weapons that fit their own power natures, Ji Hao couldn’t even imagine how powerful they would become. Perhaps, they would be able to give full play to their powers.

"Gong Gong, don’t you want to kill me?" Emperor Xuanyuan stood in midair and said with an especially strong and bright voice, that sounded like clangs of metals and even brought Gong Gong a sharp ear pain. "I am right here, waiting for you!"

Gong Gong trod on two black dragons, gripping two dark serpents in his hands. Coiled in dark ice and dark waves, he hesitatingly looked at Emperor Xuanyuan. He was by the edge of the heaven and earth great formation, surrounded by seven-colored clouds and mist. This meant that if Emperor Xuanyuan took the initiative to attack, he would have to fight against the heaven and earth great formation.

"You activated the stars in the north to attack the heaven. Back in the ancient time, you had already violated the divine law." Hesitating for quite a while, Gong Gong finally said such a sentence.

A faint mist covered Emperor Xuanyuan’s face, disabling the others from seeing the changes of his facial expression. However,

Ji Hao clearly sensed that, under the faint mist, Emperor Xuanyuan's face had twisted badly.

"Gong, Gong, you...Such a coward!" said Emperor Xuanyuan word by word.

Ji Hao, Shennong, Candle Jiuyin showed the whites of their eyes in speechlessness simultaneously. Gong Gong managed to say nothing but a useless sentence like this after such a long hesitation. Without a doubt, some strong words were brewing in Emperor Xuanyuan's mind too. But because of his identity, Emperor Xuanyuan couldn't just curse out to Gong Gong.

Hearing the word 'coward', Gong Gong's face turned dark.

Pondering for a while, Gong Gong took a glance at the heaven, which was now in a great mess, slowly nodded and said, "Emperor Xuanyuan, you activated the stars in the north...Such a great, supernatural thing, how many more times can you do that? Do not think that you can now control all the stars in the north to do whatever you want only because you have absorbed the Big Dipper and the North Star. I assume you have paid a good price for it this time, haven't you?"

Shennong, Emperor Xuanyuand, and the other eight men in the higher sky stayed silent.

Gong Gong smiled faintly and continued, "You destroyed the clones of my ancestors...In the future, I will make you pay for this. I have a big picture in my heart. Surely, I won't ruin the great plan for small things like this."

"Gong Gong, are you saying that you've decided to drop your dignity and be a true coward?" Hearing Gong Gong, Ji Hao felt that things were not going good. Therefore, he hurriedly shouted out.

"In peaceful days, it was harmless to fight over things like dignity. But now, the great plan matters the most, and I will not waste any more time on it." Gong Gong smilingly turned around

and glanced at Ji Hao, then said blandly, "If you still have any spare energy, just attack as hard as you want. I will not be able to keep you company."

Snorting coldly, Gong Gong trod on the two black dragons and descended quickly while growling, "Fully activate the heaven and earth great formation! No more mistakes! From now on, the great formation will remain activated. Add ten times more people to control each part of the great formation. Anyone who dares to make any mistake will be executed!"

Dark Clouds roared across the sky. A heavy rain fell from the heaven, mixed with countless thick water streams, pouring straight down.

Ji Hao and the others stood outside the heaven and watched the seven-colored clouds and mist around the heaven suddenly grow much denser. They all remained silent.

A long while later, Emperor Xuanyuan suddenly burst with a great growl, "We consume our natural reward power to gather the power of all stars in the north. We still have two full attacks to make!"

Before Emperor Xuanyuan finished, a clear and bright voice came from a distance away, "Forget it. We have something more important to do."

Chapter 1192: Yu Ancestor's Plan

Gong Gong was scared back to the heaven. Emperor Xuanyuan gave a resonant roar, then flashed into the dark clouds and disappeared.

Shennong glanced at Ji Hao, slowly nodded, and said, "Good children, you are all good children...Facing the disaster, remember that you are human beings. Fight hard, and be careful. We... have our own missions to accomplish."

Turning around and looking at the north, Shennong continued in a deep voice, "We might fail, but we have to try. We can't take too much time, and we can only try our best. Ji Hao, go tell Emperor Shun to be more careful about his flood-control mission."

Shouting deeply, Shennong and Candle Jiuyin both transformed into bright light streams and darted away in a blink of an eye.

Ji Hao looked at the direction that Shennong was facing. That was the location of Liang Zhu City, the city of the non-humankind. 'Even these former human emperors have to join hands to accomplish that mission...Are they going to destroy the twelve portals which connect Pan Gu world with the twelve water worlds?' Ji Hao wondered silently.

'Hopefully, they will succeed, and the non-humankind will not try to stop them.'

Ji Hao murmured to himself for a while, then cast a glance at the collapsed gate of the heaven. Intentionally, he laughed out loud, then activated the golden bridge and left with the others. Not long after he left, a group of water-kind spirit creatures rushed out of the heaven, wielding their weapons and cursing Ji Hao. They attempted to do something to Ji Hao, but how could they possibly catch up with him?

The seven-colored mist coiled, as long streaks of rainbows shone

across the sky. The heaven and earth great formation was unpredictably magical. After Gong Gong ordered his people to fully activate the great formation, the fragments of those collapsed palaces in the heaven flew up and merged back together within a splendid, sparkling glow. Soon, all buildings in the heaven were fixed.

In a magnificent great palace, Gong Gong stood in the middle of the great hall with a sulky face, looking at Wuzhi Qi, who was covered in blood.

Wuzhi Qi sat on the ground, breathing loudly while helplessly looking at Gong Gong as he said, "It happened too fast, I didn't see it coming. Those human beings launched that deadly strike so suddenly. The clones of nine former human emperors, those clones were built with their natural reward powers...They launched the strike together. If I didn't run so fast, I would have turned into ashes along with the Huai water eye."

While speaking, Wuzhi Qi coughed out large clots of blood. Coughing intensely for a while, he began breathing deeply. Then, rapidly flowing streams of watery mist coiled around his body and covered him up with a deep blue light.

Gong Gong looked at Wuzhi Qi and finally restrained the rage in his heart.

Earlier, Gong Gong accepted the message from Yu Ancestor. Through the message, Yu Ancestor informed Gong Gong that the scouts of the humankind sneaked into the Huai water eye, and had already discovered the altar and the three dragon coffins in the water eye. Hurriedly, Gong Gong sent his very capable senior minister, Wuzhi Qi, to handle this. Additionally, he also sent Kun Peng and a large group of powerful ones to follow Wuzhi Qi to the water eye.

As a result, all those powerful ones brought out by Kun Peng were dead, while Kun Peng himself went missing, with his life

uncertain. In the nine water eyes, in the four great rivers, those altars and coffins which had cost Gong Gong some solid efforts, were all destroyed by the strike launched by the nine former human emperors.

Those overwhelming torrents of starlights struck down from the sky. Enormous, violent waves rose when the water eyes were destroyed; that world-destroying, dreadful power...Thinking of what he saw in the heaven, Gong Gong couldn't help but quiver with the lingering fear.

Shennong, Xuanyuan, these ancient human emperors hadn't shown their faces for a very, very long period of time. Perhaps, people in the world had long forgotten their illustrious accomplishments. But when human beings were facing a disaster, these former emperors launched such a destructive strike.

Thinking of the bloodcurdling power contained in those starlight torrents, Gong Gong glanced at Wuzhi Qi, nodded slowly, and said, "Indeed, that was not your fault...Even if I were there myself...I'm afraid..."

Gong Gong seemed to speak but stopped on second thought, while Wuzhi Qi sighed in relief and began talking with a bitter face, "Yuan Sheng, my poor boy, he died so miserably. Even his soul perished...Nothing left, not even a little bit of him remained... I sure have many children, but not all of them are capable...I was counting on Yuan Sheng to take over my position as the Huai Water God!"

Gong Gong's face turned darker and darker, but Wuzhi Qi was a senior minister of his after all, and he had no choice but to patiently comfort this grumpy old monkey. After Gong Gong promised Wuzhi Qi many benefits, Wuzhi Qi finally closed his eyes and breathed deeply to heal himself.

The clones of the twenty-seven old Gong Gongs were destroyed, but Gong Gong couldn't blame Wuzhi Qi for that at all. Wuzhi Qi

was only there to try to solve the problem, and he was injured seriously, almost killed by the nine former human emperors. No matter how, Wuzhi Qi should be rewarded instead of being punished for what happened.

Gong Gong turned around and looked at Yu Ancestor, who was kneeling on the ground, daring not to move, and also covered in blood.

"Wuzhi Qi has made his contribution. For saving you, he almost got himself killed. Therefore, I will record his merit. In the future, when the great plan is accomplished, he will be rewarded. But you...Old trash, look at what you've done!"

Gong Gong suddenly pulled out a dark jade ruyi which was embossed with coiled dragons, and violently smashed on Yu Ancestor's heads.

Followed by a loud cracking noise, Yu Ancestor's head dented, while he was sent tens of meters away by Gong Gong. Blood spurted out from the wound on his forehead. Vomiting blood, Yu Ancestor struggled back up from the ground, kneeled again and dared not to many any move other than screaming hoarsely, "Lord Gong Gong, they were too fast, too brutal. I couldn't stop it! I couldn't!"

"Too fast, too cruel! I never had a chance to stop it!" shouted Yu Ancestor heart-breakingly, "Countless children of mine died...I managed to save myself, and it was already very lucky!"

Silently, Gong Gong held the jade ruyi and launched a mad series of bashes towards Yu Ancestor's head.

Yu Ancestor's head was even out of shape. Gong Gong then kicked him away and roared, "Old trash, if my ancestors can't return, how am I supposed to fight those human beings?"

Yu Ancestor gasped for air, then carefully raised his head and said cautiously, "We can still do it, we can still do it...After all,

through their clones, those old lords have already accepted some of the powers of my children. Although their clones were destroyed, Lord Gong Gong, as long as you are willing to consume some of your spirit blood, I can still lead their way and help them to return."

"My spirit blood?" Gong Gong looked at Yu Ancestor and asked.

"You share the same origin with those old lords. With only a small amount of your spirit blood and my secret magic, I can help them to return to Pan Gu world. However...I am now slightly underpowered...I'm afraid, it would be very difficult for me to help all twenty-seven old lords return simultaneously. "

Gong Gong knitted his eyebrows. Looking at Yu Ancestor, he asked word by word, "Underpowered? What do you mean?"

Yu Ancestor put his head on the ground and responded tremblingly, "I dare not to be greedy, but in order to cast the secret magic, dear Lord, please..."

Hesitating for a short while, Yu Ancestor gritted his teeth and continued with a deep voice, "Dear Lord, please open the Black Emperor Divine Palace and empower me with the world essence water."

Chapter 1193: Kill Yu with Seven Arrows

At the north of the heaven, a beautiful ocean was surrounded by flowing silver sands. A dark divine palace floated upon the ocean. High up in the sky, countless stars sparkled, letting an enormous, splendid, milky-way-like silver starlight stream pour straight down and envelop the divine palace.

Surrounding the dark palace were numerous beautiful small islands. Luxurious palaces and mansions scattered on these islands, and from time to time, colorful clouds would rise from all of them.

Gong Gong trod on the two black dragons and flew to the divine palace with a group of people.

Looking from a distance away, this divine palace seemed nothing special. But under the gateway, the air moved slightly in front of the group, then everyone's eyes shone. They found out that this divine palace belonged to the ancient Black Emperor. Not to mention anything else, each of the nine-thousand, nine-hundred and ninety-nine stars before the frontal gate of the palace was over three-thousand-meters tall!

Ancient divine gods were mostly enormous in shapes. Therefore, the size of these stairs was just normal. But in the eyes of Gong Gong and the others, this was just imposing. By simply looking at this divine palace, they all sensed a great pressure that was almost freezing their souls.

Raising a cloud, Gong Gong and the group of people walked upstairs. On top of those stairs was a broad square, embossed with the hydrographical maps of Midland and the four wastelands. On those embossments, hazy water flows were visible, along with faintly audible sounds of waves, muffled yet strong. They nearly disabled Gong Gong and his people from standing steadily.

Gong Gong and the group of people spent no time in enjoying the

stunning scenery and all kinds of statues. Instead, Gong Gong held a dark seal and walked to the frontal gate with big steps.

He incanted a spell, following which, the dark jade gate of the divine palace, which was embossed with two coiling dragons, opened silently. A formidable wave of watery mist came out of the gate. Facing this strong watery mist wave, Gong Gong, Wuzhi Qi, Yu Ancestor and the other few strong water-kind creatures following behind them managed to hold still, but with some difficulty.

The poor ones were Dishi Cha, who insisted on following Gong Gong over, because he was ‘curious’, or ‘worried’, Yemo Tian and the current Chiyou. All three of them were not familiar with the water power. As the watery mist surged out, Yemo Tian screamed out the first, while he was sent flying away like a falling leaf, and rolled downstairs.

Dishi Cha was barely standing steadily. Seeing Yemo Tian was struck away, he panicked a little bit. As a consequence, he screamed as well, and was also sent flying away by the violent watery mist wave.

Chiyou reached out his hand and attempted to grab Dishi Cha. He might not have ended up so embarrassedly if he hadn’t tried, but once he moved, tens of turbid white torrents roared down and struck him away.

"Hehe!" Gong Gong, Wuzhi Qi and Yu Ancestor glanced back with a weird smile on their faces, then silently rushed into the divine palace, against the torrents. They and Dishi Cha were partners indeed, but they did love to see Dishi Cha, Yemo Tian, and their people suffer.

The divine palace was empty. At one time, thousands of divine gods used to worship the Black Emperor in this place. But now, nothing but an empty throne was left standing at the end of this great hall, all alone.

Upon the throne, a dark jade bucket silently floated in the air. The three-hundred-meter-square jade bucket had been sparkling with a dim light, and inside it, a tens of meters thick layer of water was rippling slightly.

Above the jade bucket, hair-thin wisps of watery mist had been slowly glowing out from the air. Over a long span of time, these thin wisps of watery mist could condense into a sesame-sized drop of water, gently dripping into the jade bucket and generating a silvery tinkle.

"The divine dark water bucket...The world essence water!" Yu Ancestor looked at that dark jade bucket with a pair of glowing eyes. He was so excited that his entire body was shaking.

Gong Gong looked at the dark jade bucket with a twisted face and shouted through his gritted teeth, "Old trash, I was going to purify my own body with this previous world essence water, and build an immortal, divine foundation for myself after I attained the throne of the Central Emperor...For the great plan, I will give you some to improve your power...But, if you fail, I will make you beg to die."

Yu Ancestor hurriedly kneeled on the ground and swore to the sky with reverence and awe, "Dear Lord, please trust me. If I still dare to make any mistake after getting such a great fortune, I will be too ashamed to see anyone in the world forever. If that truly happens, Dear Lord, you can do anything you want to me."

In the heaven, when Gong Gong and Yu Ancestor were still bargaining, Ji Hao activated the golden bridge and darted across the sky. At the time, he could already see the defensive magic screen of Pu Ban City from a distance away, and feel the warm light of the Pan Jia sun.

Abruptly, Ji Hao stopped, and sent the golden bridge back into his body. He wielded his hand and threw out tens of formation flags that sparkled with a starlight. Those flags landed around him and his friends and raised a dense watery mist, surrounding them.

"Ji Hao, what happened?" asked Man Man, "We've been traveling around all these days, and I feel so uncomfortable now. When we get back to Pu Ban City, I'll have to take a nice shower with warm water! It would be even better if I can get a lava pool to take a bath!"

"Taisi, prepare the Nailhead Seven Arrow Book. I can't stop worrying until we take out Yu Ancestor. His 'transplant' power is too weird. I don't know how those former emperors plan to deal with him, but we have to make some preparation at least." Ji Hao patted Man Man on her head and then said to Taisi with a deep voice.

Taisi nodded seriously and murmured, "One Gong Gong has raised such a great flood. If we let twenty-seven more Gong Gongs return, we can all just stop living. We should kill this Yu Ancestor as soon as possible."

While murmuring, Taiji smoothly and quickly built a small altar, then put the Nailhead Seven Arrow Book on it. A spooky coldness was instantly released. Meanwhile, Taisi's eyeballs turned gray-white. While twitching, he raised his arms, and started a strange dance around the altar.

"This is a blood offering... We need offerings!" Tremblingly, Taisi murmured.

Ji Hao pointed his finger up. The Taiji Universe mirror darted out and flashed with a clear light. All f a sudden, black and dark beams fell down from the sky and wove together, becoming a thousand-mile-radius web that swiftly sank into the water.

Following a cloud water clattering noise, countless water-kind creatures and tens of thousands of smaller shaped water-kind spirit creatures, who were hiding in the water, waiting for an opportunity to move, were captured. Before these water-kind creatures could even struggle, Yu Mu grinningly activated the Disease God Streamer and released countless locusts, which gave a

bite on each of these creatures' neck. Immediately, these water-kind creatures were all paralyzed.

A giant amount of spirit blood was drawn into the altar, while an especially dense, dark power started spreading from the book on the altar.

Taisi kowtowed for a few times towards the altar, then threw the poisonous sand, which was collected by Ji Hao from Yu Ancestor, onto the altar. A shrill howl was generated right away, while a bright stream of light flashed across the altar.

Chapter 1194: The Wild Goose Flies to the Unseen World

Back in the heaven, in the ancient Black Emperor's divine palace...

With a grim face, Gong Gong stood under the dark jade bucket as he released ten streams of dark smoke from his ten fingers, and wove into a tiny hand. With that, he carefully took out a handful of glistening water from the bucket.

The dark water divine bucket was a precious treasure in the heaven. It controlled all of the water in the world, and could slowly extract world essence water from all rivers, streams, and lakes in the world. It had an inexhaustible power of creation, and could nourish all living beings.

Back in the ancient time, the war between the ancient heaven and the non-humankind lasted for a very long period of time. The Black Emperor controlled the dark water divine bucket and sprayed the world essence water on the bodies of all wounded divine warriors. Wherever the world essence water reached, even those dying divine warriors were immediately brought back to their peak states, and went right back to the battlefields, full of energy and vitality.

This divine bucket made the divine army time times more powerful at least, and caused the non-humankind extremely severe, extra damages. If the extraction efficiency of this divine bucket was not limited, and if those ancient divine gods didn't waste too much of the world essence water on brewing liquor and concocting magic medicines during peaceful days, so that the Black Emperor still had enough world essence water left when the non-humankind invaded, the ancient heaven would never have fallen.

After the heaven fell, the dark water divine bucket was hidden in Black Emperor's palace. For countless years, it had been

continuously extracting the essence of the water of Pan Gu world. However, before the flood, only about a three-feet-thick layer of world essence water was accumulated in it.

Later on, Gong Gong raised the crazy flood. The strong water powers from twelve water worlds started surging into Pan Gu world without an end, and all of a sudden, the water power in Pan Gu world became especially rich. Since then, the divine bucket began speedily extracting essence water power, and accumulated a tens of meters thick layer of world essence water in it.

This precious world essence water was prepared by Gong Gong for himself to use, after he became the Central Divine Emperor. He was planning to turn himself into an immortal being with the world essence water, the first truly immortal being in Pan Gu world.

Even though Yu Ancestor had been trying his best to earn Gong Gong's trust, and indeed, the twenty-seven old Gong Gongs were related to the future of the entire Gong Gong Family, Gong Gong was extremely careful and reluctant when taking out the world essence water. Taking every drop of the world essence water out from the jade bucket hurt as much as draining his own marrow, bringing him an unbearable heartache that made his face twist.

Yu Ancestor sat in front of Gong Gong with crossed legs. Drops of glistening world essence water dripped down on his scalp and quickly seeped into his body, like fresh water dripping onto a desert.

Yu Ancestor's wrinkled, scrawny face quickly turned tender and pink. That layer of transparent, ugly scales on his face faded gradually. Meanwhile, a light aroma was released from his body. Both his body and soul were changing thoroughly.

As one of the first generation of living creatures in the world, Yu Ancestor was definitely not an ordinary being. However, compared with the other ancient creatures, such as Kun Peng, Xiang Liu and

Wuzhi Qi, Yu Ancestor was still much weaker. After all, he was an insect, and among all ancient creatures, insects had the poorest gifts. Therefore, Yu Ancestor indeed had some unpredictable powers, but whether in terms of cultivation, battle efficiency or position in the Gong Gong Family, he was far less powerful than Kun Peng, Wuzhi Qi, and Xiang Liu.

Nevertheless, as the world essence water dripped into his body drop by drop, Yu Ancestor's innate powers were improving. If one compared Yu Ancestor to a pine, nourished by the world essence water, he had now been remolding, and even his nature was changing. This meant that he was turning into a powerful spirit tree from an ordinary pine tree.

Followed by a strange noise, a crack appeared on Yu Ancestor's forehead between his eyebrows. Wuzhi Qu curiously leaped to him and scratched on that crack. Puff! The skin of Yu Ancestor was pulled off entirely by Wuzhi Qi.

A layer of thin transparent scale fell off from that scrawny old skin of Yu Ancestor like snowflakes. Yu Ancestor's new skin was as tender and white as the skin of a baby, without even a sign of scales. In addition to that, his face turned young and handsome, and even looked like a prince.

Enduring a serious heartache, Gong Gong took out another handful of world essence water and dripped on Yu Ancestor's head, drop by drop.

As the world essence water merged with his body, the aroma that came from Yu Ancestor grew stronger and stronger. Soon, another layer of skin fell off from his body, and this time, his new skin had a beautiful pearl-like luster. His skin and muscles turned transparent like crystal. Hazily, one could even see his purple-red internal organs and bones.

"Thoroughly remold, a second life...My power will soar." Yu Ancestor murmured, "Dear Lord, only my skin and flesh are

changed, but my bones and internal organs…It’s not enough."

With a badly twisted face, Gong Gong continuously dripping world essence water on Yu Ancestor’s head.

The world essence water accumulated in the dark water divine bucket was tens of meters deep, and Gong Gong had only been using a slight amount on Yu Ancestor. Still, it was truly hurting!

The color of Yu Ancestor’s bones and internal organs was changing speedily, turning white and transparent along with his meridians and brain. Five layers of old skins fell off from his body in a row.

A clean sense of power spread out from Yu Ancestor’s body, while a white mist rose from his head and transformed into a sparkling sphere of water that floated above his head. Within the hundreds of meters radius water, a strange creature huddled in a deep sleep. That creature looked like a Qi Lin, yet only had three feet.

Before, Yu Ancestor’s primordial spirit looked exactly like his physical body, like an ugly frog. But nourished, purified and improved by the world essence water, his primordial spirit looked different now.

Except for the feature of three legs, who could ever imagine that this Qi-Lin-like creature with a strong, mysterious sense of power releasing from it, was actually Yu Ancestor?

The sense of power that came from Yu Ancestor was entirely different now. His body was now suffused by a beautiful white light. He opened his mouth and breathed out, spraying a wave of sand. That sand was all ice-crystals, which glowed with a cold, fascinating light, and seemed to be beautiful and not evil at all.

Buzz! A strange sense of power abruptly came from above Yu Ancestor’s head, following which, an extremely strong and evil power descended, took a few circles around the divine palace, then

fiercely landed on the few old skins that fell off from Yu Ancestor’s body.

Puff! The few old skins were immediately turned into gray dust and dissipated in the air.

"A Distance magic curse!" Gong Gong quivered slightly and shouted in shock, "Who can break the defense of the heaven and earth great formation and curse you? And, and..."

Yu Ancestor’s face turned deathly pale. The power he sensed just now was indescribably evil and dark. He somehow felt that if he were hit by that power, he would have been turned into ashes as well, just like his old skins.

Fortunately, the world essence water improved his powers and remolded his body, which made him an entirely different creature! Otherwise, he would have been killed already.

On the vast water, Taisi narrowed his eyes and said a bit hesitatingly, "I think he died...Hmm, he should be dead."

Chapter 1195: Devils Again

Behind Taisi, a, thousands of meters tall, gray silhouette slowly merged with the air.

Taisi raised his head and looked where the silhouette faded. Then, he nodded seriously at last and said, "I can’t sense him anymore. In Pan Gu world, he has ceased to exist already. Unless he left this world, he is already dead, both his body and his soul."

Ji Hao stopped worrying. He patted heavily on Taisi’s shoulder, then shook Taisi’s body in a naughty way while saying, "Good job! When we have the time, I will give you a big vacation, and let you return to Yao Mountain City to see your children."

Man Man laughed out loud, Yu Mu chuckled, while Feng Xing squeezed his eyes towards Shaosi. As for Shaosi, she delightfully looked at Taisi, and said slowly and seriously, "Not enough! If we want our family to raise again, my big brother’s children are still far from enough. When we are less busy, I’ll go beg Elder Wulong to make my big brother hundreds of more pills!"

Taisi instantly showed a sullen look. Pitifully, he grabbed Ji Hao’s sleeve while staring at Ji Hao with an extremely sad and dismal face. He just gazed at Ji Hao like that, and didn’t say a word.

Ji Hao immediately changed the topic, then hurriedly activated the golden bridge, flying towards Pu Ban City with his friends. He didn’t know how to help Taisi, neither did he dare to!

Shaosi had a strong obsession of reviving her family. Back then, before the life-and-death game in Pan Xi world, she forcibly married Taisi to quite a number of girls. After that, she got some strange pills from Wulong Yao, and with those, she made all of Taisi’s wives pregnant.

By now, Taisi had over a hundred sons and hundreds of

daughters…Taisi was a muddleheaded boy who didn't even name his own children. Ji Xia and Qing Fu named all of Taisi's children, and Taisi didn't know those names!

Taisi, this boy with a terrifying power and an awfully simple mind, had made a great sacrifice for the future of his family. Shaosi treated him like a lemon, as she had been trying as hard as possible to squeeze all of his juice out. Taisi felt miserable, but he was defenseless…As for Ji Hao, Feng Xing, Yu Mu, and Man Man, as his 'good brothers and sister', they all showed sympathy for him, yet none of them would ever help him with this!

Yuan Li sneakily asked Feng Xing about Taisi's 'story'. When he knew what had happened to Taisi, he started gazing at Taisi with true admiration. From his young ape face, one could even find 'admiration' on every fine hair.

The golden bridge was swift as a bolt of lightning. Within a twinkling of an eye, it flashed to the defensive magic screen of Pu Ban City. Ji Hao took out his identity tablet and created a path on the magic screen, then flew in.

Outside the city, the world was occupied by the flood and the endless heavy rain. The dense watery mist suffused the whole world. Standing out there, one would feel like soaking in water, and breathing felt like that someone was pouring a large bowl of water into one's lungs.

Having traveled out of the city for so many days, Ji Hao felt that both his soul and his body were going moldy. Once he entered the city, he felt so snug, as the Pan Jia sun was shining brightly and warmed his body.

The Pan Jia sun was inside Ji Hao's body for a rather long period of time. Therefore, an indescribably tight connection existed between him and the sun. Once Ji Hao entered the city, the Pan Jia sun trembled slightly. Then, an obviously bright stream of light descended and landed accurately on Ji Hao's body.

Countless golden light spots surrounded Ji Hao, hovering quickly around him like naughty puppies and kitties. Ji Hao sent out his spirit power through the sunlight and drilled straight into the Pan Jia sun.

Memories surged through his head like tidewater. During these days when Ji Hao was absent, everything that happened in everywhere showered under the light of the Pan Jia sun was memorized by the sun. And now, the sun gave its memories to Ji Hao.

Ji Hao saw many things, mostly good. Facing the flood, all human clans had combined their powers, and mobilized all forces to clean the water channels and suppress the water-kind armies. Tens of water channels around Pu Ban City were already dredged. In many areas, the flood had already started fading, and some flat grounds were even exposed.

However, bad things had happened too. Calculation, splintering, scrambling for powers and profits... Many people still had their eyes covetously fixed on the throne. At the moment, these people were ganging up, attempting to unify all their powers and give Emperor Shun and Si Wen Ming a heavy strike, after the flood was overcome. Some people even had their eyes on the credit of the flood-control mission. They were planning to destroy Si Wen Ming with all their powers right before Si Wen Ming accomplish the flood-control mission. In this way, they could take all the credit and great reputation, which should belong to Si Wen Ming, then ascend directly up to the throne.

Nevertheless, these people never thought that Ji Hao would have such an unreasonable ability, which allowed him to know everything that happened in this city.

The Pan Jia sun was shining above Pu Ban City, and the entire city was showering under its light. The sunlight was Ji Hao’s ears and eyes. Wherever the sunlight reached, Ji Hao saw, heard, and memorized every scheme or dirty plan.

"Stupid things." cursed Ji Hao with a low voice, "I can’t spoil the flood-control mission, and the strengths of your clans are still needed. Therefore, I will let you live... for now."

For the overall situation, Ji Hao would temporarily do nothing to these people. Some other things were such that even the Pan Jia sun didn’t manage to see clearly, and neither could Ji Hao. But apparently, something that was not right happened here in Pu Ban City. Instinctively, Ji Hao had a strange feeling.

"Man Man, Shaosi, you go rest in our own place. I will go meet Emperor Shun to see what he wants us to do." Ji Hao said to Man Man and Shaosi. He warned them to mind anything that seemed to not be right. Also, he told all team members to stay together, and to never split. After that, he walked to the Town Hall alone.

Under the effect of the magic, another batch of crops was ripe on the terraced fields in Pu Ban City. Human beings were happily harvesting. From time to time, leaves and wheat straws drifted down, while a refreshing aroma of ripe crops spread in the air.

Standing by the gate of the Town Hall, Ji Hao raised his head and looked at those hard-working human beings, then smiled.

While he was smiling, an old man walked over with big steps, with tens of elite warriors. The old man looked amiable, but he had an especially disdainful manner, squinting at everyone.

Casting a sideway glance at Ji Hao, the old man said coldly, "Kid, why are you laughing? Why don’t you go help harvesting? This is the Town Hall. Who said that you can stand in here? Where are your parents? Why are you still here? Piss off!"

Ji Hao paused. How could this old man talk like that?

But suddenly, Ji Hao sensed an intense vibration from his red sun primordial spirit, while he sensed a familiar power from the old man. It was same as the power he sensed back then from Xia Zun and Yu Zun, the two sky devils killed by Yu Yu.

This old man was possessed by a sky devil. His soul was eaten, and his body was controlled.

Chapter 1196: Terror

Those sky devils were daring enough to even forcibly occupy Priest Mu's clone bodies, and the unbreakable body of the first Chiyou. Ji Hao also thought of the fact that he could 'eat' these sky devils with the small cauldron inside his body and gain great benefits.

Ji Hao grinned, took a sideway step, and stood right before the old man's face. Then, he politely bowed to the old man and said, "Eh? This gramp sounds so angry, why? What happened? Did your son die? Did your daughter-in-law run away? Since you're burning in anger, the water is all over the world out there. Why don't you go out and soak your head in the water to chill yourself down?"

Ji Hao's words were extremely mean, which even shocked the old man and his tens of guards. They paused for a short while, then the old man's amiable face twitched. Grimly, the old man yelled at Ji Hao, "Where are your parents? How dare you..."

Ji Hao threw a slap on the old man's face.

If that were a real elderly human being, Ji Hao would never act so rudely. But it was a sky devil. Therefore, Ji Hao felt no pressure when doing this. On the contrary, he even felt rather good.

When Ji Hao slapped on his face, the old man's eyes sparkled with a strange five-colored light. He saw Ji Hao's move clearly, yet his body didn't manage to react timely; he could not dodge at all.

Behind him, the eyes of his tens of guards all shone with the same five-colored light. They also saw Ji Hao's move clearly. They even saw Ji Hao's palm split the air and smashed tens of floating dust grains in the sky.

They saw it indeed, but they couldn't react timely either; none of them could be as fast as Ji Hao.

Followed a clear cracking noise, the old man swung his head

sideway with half of his face dented deeply. He largely opened his mouth and let blood and broken teeth spurt out. Those teeth exploded before they landed on the ground, generating a series of popping noise.

Ji Hao was a powerful being now. He had grown the red-sun primordial spirit, and preliminarily raised the extremely positive power, extremely negative power, and the power of the Dao of destruction. At this stage, he was almost as powerful as Supreme Magi and Sun and Moon stage non-humankind beings.

His physical strength was even greater. Ever since the drop of Chaos blood sneaked out of the Divine Origin Pool and merged with Ji Hao's heart, all of Ji Hao's blood had now been replaced by Chaos blood. Nourished by the Chaos blood, his internal organs were changed magically. By now, his physical strength had gone far beyond the level of peak Divine Magus, and had seriously stepped into the level of Supreme Magi.

He didn't slap the old man too hard. In fact, he carefully restrained his power. But still, the old man was sent flying into the sky, pulled by his dented head, spinning in the air in a weird manner. Thud! While vomiting blood, then old man flew hundreds of meters away and thudded on a big tree, broke the tree, then finally landed on the ground.

In disorder, a group of guard rushed to the old man, some of them even screaming and cursing.

The few guards, whose eyes shone with the five-colored light, silently pulled out their swords and lunged to Ji Hao's vital body parts. Their swords were nimble and fast, coiled in faintly visible colorful mist. The moment they pulled out their sword, a warm and sweet aroma could even be sensed from the air.

"Human warriors can never use swords like this. Their swords had no aroma, just the scent of blood!" Ji Hao fiercely dashed up and bumped his strong body against the few swords.

Lines of spell symbols dazzled on those thick and heavy swords, but following a series of creaking noise, those swords failed to take Ji Hao's power, and shattered inch by inch. Ji Hao darted to the few guards, raised his right arm, and gave each of them a neat punch.

Once again, their eyes shone with that five-colored light. Same as the last time, they saw Ji Hao's move clearly, but still didn't manage to dodge.

Their exquisitely crafted armors were broken. The strong impact force blasted inside their bodies like thunderbolts. In panic, many human warriors by the gate of the Town Hall saw that these few early-Divine-Magus-level guards exploded into clouds of blood mist, which sprayed to tens of meters away and dyed the ground red.

"Stop! Marquis Yao!" An experienced warrior commander rushed out of the crowd, grabbed Ji Hao's arm while shouting, "This is Fufeng Yu, the leader of Fufeng Clan...He came all the way here to Pu Ban City with his army, under Emperor Shun's order!"

"Marquis Yao, Marquis Yao, if he offended you, please, for Emperor Shun's sake, stop killing!" This commander hurriedly introduced Fufeng Yu to Ji Hao with a hoarse voice, then begged Ji Hao to not kill Fufeng Yu.

Fufeng Yu was held up by a few guards while he gasped quickly for air. Half of his head was still dented. With a deep yet strong voice, he growled and activated his spirit blood. Soon, his broken bones were healed, while his skin, flesh, and broken teeth regrew.

Within a few seconds, Fufeng Yu had recovered completely, such that not even a sign of wound could be seen on his face anymore.

Sulkily, he stared at Ji Hao and said with a cold voice, "Marquis Yao...Ji Hao? No wonder you acted like that...I have only slightly offended you, but you killed my people! Right in front of the Town Hall, under the watch of Emperor Shun, how dare you do that? Do

you even care about the law of the alliance of human clans?"

Ji Hao looked at Fufeng Yu, smiled faintly, and asked, "Are you sure that the ones I killed are people?"

The pupils of Fufeng Yu and the few guards around him shrank instantly. The other warriors didn't know what did Ji Hao mean. They angrily walked up, pointed at Ji Hao, and yelled out at him. Even though Ji Hao was Marquis Yao, and was way more powerful than these ordinary human warriors, these warriors still approached him with anger and without fear. They were shouting at him, trying their best to bring justice back for their 'clansmen', who were killed by Ji Hao.

Facing the sky devil, Ji Hao launched lethal attacks carelessly. But facing these real human warriors and hearing their accusations, Ji Hao could only step back embarrassedly.

Suddenly, Emperor Shun's voice could be heard. "Why is this place so noisy? A disaster has come upon us. We human beings should hold hands and overcome the difficulties together. But why are you against each other?"

Those human warriors hurriedly dropped their hands and politely bowed to Emperor Shun.

Ji Hao turned around. Emperor Shun was surrounded by tens of senior ministers, standing by the gate of the Town Hall, coldly and fiercely looking at this area.

'Coldly and fiercely'? Ji Hao paused. Normally, Emperor Shun had always been imperatorial and serious. When did he ever make people feel 'cold and fierce'?

Looking closer, Ji Hao quivered, because he sensed a great terror from deep inside his heart!

The pupils of Emperor Shun were also glistening with a faint five-colored light.

Chapter 1197: Arrogant

Fufeng Yu shook his head, split the group of warriors around him, then walked to Emperor Shun with big steps and a dark face.

"Shun!" Fufeng Yu bowed politely to Emperor Shun.

"Shun!" Ji Hao walked to beside Fufeng Yu and bowed to Emperor Shun as well. Before Fufeng Yu said anything, Ji Hao started talking with a grim look. Arrogantly and carelessly, he said, "I came back to Pu Ban City under your order, but this old one offended me."

"And that is why you killed his people?" said Emperor Shun frigidly, while his pupils sparkled with that five-colored light.

"I...I am so sorry!" Ji Hao straightened his waist and started right at Emperor Shun's eyes. He said sorry, but his facial expression was rather provocative — 'I have indeed killed his people, and I have beaten him. What can you do to me?"

The group of senior ministers glanced at each other. They all knew Ji Hao. Usually, Ji Hao was never so rude and arrogant, was he? On the contrary, Marquis Yao Ji Hao hated arrogant people the most, and he could even be counted as the mildest and modest one.

Looking at Ji Hao's highly raised eyebrows, a human minister walked out of the crowd and said with a deep voice, "Shun, Marquis Yao has just returned from the battlefield in the north. He has been fighting and killing all these days. I think he is affected by the long-lasting battle, and that is the reason why he talked like this. Emperor Shun, please forgive him."

Emperor Shun narrowed his eyes and looked at Ji Hao with a gloomy face. The five-colored light in his eyes were hazy and faint. Occasionally, his pupils would suddenly expand by three to five times, and sometimes, that pupil would shrink to the size of a needlepoint. Every now and then, he would tighten or loosen his

body, and by doing that, he silently released a heavy pressure from his body, that even created thin cracks on the thick flagstone treading under his feet.

"Shun, please, bring justice back to me." Fufeng Yu slightly narrowed his eyes and said with a harsh tone, "I didn't mean to offend Marquis Yao. He..."

Ji Hao stood beside Fufeng Yu. Hearing Fufeng Yu, he swiftly and violently punched on Fufeng Yu's stomach and sent him flying away.

His fist landed fiercely on Fufeng Yu's ribs and generated a muffled thud. Following that, nothing happened to the rib area punched by Ji Hao, but the other side of Fufeng Yu's rib exploded thunderously. Three two-inches-long pieces of ribs flew out of his body, along with large streams of blood, swishing hundreds of meters away.

A fist-sized bleeding hole was opened on Fufeng Yu's rib area. Blood surged out from that hole quickly made a large puddle under his feet. The pain made Fufeng Yu scream. He covered the wound with both hands and kneeled straight on the ground, as his legs were softened.

"You!" Emperor Shun's face twitched in anger. He instantly raised his arm, pointing at Ji Hao's nose.

"Those brothers can be my witnesses. This old dog shouted at me just now, and was extremely rude." Unhurriedly, Ji Hao looked at Emperor Shun's finger, then smiled to the group of warrior guarding by the Town Hall's gate. "Fufeng Clan? What is it? I've never even heard of this small clan. How dare he yell at me like that? Of course, I had to teach him a lesson!"

Coldly, Ji Hao looked at Emperor Shun, and continued, "I want him to understand one thing. No matter which corner he came from, whether he is a human being or not, he has to respect me, and be polite to me. Otherwise, he will be whipped!"

Fufeng Yu roared in rage. He was a Divine Magus after all. As his spirit blood gathered around his wound, that fist-sized wound recovered quickly, without leaving even a scar. After that, he leaped up, pointed at Ji Hao, and barked, "I disrespected you, do you even dare to kill me for that?!"

Ji Hao turned around his palm. The Taiji divine sword swiftly hacked down towards Fufeng Yu's neck.

Fufeng Yu screamed shrilly again. He kicked his legs and generated a strong gale from his shanks, bringing himself backward for tens of meters. Even though he dodged pretty fast, the sword almost brushed against his neck. A three-foot-long sharp sword light dazzled out from the sword tip, then slantingly flashed across his chest, leaving a foot-long slash on his body.

Blood gushed out of that wound, mixed with smashed internal organs. Once again, Fufeng Yu howled in pain.

He stared at Ji Hao with fear and confusion. Why did Ji Hao dare to launch lethal attacks to him, right in front of the Town Hall, under the watch of Emperor Shun and all those senior ministers? He was the leader of Fufeng Clan, and he came all the way to Pu Ban City with the elite force of his clan under the order of Emperor Shun!

Fufeng Clan was not a super powerful clan, but it wasn't weak either. The clan had the territory with a radius of over a hundred thousand miles, and the population of over ten million, including over one million strong warriors and over ten Divine-Magus-level elders and commanders.

Facing the leader of a clan like this, how could Ji Hao just try to kill him in front of so many people?

Undoubtedly, if Fufeng Yu didn't dodge so fast, his head would have been chopped down already. Ji Hao was such a cruel person, he seriously wanted to kill Fufeng Yu.

"Emperor Shun!" Fufeng Yu helplessly looked at Emperor Shun, sounding quite pitiful.

"You, you, you!" Emperor Shun's face had even turned blue in anger. "Guards!" shouted Emperor Shun.

Before his voice faded, Ji Hao puffed out his chest and said, "Emperor Shun, if you are giving the order to arrest me, don't blame me for detonating the Pan Jia sun and burn the entire Pu Ban City."

Emperor Shun paused instantly. Subconsciously, he raised his head and glanced at the Pan Jia sun. "You!" exclaimed Emperor Shun.

"Have you forgotten it?" Ji Hao chuckled, "That sun is my precious treasure. Hehe, if I didn't dedicate it, I'm afraid that Pu Ban City and all surrounding human clans would have run out of food long ago, right?"

Pointing at the Pan Jia sun, Ji Hao continued slowly, "With this great contribution I made, killing Fufeng Yu is nothing, isn't it?"

Emperor Shun stopped talking and put his hands in his sleeves, looking at Ji Hao grimly.

The group of ministers remained silent as well. They glanced at Emperor Shun, then looked at Ji Hao. They didn't know what was wrong with Ji Hao. Was his brain damaged? Was he cursed? Ji Hao had always been a smart, responsible and polite person. How could he possibly say something like that?

But Emperor Shun's attitude was even stranger.

Emperor Shun would never hesitate to punish the ones who made serious mistakes. If one made a mistake, he would definitely punish him, regardless of his family background. If one made a contribution, he would certainly reward him, no matter how many people had been offended by him.

But today, Emperor Shun acted a bit abnormal, but why? Ji Hao's

threat should be completely ineffective to him!

"Shun!" A few elderly minister walked out of the crowd, then seriously and confusedly looked at Emperor Shun.

The five-colored light sparkled quickly in Emperor Shun’s pupils. Abruptly, he opened his mouth and let out a stream of blood.

Chapter 1198: Strife Openly and Secretly

The moment Emperor Shun vomited blood, the sense of power that came from him turned back normal. The fierceness and coldness were gone. Instead, Emperor Shun looked warm and majestic again, with the sense of power coming from him turning back to strong and stable, much less aggressive than before.

Ji Hao paused for a second. He immediately looked at Emperor Shun's eyes. The five-colored light faded in those eyes, being replaced by a warm purpleness. But soon, the purpleness was pressed back down by the five-colored light. For an extremely short moment, Emperor Shun's eyes turned completely glowing and multicolored, then quickly turned back normal.

Wiping the corner of his mouth with his sleeve, Emperor Shun said calmly to those ministers, "Human beings are facing a great disaster. As the emperor, I failed to save my people from the miserable situatio., I am ashamed. I couldn't sleep all these days because of the anxiety. It's just a little bit of blood, I am fine."

Hearing him, those senior ministers sighed. Some of them tried to comfort Emperor Shun, begging him to take care of himself for all human beings. Under the current situation, the humankind could no longer take any more misfortune, neither could they risk losing their emperor.

Emperor Shun sighed deeply, glanced at Ji Hao, then cupped his hands, and solemnly bowed to Ji Hao.

"Marquis Ji Hao, Fufeng Yu shouldn't have disrespected you, and I will surely punish him. However, he came all the way to Pu Ban City with his warriors, to devote his own life to the humankind. Marquis Yao, please forgive him this time!"

Emperor Shun sounded especially heavy and sincere. If Ji Hao didn't know the truth, he would have been touched by Emperor Shun's words, and wondered if he were truly a heartless man, that

he made the emperor vomit blood and apologize for some small thing.

Blinking his eyes, Ji Hao looked at those senior ministers' serious, worried faces, then helplessly sighed in his head.

Human Magi never cultivated their souls. Instead, they depended on pure physical strength and magic spells. The cultivation system of the humankind allowed human Magi to have amazing strength, but because of this, lacking spiritual powers had become a shortcoming of human Magi. Among all senior ministers on the scene, except for over ten peak-level Divine Magi, even the weakest were at the level of Magus King. But none of them discovered the strange five-colored light in Emperor Shun's eyes.

Just now, Emperor Shun vomited blood, but not because of the anxiety. Instead, it was because of the strong force that came from inside his body. That strong force clashed against the sky devil, which had occupied Emperor Shun's body. The collision of two extremely strong forces slightly harmed Emperor Shun's body and made him vomit blood.

Fufeng Yu walked over. He was severely injured by Ji Hao earlier, but had recovered completely already, as if he had never suffered any injury. With a big smile on his face, Fufeng Yu bowed to Ji Hao over and over again as he said, "Marquis Yao, Marquis Yao, it was all my fault, all my fault. Everything was my fault. Please, Marquis Yao, we human beings should hold hands and get through this difficult period together. Please, forgive me, for this time only!"

As his eyes sparkled with a dim, weird light, Fufeng Yu pointed at the large puddle of blood on the ground and continued sadly with a dry voice, "These stupid things offended you, Marquis Yao, they deserved to die, they truly deserved to die!"

Ji Hao raised his eyebrows while looking at Fufeng Yu with a faint smile. Even now, this Fufeng Yu had still been trying to entrap him.

Glancing at those senior ministers, Ji Hao then looked at Emperor Shun, who still had his hands cupped, while bowing slightly to Ji Hao. Ji Hao knew that if he dared to continue saying anything unfriendly to Fufeng Yu in front of all those senior ministers, he would have no place in the human society anymore.

He could never tell the truth to all these senior ministers, because no one would believe him What could he say? That Emperor Shun was possessed by an outer space sky devil? What nonsense! What was an outer space sky devil?

If he truly said it out, a large group of people would even rise up against him, wouldn't they? People from Ten Sun Country, who never liked Ji Hao, and people from the few large Southern Wasteland clans, they all would definitely join hands and talk against Ji Hao. Ji Hao could even imagine what they would say — 'Ji Hao, how dare you frame Emperor Shun? What are you planning? Are you on Gong Gong's sue? Are you with the non-humankind? Are you thinking about usurping the throne?

Thud! Ji Hao abruptly kneeled down on one knee, grabbed Emperor Shun's arms with both hands, and said, "Emperor Shun, how can I let you apologize to me? As for what happened between Fufeng Yu and me...Let bygones be bygones!"

Giving a long sigh, Ji Hao compressed his spirit power into a pair of long and sharp needles, piercing it into his tear glands. Once that happened, tears poured down each side of his straight nose as he said, "It's all my fault. I've been fighting against the water-kind armies in the north for months. I killed too many water-kind creatures. Therefore, when Fufeng Yu's guards pulled their swords out and pointed at me, I failed to control myself and I... I accidentally killed them...It's all my fault!"

Emperor Shun straightened his body, gripped Ji Hao's arms with his ten fingers, and silently put forth his strength.

Those fingers were strong. Ji Hao felt that his arms were nipped

by ten iron pincers, that his muscles and bones were crushing by a horrible strength, and he even heard the creaking noise that came from his bones.

Raising his head, Ji Hao saw the five-colored light in Emperor Sun's eyes suddenly shine brightly. Meanwhile, a pure, intense, and completely undisguised intent of killing came straight at Ji Hao. Ji Hao understood that if he couldn't take this silent attack launched by Emperor Shun, Emperor Shun would tear him apart without any hesitation.

Turning around his arm, Ji Hao clenched his fingers and gripped Emperor Shun's arms. Gripping each other's forearms with their strong hands, Ji Hao and Emperor Shun smilingly looked at each other.

"I understand, it's not your fault." said Emperor Shun word by word, trying to sound more generous, "Since this is nothing but a misunderstanding, let's forget it. We are all here for the future of the humankind. Ahyaya, Marquis Yao, is your arm injured?"

An even stronger force came to Ji Hao's arm, as Emperor Shun's ten fingers were almost sinking into Ji Hao's muscles.

Ji Hao didn't activate the Taiji cloak. Instead, he silently started the cultivation method with nine turns. His arm muscles swelled instantly, bulging under his skin, as they sent an equally strong force to Emperor Shun's fingers. Following a faintly audible, muffled thud, Emperor Shun's ten fingers were suddenly loosened, and he staggered backward for a few steps!

Ji Hao leaped up, as if he had pushed the panic button, hurriedly held Emperor Shun's shoulders with both hands.

"Ahyaya, Emperor Shun, that tiny injury on my arm is nothing, but what happened to you? You must be exhausted, you can hardly stand!"

Swiftly grabbing Emperor Shun's shoulders, Ji Hao continued

with a low voice, "I have the best magic pills for injuries, and some nice herbal tea that can boost up energies. Do you want some?"

Also silently, Ji Hao put forth all of his strength through his ten fingers, seeming even to poke his fingers into Emperor Shun's shoulders.

The five-colored light in Emperor Shun's eyes suddenly grew strong, and next, he vomited blood once again.

Chapter 1199: Awe the Sky Devil

"If you have anything that can smooth the nerves, that's just what I need." This time, Emperor Shun didn't wipe the blood on his mouth corner. With a bitter smile, he said to Ji Hao, "I've been working too hard lately. Somehow, I can always hear a strange voice in my head, and I've been wondering how to cast that away."

Taking a vicious glance at Ji Hao, Emperor Shun continued with a deep voice, "Therefore, I don't want more to worry about... Marquis Yao, be generous, and just forgive Fufeng Yu. Only when the world is peaceful can our humankind develop, and human beings can live without danger."

Hearing him, Ji Hao's dagger-like ten fingers suddenly turned as soft and gentle as a breeze. He slowly held Emperor Shun's shoulders and smiled mildly, "Ah, I see, you should really get some rest."

This sky devil was clearly warning Ji Hao — 'Indeed, I haven't managed to devour Emperor Shun's soul yet, and I've been working on that. If you dare to unmask me, I will do whatever I can to destroy Emperor Shun's soul.'

As he said, he could endanger 'human beings'; by 'human beings', he meant no one else but Emperor Shun. Therefore, Ji Hao caringly held Emperor Shun's shoulders, took out a handkerchief, and wiped the blood on his mouth corners. Then, he warmly nodded to the group of senior ministers. Together with those ministers, Ji Hao walked Emperor Shun into the Town Hall.

Emperor Shun sat down in the middle of the hall and breathed quickly, seeming to be rather tired. Obviously, the sky devil inside Emperor Shun's body was injured quite severely, as the real Emperor Shun launched two heavy strikes from the inside in a row. Emperor Shun vomited blood twice, because the intense collisions between the soul powers had harmed his body.

The sky devil failed to devour Emperor Shun's soul. Instead, he could only suppress Emperor Shun's soul and lock it inside his own body. To the sky devil, which had temporarily occupied Emperor Shun's body, this was a great hidden trouble. To Ji Hao, it was a big trouble too, but in the meantime, this was also a chance for him to save Emperor Shun.

The group of senior ministers all sat down in ordered lines, while Ji Hao stood in front of Emperor Shun and told him about everything that happened after he left for the north with the allied forces. Emperor Shun, Fufeng Yu, and all the other ministers carefully listened to Ji Hao's report. From time to time, Emperor Shun would cough slightly, drawing more attention.

When Ji Hao finished the report, Emperor Shun clapped his hands and laughed loudly. Meanwhile, his eyes shone brightly as he looked at Ji Hao from head to toe.

"Marquis Yao, you have been working very hard indeed. It's not easy, not easy." Emperor Shun smiled especially brightly and warmly, while Fufeng Yu grinned faintly. As for the other human ministers, they stared at Ji Hao with widely opened eyes, as if Ji Hao were a ghost.

Everyone knew that Ji Hao was valued by Emperor Shun and Si Wen Ming, and in the future, if Si Wen Ming ascended to the throne, Ji Hao would certainly become a trusted helper of Si Wen Ming, and be put in an important position. But, Ji Hao was way too young, and he came to Pu Ban City in merely a few years ago. How many years it had been since he started to touch the core power of the human society? How long had he owned the title of Earl Yao and Marquis Yao? He had indeed made some mentionable contributions in these years. Not to mention those things happened in the past, this time, he actually took a bet with Yemo Luoye, the most mysterious, powerful one among all twelve non-humankind emperors?! Where on earth did he get the courage to do that?

What was even more astonishing was that this kid won!

He won a large batch of elite non-humankind warriors, and in addition to that, he won a Supreme-Magus-level non-humankind being!

Holy ancestors' souls! Instead of a Divine-level or a Magus-King-level one, that was a Supreme-Magus, unimaginably powerful being! Seriously, how many Supreme Magi existed among all human beings at present? And how many of them managed to complete their cultivations as Supreme Magi, and were able to live freely again?

Ninety-nine percent of the clans and families of all these senior ministers on the scene did not have a Supreme Magus.

Ji Hao was a little kid who came from a small Southern Wasteland clan, named Gold Crow Clan. He had an average territory in Yao Mountain City, and in there, with his Southern Wasteland clansmen, he built a new clan, which had begun to take shape...But why on earth did he suddenly have a Supreme-level powerful being under his command?

The group of cunning senior ministers glanced at each other and winked sneakily.

They seemed to suddenly understand why Ji Hao was daring enough to beat Fufeng Yu right in front of the Town Hall, and kill quite a few of Fufeng Yu's guards. These ministers believed that if they had Supreme Magi in their clans, they would dare to do the same.

"A Sun and Moon stage powerful being!" sighed Emperor Shun. Looking at Ji Hao, he continued mildly, "Did you bring this powerful being back to Pu Ban City?"

Ji Hao shook his head and responded quickly, "I left him in the north. After all...they will be facing an even greater pressure next. So, I left him there to help. Powerful water-kind beings might

show up anytime, and he can deal with those timely."

With a shining pair of eyes, Emperor Shun nodded slowly and said, "Good, good. Marquis Yao, you are such a talented, capable young man! With someone like you around, even facing the flood, I can worry less. Hehe, hearing you, my mind is suddenly eased!"

The group of ministers laughed loudly as well, seeming to be quite delighted. But clearly, the ones never liked Ji Hao, such as Gong Sun Jian and Suiren Yan had their facial expressions rather complicated.

"You have to take care!" Ji Hao narrowed his eyes, looked at Emperor Shun's smiling face, and said. "Facing the flood, you are the backbone of our humankind. If anything happens to you...If anything dares to harm you, I will destroy it, even if I have to destroy the world too."

Fufeng Yu's face twitched slightly, while Emperor Shun narrowed his eyes and cast a complicated glance at Ji Hao.

"People, you may leave now. I need to talk to Marquis Yao alone," said Emperor Shun while unarguably waving his hand.

The group of minister looked at Emperor Shun, then quickly glanced at Ji Hao. Next, they silently stood up and walked out of the Town Hall. At last, Fufeng Yu closed the door himself.

The Pan Jia sun shone into the door slot, making the rest of the great hall look even darker.

The sunlight that came in through the door slot was as thin and sharp as a blade, cutting on Ji Hao's back and spreading, gave his body a golden edge.

Looking at Emperor Shun, Ji Hao sighed and started talking. "Pretending is so exhausting... Especially when I want to kill you, but have to pretend that I don't. What's your name?"

The look of Emperor Shun instantly turned twisted and evil, looking like a poisonous snake hiding in a bush, preparing to

pounce on its target. A strange luster gradually emerged on his face as he stared at Ji Hao and said word by word, "You can call me Ying Zun...You threatened me, didn’t you? Just now, you said that if I dared to harm this little thing, you will destroy me? I’m afraid you know nothing about me!"

"Outer space sky devils, big deal, huh?" said Ji Hao while coldly looking at Emperor Shun. "Do you know Xia Zun and Yu Zun? They died at my hands!"

Emperor Shun quivered intensely, then gazed at Ji Hao with a soul-deep shock.

Chapter 1200: An Embryo of Dao Rushed In

The great hall was in a deathly silent at the moment. A few bronze oil lamps shone brightly. The warm lamplight merged with the sunlight that came in through the door slit, and within the light, countless grains of dust quietly floated in the air.

All of a sudden, a floating dust grain exploded, releasing a fist-sized blood-red spell symbol. That was a powerful spell symbol of a blood curse. Ji Hao studied about this spell symbol in depth back in his learning days in the Magi Palace. Hit by this spell symbol, the blood of any living creature would instantly become fresh water.

These floating dust grains in the Town Hall were actually strong defensive mechanisms, and Ji Hao had never heard of something like this.

Along with a dazzling blood-red beam, the spell symbol came to Ji Hao’s heart. Ji Hao turned around his palm and let the Pan Gu bell expand to meters tall, drifting above his head. Dense Chaos power streams poured down. The spell symbol bumped against a Chaos power stream, blasted into a puff of blood-red light spot, and faded in the air.

"Blood-clearing spell?" Sensing the strong impact force through the Pan Gu bell, Ji Hao said with a deep voice, "It’s not so easy to deal with me."

A long series of explosive sound was started, as thousands of dust grains exploded simultaneously around Ji Hao. A dazzling light illuminated the entire hall, when thousands of different spell symbols glowed in the air and generated a whirlwind, roaring around Ji Hao.

Simple patterns of clouds and dragons sparkled on the surface of the Pan Gu bell. A faintly audible bell ring was generated, crushing all spell symbols.

Ji Hao stood up, raised the Taiji divine sword, and seemed to hack straight on Emperor Shun’s head. The sword left a sharp golden beam in the air.

"Here! Come on!" Emperor Shun burst with a growl and patted heavily on his straightened neck. "Come on, with all of your power, cut this neck! I will not fight back, I won’t raise any defense. Let’s see if your sword is sharp enough to behead your own leader!"

Ji Hao gripped the sword hilt, but his heart had sunk. He stared at Emperor Shun, not knowing what to do.

Sky devils were shapeless. They didn’t even have their own physical bodies. They occupied the bodies and devoured the souls of other living creatures to develop. A large proportion of the power of this Ying Zun was now suppressing Emperor Shun’s soul. Therefore, he could not do much at the moment, and Ji Hao could easily defeat him.

But even so, Ji Hao couldn’t save Emperor Shun. Ji Hao could cut off his hands, but those would be Emperor Shun’s hands; Ji Hao could break his legs, but those would be Emperor Shun’s legs. Behead him? No, impossible, because that head belonged to Emperor Shun, and Ji Hao would never cut off Emperor Shun’s head, not even if he were truly out of his mind.

"You!" Ji Hao glared at Emperor Shun and squeezed out a few words through gritted teeth, "What do you want?"

"Your leader’s soul is very sweet and tasty. To my kind, it is the perfect nourishment!" Emperor Shun sat straight, looked Ji Hao coldly and said, "I have a feeling that when I can devour your leader’s soul, I will reach to another level..Same as a caterpillar becoming a butterfly...I will go through a great evolution!"

Emperor Shun narrowed his eyes, sighed while yearning. "Then, I will no longer be Ying Zun. Instead, my people will call me ‘Saint Ying’!"

Opening his eyes, Emperor Shun looked at Ji Hao in the eyes and continued with a deep voice, "You can never understand our strong desire to evolution. A tasty food that is already in my mouth, I will never spit it out...Not to mention the fact that I have already occupied your leader's body. With his name, I can easily get more souls to eat!"

Ji Hao gripped the sword with both hands. Strong sword intent was released from the sword, transforming into hazy silhouettes of dragons, phoenixes, and other legendary creatures, hovering all over the hall. Ji Hao had been cultivating himself severely, and had been improving fast. At this stage, his sword intent could already condense into visible shapes, which meant he had already stepped into a whole new level.

With a sign of fear, Emperor Shun looked at those hazy silhouettes and murmured, "I now believe that you are powerful enough to kill Xia Zun and Yu Zun...You are not an especially powerful one, but your weapons are, and you have learned a terrifying sword art...What an ogreish sword intent!"

While smirking, Emperor Shun abruptly tilted his head, sighed slowly, and continued, "But no matter how powerful you are, do you dare to even harm a hair of mine? Do you? If you don't, please, open the door behind you and leave quietly. Will you?"

Gently patting on his belly, Emperor Shun gave a bitter smile and said, "I don't want anyone to interrupt me while I am enjoying my delicate food. Especially that...This food of mine is a bit too vigorous, and it's not so easy for me to 'enjoy' it."

Ji Hao dropped the Taiji divine sword, took two steps forward, and sat down, face to face with Emperor Shun.

"Name your price. What can make you leave Emperor Shun's body?" The Pan Gu bell floated above Ji Hao's head, protecting him against all possible attacks. Ji Hao rested his hands on his knees, then forcibly calmed himself down. With a smile, he asked

Emperor Shun.

"Ten souls, equally good as your leader’s soul!" Emperor Shun gave a bright grin and reached out his hands, then spread his ten fingers and said seriously to Ji Hao, "Ten souls, all as good as your leader's soul. If you can offer ten times more, I’ll leave."

Ji Hao didn’t respond.

Ten souls, all as good as Emperor Shun’s soul? If Ying Zun was talking about human souls, Ji Hao would never agree. But, if the souls of other creatures counted...

Pondering for a while, Ji Hao raised his head. His erect eye suddenly opened. In his spiritual space, inside his red sun primordial spirit, and behind that golden and the silver silhouette, the faint and dark silhouette burst with a resonant roar, as it transformed into a three-headed black dragon and wooshed out of the red sun.

A dark beam of light darted out of Ji Hao’s erect eye and sank into Emperor Shun’s body. Invading along with the dark light was the Taiji divine sword, which was transformed into two dragon-shaped streams of light. A black light stream and a dark light stream guarded on both sides of the three-headed dragon as it swiftly broke into Emperor Shun’s spirit space.

The dark silhouette in Ji Hao’s red sun primordial spirit was an embryo of Dao, generated by Ji Hao’s great Dao of Taiji, after it absorbed a part of the great Dao of destruction that came from Yemo Shayi. It was a mixed product of Ji Hao’s primordial spirit power and the great Dao of destruction.

A cultivator's embryo of Dao were generated by the powers of great Dao and his primordial spirit power, and were immeasurably powerful. In other words, embryos of Dao were embodiments of great Dao, with unpredictable powers.

For cultivators with strong embryos of Dao, even if the physical

body was destroyed, the embryos of Dao could still exist independently. Without world-destroying disasters, the owners of embryos of Dao could be counted as truly immortal beings.

For many disciples of Priest Dachi, Priest Qing Wei, Yu Yu, Priest Hua, and Priest Mu, their highest goal was mostly growing an embryo of Dao and becoming immortal beings, having eternal lives.

Along with the Taiji divine sword, the embryo of the great Dao of destruction broke into Emperor Shun's spiritual space. Through the eyes of the embryo, Ji Hao saw nothing but dazzling stars.

It was like the vast starry sky with no edges but countless sparkling stars. Ji Hao was disoriented. He could neither find Yin Zun nor Emperor Shun's soul.

Table of Contents

The Magus Era

Synopsis

Copyright

Chapter 1101: Arrow Destroy

Chapter 1102: The Extreme of Fire

Chapter 1103: Came One After Another

Chapter 1104: Si Wen Ming Asks For Help

Chapter 1105: A Difficult Situation

Chapter 1106: Dragon Blood Drunk

Chapter 1107: Pan Gu Defense

Chapter 1108: All Spirit Creatures Go Mad

Chapter 1109: A Flying Moth Darts into The Fire

Chapter 1110: Slaughter

Chapter 1111: Enormous Spirit Creatures Strike the City

Chapter 1112: Make A Profit in Troubled Situation

Chapter 1113: Descendants of Water Apes

Chapter 1114: The Power of the Forbidden Magic

Chapter 1115: Defeat

Chapter 1116: Silver Flood Dragon

Chapter 1117: Being Captured

Chapter 1118: Face the Queen

Chapter 1119: A Sun and Moon Strike

Chapter 1120: Strict Rules

Chapter 1121: Make The Bet

Chapter 1122: A Strike of Devouring

Chapter 1123: The Great Dao of Taiji

Chapter 1124: A Destroying Strike

Chapter 1125: Leg and Leg

Chapter 1126: The Secret Dark Sun Magic

Chapter 1127: Dark Sun Inheritance

Chapter 1128: Shayi Fails

Chapter 1129: Yemo Tian Arrives

Chapter 1130: The Sadness of Snow

Chapter 1131: A Fight Between the Monkey and the Snake

Chapter 1132: Ice Flood Dragons

Chapter 1133: The Flood Dragon King from the North Sea

Chapter 1134: The Only Child

Chapter 1135: Flood Dragons and Snakes

Chapter 1136: An Unpleasant Conversation

Chapter 1137: Cut Xiang Liu Junior

Chapter 1138: A Philosophical Problem

Chapter 1139: Flowing Poison, Without an End

Chapter 1140: Poison Attack

Chapter 1141: ‘Natural Disaster’

Chapter 1142: Yu Mu Volunteers

Chapter 1143: Try the Poison with His Body

Chapter 1144: The Disease God Seal

Chapter 1145: The Disease God’s Legacy

Chapter 1146: Endless Locust Infestation

Chapter 1147: Hundreds of Millions of Floating Bodies

Chapter 1148: The Flowing Poison Never Stops

Chapter 1149: Be Uncovered

Chapter 1150: It Has an Affinity for The Flower

Chapter 1151: A Magic Lotus

Chapter 1152: Sweet Words

Chapter 1153: Motionless

Chapter 1154: Sudden Unexpected Change

Chapter 1155: Break the Formation and Kill

Chapter 1156: The Flood Dragon King Changes

Chapter 1157: Endless Iceberg

Chapter 1158: Caught Flat-Footed

Chapter 1159: Helpers

Chapter 1160: Suiren

Chapter 1161: A Lecture Given By Suiren

Chapter 1162: The Water Eye in Huai Water

Chapter 1163: Yuan Sheng

Chapter 1164: Easily Get In

Chapter 1165: Dragon Coffins

Chapter 1166: Coffin Keeper

Chapter 1167: Yu Ancestor

Chapter 1168: Transplant

Chapter 1169: Countless Clones

Chapter 1170: Break In

Chapter 1171: The Man In the Coffin

Chapter 1172: Nine Spirits Back into One

Chapter 1173: The Date of Return?

Chapter 1174: A Shocking Plan

Chapter 1175: Before and After

Chapter 1176: Seeing Yuan Sheng Again

Chapter 1177: The Secret Dragon-slam Art

Chapter 1178: A Familiar Feeling

Chapter 1179: Dragon-slam Priest

Chapter 1180: Dragon-Slam and Tiger-Blast

Chapter 1181: Slay Yuan Sheng

Chapter 1182: Strange Silhouettes

Chapter 1183: Pretend

Chapter 1184: A Group of Chaos Monsters Block the Way

Chapter 1185: Candle Dragon Light

Chapter 1186: The Power of People

Chapter 1187: Take Kun Peng Down

Chapter 1188: Force Back

Chapter 1189: Destroy Thoroughly

Chapter 1190: The Sadness of Gong Gong

Chapter 1191: Gong Gong Cowered

Chapter 1192: Yu Ancestor’s Plan

Chapter 1193: Kill Yu with Seven Arrows

Chapter 1194: The Wild Goose Flies to the Unseen World

Chapter 1195: Devils Again

Chapter 1196: Terror

Chapter 1197: Arrogant

Chapter 1198: Strife Openly and Secretly

Chapter 1199: Awe the Sky Devil

Chapter 1200: An Embryo of Dao Rushed In